

A man with a shocked expression, wide eyes, and an open mouth, surrounded by a dense mass of dark snakes. The background is a dark, textured green.

PUPPET MASTERS

**How And Why We Became
Slaves Of The Deep State**

316 Pages

Midori Ohara

PUPPET MASTERS

**How And Why We Became
Slaves Of The Deep State**

Midori Ohara

PUPPET MASTERS

**How And Why We Became
Slaves Of The Deep State**

Midori Ohara

**This manuscript is the intellectual property of
Kerson Publishing Company. No copyright has been
assigned, none is claimed and none is pending.
Reasonable free use applies.**

Printed in America 2020



KERSON PUBLISHING COMPANY

CONTENTS

Prelude	1
Part 1 Citizenship of what Kingdom?	2
Part 2 What is the Constitution?	15
Part 3 What is the Truth?	39
Part 4 Understanding	46
Part 5 What's Going On?	53
Part 6 Is This The Whole Story?	71
Part 7 Slavery	116
Part 8 Taxpayer Contracts	137
Part 9 What Are Contracts?	169
Part 10 The Law and Health	186
Other Stuff That Happened	208
Oumuamua—The Scout	251
Uncontrolled and Out of Control	254

EX LIBRIS



THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PRELUDE

I have prepared these papers because of the many requests I have received for an explanation of what is really going on in America. I have answered questions endlessly, and this has led to requests that I write everything down. Obviously, that is impossible; first, because I do not know everything, and secondly, because it would require more pages than I am willing to write, and probably more than you are willing to read! Believe me, there are enough pages and references in this set of papers to keep you busy for some time!

There are a couple of things that need to be made clear before you begin. These papers were developed by a continuing project of answering the questions brought forth by the first readers. Therefore, they are unique in that they did not flow solely from me, but became almost a joint effort in my explaining to those with a desire to learn. When this began, I expected that four to six papers, maybe twenty-five to forty pages long would suffice. I actually said a kind of good-bye at the end of Part X, and now there are twenty parts. I do not think there will be more. You will find that the information becomes much deeper and more detailed after Part X, in response to more detailed and much better informed questions.

I warn you, if you read all twenty parts, and it does not matter much how well informed you consider yourself, or how unimportant you think the first nine parts are in simply repeating what you think you know, your life will be changed. And I have had several snicker at this statement, but there has been no one who has read as far as part fourteen without admitting to me that they look at the world very differently now, and anyone who has finished through Part XVII has written to me and told me how they have been changed. Be forewarned; this experience can and will change you.

That being said, please ask if you have questions. If I can not answer the question, I probably know where to get the answer. And please bear with me; as hard as it may be for you to accept the information presented in Parts I and II, please continue. You will find facts and sources to confirm everything.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART I; CITIZENSHIP OF WHICH KINGDOM?

I know how difficult the following information is going to be for many of you. Believe me when I tell you that I went through the same thing you are facing—and I did the soul searching, spent the sleepless nights, tossed and turned and refused to believe that what is revealed here could really be the truth.

But I was faced with one inescapable fact, just as you are—what is revealed here is not opinion. It is the result of over 15 years of research by myself and a number of other men—research in government archives, and study of case law—case law mostly of the Supreme Court. And, once you grasp the impact of this paper, and of the papers to follow, you begin to realize—as I did—that this is the only possible answer to all of the unexplainable events occurring in America.

Like it or not, ladies and gentlemen, this is The Truth.

United States citizen, Yes or No?

Citizen: One who, under the Constitution and laws of the United States, or of a particular state, is a member of the political community, owing allegiance and being entitled to the enjoyment of full civil rights. All persons born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of the United States and the state wherein they reside. U.S.Const., 14th Amend. See Citizenship.

First, to begin to understand what the above definition means, you must define “United States.” In the UNITED STATES Code, the UNITED STATES (United States) is defined as a corporation. Now, let’s look at Citizenship.

Citizenship: The status of being a citizen. There are four ways to acquire citizenship: by birth in the United States, by birth in U.S. territories, by birth outside the U.S. to U.S. parents, and by naturalization.

But all this is talking about is “born in the United States” or “born to United States citizen(s).” Is this the only choice anyone from America has? If you are born in the united States, are you automatically a United States citizen?

(Author’s Note: united States, as used in the Declaration of Independence, wherein the word united is an adjective describing the States; United States, where the word United is part of the name of the political community. Political community: An artificial creation of man for the purpose of establishing man’s rule on earth. You are generally recognized as a member of a political community through two main devices; payment of taxes to the formed body, and by voting in the manner established by man’s law, (instead of by God’s

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Law.)

Let's hear what the United States Supreme Court says about citizens.

"It is quite clear then that there is a citizenship of the United States and a citizenship of a State, which are distinct from each other and which depend upon different characteristics or circumstances in the individual." Slaughter House Cases, 83 US 395, 407.

(Author's Note: It is not necessary to be a member of a 'State' citizenship, either, despite what some so-called patriots claim. When you join any political community, you become subject to the rules thereof. There is case law, which says that the Constitution of a State does not apply to the common man. This is true only as long as you do not exercise the franchise established through the said Constitution, or contract into the said jurisdiction. This is why the Mennonites and other people of like mind have no trouble with the so-called government; they understand contracts and the nature of governments.

Does anyone besides me wonder why citizenship and the alternatives thereto are not explained in the public schools? Is there some reason why hospitals have been designated as Ports of Entry into the UNITED STATES? When you accept a Birth Certificate for a child, is there more to the story than you are being told? Is there some reason why the county transfers the Birth Certificate to the state, which then—for a fee—transfers the said Birth Certificate to the Department of Commerce in Washington, DC, where it is kept in the Human Resource file? The original Birth Certificates are printed on water marked paper—as securities. Why? Ever heard of a Commerce Certificate for a human? Could this document, which exists for everyone who has a Birth Certificate on file in Washington, DC, be the Certificate of Title for a Human Being?

When you sign up for Social Security, in section 3 of the Social Security Act, it says that now that you are a member of Social Security (which is totally voluntary)—you are a taxpayer. Is there some intent behind all of these actions, not revealed to the common man?

Why are there two Constitutions? And what are the meanings behind some of the amendments to the Constitution? For instance, the anti-slavery amendment, the thirteenth; what, exactly, does it mean, legally? What does the Supreme Court say about the Thirteenth Amendment?

"The thirteenth amendment is a great extension of the powers of the national government." United States v. Morris, 125 Federal Reporter, page 322, 325.

What does the Supreme Court say about the Fourteenth Amendment?

"The amendment (fourteenth) reversed and annulled the original policy of the constitution," United States v. Rhodes, 27 Federal Cases, 785, 794.

Do these amendments apply equally to everyone?

"The rights of citizens of the state, as such, are not under consideration in the fourteenth amendment. They stand as they did before the adoption of the fourteenth amendment, and are fully guaranteed by other provisions." United States v. Anthony 24 Federal Cases 829, 830.

'The rights of a citizen under one (state or United States citizenship) may be quite different from those which he has under the other...' Colgate v. Harvey, 296 US 404, 429.

To understand just a little of what you are reading here, it is necessary to understand

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

what the Constitution is: The Constitution is a document that only applies to those who serve in the so-called government and it acts as a restriction upon their actions. It is nothing else, and affords no protections or privileges for the common man in America. Lysander Spooner, in his 1869 treatise titled *No Treason*, said it very well:

‘The Constitution has no inherent authority or obligation. It has no authority or obligation at all, unless as a contract between man and man.’

How does this pertain to the States?

“...the first eight amendments have uniformly been held to not be protected from state action by the privileges and immunities clause (of the fourteenth amendment).” *Hague v. CIO*, 307 US 496, 520.

Again, we must understand that there is a very different status in citizenship, and no one is going to give you the information needed for you to understand or reject the bad choice. This is up to you. It is called personal responsibility.

“The rights of a citizen under one [state or United States citizenship] may be quite different from those which he has under the other...” *Colgate v. Harvey*, 296 US 404, 429.

You need to read this case cite many times, so you understand that you are literally making a life choice every time you sign something from the ‘government.’ Let me be blunt, you are making a choice of how you will live for the rest of your life every time you sign anything, no matter how minor you believe it is, which is from any arm of the so-called government.

But let’s get down to the basic elements of being a United States citizen. What, exactly, does it mean? (Hint: you can not be a United States citizen unless you are contracted into the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress in the District of Columbia.)

“The right to trial by jury in civil cases, guaranteed by the Seventh Amendment...and the right to bear arms guaranteed by the Second Amendment...have been distinctly held not to be privileges and immunities of citizens of the United States guaranteed by the Fourteenth Amendment ...and in effect the same decision was made in respect of the guarantee against prosecution, except by indictment of a grand jury, contained in the Fifth Amendment...and in respect of the right to be confronted with witnesses, contained in the Sixth Amendment... it was held that the indictment, made indispensable by the Fifth Amendment, and the trial by jury guaranteed by the Sixth Amendment, were no privileges and immunities of citizens of the United States, as those words were used in the fourteenth Amendment. We conclude, therefore, that the exemption from compulsory self-incrimination is not a privilege or immunity of National citizenship guaranteed by this clause of the Fourteenth Amendment.” *Twining v. New Jersey*, 211 US 78, 98-99.

So an Esquire (lawyer) can bring charges against a United States citizen for any reason—including personal animosity—without the need of a grand jury, as long as he is acting as a member of the government—no restrictions. Perhaps we are seeing here why grand juries have become nothing but a rubber stamp for the prosecution of ‘crimes.’ Perhaps there is a reason for everything we see happening around us.

United States citizens have no Bill of Rights. There are no restrictions on the actions of those in government as regards United States citizens. They can—and will—do whatever they desire, to any United States citizen. If this means violating your ‘rights’, then so

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

be it—because if you are a United States citizen, **you have no rights!** This will be explained to you in greater detail in Part Two.

The following is interesting. It will show you that those in the so-called government understand exactly what is going on! Note carefully the word ‘reside.’

STANDARD SCREENING QUESTIONS

These questions were administered by Mr. Alberto Gutier, Deputy Administrator, Arizona Department of Transportation, at approximately two o’clock p.m. on August 24, 1989, after confirming that Mr. Cooper had met with Mr. Carl Davis, the Governor’s Special Assistant Over State Agencies:

Mr. Gutier: “Before we go any further, I need to ask you our standard Screening Questions.”—

Question No. 1. — Mr. Gutier: “Are you a citizen of the United States?”

Mr. Cooper’s answer: “No I am not.”

Question No. 2. — Mr. Gutier: “Are you a resident of Arizona?”

Mr. Cooper’s Answer: “No, I am not. I was born in Phoenix. I have lived in Maricopa County all my life, but I am not a resident. I do not reside.”

Question No. 3. — Mr. Gutier: “Are you registered to vote?”

Mr. Cooper’s Answer: “No, I am not.”

Question No. 4. — Mr. Gutier: “Do you have a driver’s license?”

Mr. Cooper’s answer: “No, I do not.”

Question No. 5. — Mr. Gutier: “Do you have any motor vehicles registered in Arizona?”

Mr. Cooper’s answer: “No, I do not.”

Question No. 6. — Mr. Gutier: “Are you employed?”

Mr. Cooper’s answer: No, I am not. I am not employed. I am not unemployed. I am not self-employed. I am not gainfully employed. In fact, I am not employable. But, I work. Besides, Arizona is a right to work State. [Mr. Gutier nodded his head in agreement and went on.]

Question No. 7. — Mr. Gutier: “Do you pay state and federal resident income taxes?”

Mr. Cooper’s answer: “No, I do not.”

Question No. 8. — Mr. Gutier: “Do you pay property taxes in Arizona?”

Mr. Cooper’s answer: “No, I do not.”

Question No. 9. — Mr. Gutier: “Do you have a marriage license?”

Mr. Cooper’s answer: “No, I do not.”

Question No. 10. —Mr. Gutier: “Do you have children enrolled in public school?”

Mr. Cooper’s Answer: No, I do not. My children are home taught.”

Mr. Gutier then said, “You’ve really done your homework!”

From this little exchange, it is possible to begin to grasp the extent of ‘privileges’ and ‘benefits’ as the ‘government’ defines them. It is very necessary to grasp these concepts in order to begin to understand ‘freedom.’ (I also suggest that you read the Fourteenth Amendment, and pay particular attention to the word reside, because it is the use

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

of that word in that amendment which is the basis of the entire residency rules and statutes in use in the United States today.)

If you must answer 'yes' to any of the questions asked by Mr. Gutier, and are arguing and fighting over not owing the so-called income tax, or any other tax imposed by government, then you are what is known as a tax protester. There are a number of other questions that could be added to this list, and the most important two are:

Do you have any license issued by any arm of the government? (There is only one government in America today, and all States, counties, and cities are arms of that government.)

DO YOU HAVE A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER?

Any yes answer to either of these questions, or any of the questions posed by Mr. Gutier above, means you are a United States citizen.

And this means that you owe the so-called income tax, because through the benefits and privileges of United States citizenship, you have contracted into the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress under the municipal code of Washington, DC.

However, no matter what is said about freedom and the real intent behind law, many will only refuse the information. Perhaps if you understood the real intent behind the income tax... The following information comes from the on-line book titled The United States is Still a British Colony, which will be provided upon request.

"As further evidence, not that any is needed, a percentage of taxes that are paid are to enrich the king/queen of England. For those that study Title 26 you will recognize IMF, which means Individual Master File; all taxpayers have one. To read one you have to be able to break their codes using file 6209, which is about 467 pages. On your IMF you will find a blocking series, which tells you what type of tax you are paying. You will probably find a 300-399 blocking series, which 6209 says is reserved. You then look up the BMF 300-399, which is the Business Master File in 6209. You would have seen prior to 1991, this was U.S.-U.K. Tax Claims, non-refile DLN. Meaning everyone is considered a business and involved in commerce and you are being held liable for a tax via a treaty between the U.S. and the U.K., payable to the U.K.. The form that is supposed to be used for this is form 8288, FIRPTA - Foreign Investment Real Property Tax Account, you won't find many people using this form, just the 1040 form. The 8288 form can be found in the Law Enforcement Manual of the IRS, chapter 3. If you will check the OMB's paper - Office of Management and Budget, in the Department of Treasury, List of Active Information Collections, approved Under Paperwork Reduction Act, you will find this form under OMB number 1545-0902, which says U.S. withholding tax-return for dispositions by foreign persons of U.S. real property interests-statement of withholding on dispositions, by foreign persons, of U.S. Form #8288 #8288a.

These codes have since been changed to read as follows; IMF 300-309, Barred Assessment, CP 55 generated valid for MFT-30, which is the code for 1040 form. IMF 310-399 reserved, the BMF 300-309 reads the same as IMF 300-309. BMF 390-399 reads U.S./U.K. Tax Treaty Claims. The long and short of it is nothing changed, the government just made it plainer, the 1040 is the payment of a foreign tax to the king/queen of England. We have been in financial servitude since the Treaty of 1783."

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

I strongly suggest that you read the entire on-line book, but do be careful, because the author of the work—while his research is amazing and impeccable—does not, in my opinion, fully understand the Constitution.

I hope by now you are beginning to understand United States citizenship a little better.

I mentioned, at the beginning of this paper, that there are two Constitutions. One—the one you are familiar with—is only for United States citizens living under the municipal code of Washington, DC. You can tell the difference by the adoption of amendments, rather than careful attention to the lawful ratification of amendments by the several states. I refer you in particular to the book *The Law That Never Was* by Red Beckman. This book contains very exhaustive detail that shows beyond any question that the several States never lawfully ratified the Sixteenth Amendment. The point that is missed by the author of that work is that ratification is not necessary, because the 16th Amendment was only adopted by the United States as part of the corporate charter under the municipal code of Washington, DC! It does not apply to anyone except United States citizens.

Also, in the same on-line book *The United States is Still a Subject of Great Britain*:

“There was however, no measurable penalty for violation of the above Sections (of the Constitution), Congress saw this as a great threat to the freedom of Americans, and our Republican form of government. In January 1810 Senator Reed proposed the Thirteenth Amendment, and on April 26, 1810 was passed by the Senate 26 to 1 (1st-2nd session, p. 670) and by the House 87 to 3 on May 1, 1810 (2nd session, p. 2050) and submitted to the seventeen states for ratification. The Amendment reads as follows:

‘If any citizen of the United States shall Accept, claim, receive or retain any title of nobility or honor, or shall, without the consent of Congress, accept and retain any present, pension, office or emolument of any kind whatever, from any emperor, king, prince or foreign power, such person shall cease to be a citizen of the United States, and shall be incapable of holding any office of trust or profit under them, or either of them.’

From An ‘*American Dictionary of the English Language*, 1st Edition,’ Noah Webster, (1828) defines nobility as: ‘3. The qualities which constitute distinction of rank in civil society, according to the customs or laws of the country; that eminence or dignity which a man derives from birth or title conferred, and which places him in an order above common men.’; and, ‘4. The persons collectively who enjoy rank above commoners; the peerage.’

The fore-mentioned Sections in the Constitution for the united States, and the above proposed Thirteenth Amendment sought to prohibit the above definition, which would give any advantage or privilege to some citizens an unequal opportunity to achieve or exercise political power. Thirteen of the seventeen states listed below understood the importance of this Amendment.

Date admitted Date voted for or against the amendment

1788 Maryland Dec. 25, 1810

1792 Kentucky Jan. 31, 1811

1803 Ohio Jan. 31, 1811

1787 Delaware Feb. 2, 1811

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

1787 Pennsylvania Feb. 6, 1811

1787 New Jersey Feb. 13, 1811

1791 Vermont Oct. 24, 1811

1796 Tennessee Nov. 21, 1811

1788 Georgia Dec. 13, 1811

1789 North Carolina Dec. 23, 1811

1788 Massachusetts Feb. 27, 1812

1788 New Hampshire Dec. 10, 1812

1788 Virginia March 12, 1819

1788 New York March 12, 1811

1788 Connecticut May 1813

1788 South Carolina December 7, 1813

1790 Rhode Island September 15, 1814

On March 10, 1819, the Virginia legislature passed Act No. 280 (Virginia Archives of Richmond, "misc." file, p. 299 for micro-film):

'Be it enacted by the General Assembly, that there shall be published an edition of the laws of this Commonwealth in which shall be contained the following matters, that is to say: the Constitution of the united States and the amendments thereto...'

The official day of ratification was March 12, 1819, this was the date of re-publication of the Virginia Civil Code. Virginia ordered 4,000 copies, almost triple their usual order. Word of Virginia's 1819 ratification spread throughout the states and both Rhode Island and Kentucky published the new Amendment in 1822. Ohio published the new Amendment in 1824. Maine ordered 10,000 copies of the Constitution with the new Amendment to be printed for use in the public schools, and again in 1831 for their Census Edition. Indiana published the new Amendment in the Indiana Revised Laws, of 1831 on P. 20. The Northwest Territories published the new Amendment in 1833; Ohio published the new Amendment again in 1831 and in 1833. Connecticut, one of the states that voted against the new Amendment published the new Amendment in 1835. Wisconsin Territory published the new Amendment in 1839; Iowa Territory published the new Amendment in 1843; Ohio published the new Amendment again, in 1848; Kansas published the new Amendment in 1855; and Nebraska Territory published the new Amendment six years in a row from 1855 to 1860. Colorado Territory published the new Amendment in 1865 and again 1867, in the 1867 printing, the present Thirteenth Amendment (slavery Amendment) was listed as the Fourteenth Amendment. The repeated reprinting of the Amended united States Constitution is conclusive evidence of its passage."

The second, and older Constitution, contains only thirteen amendments. **This is the Constitution which is real**, and which affords protections to the common man by restricting the actions of those in government. Do those in government like this? Of course not! That is why it is up to you to secure for yourself and your family the blessings of liberty—under the Laws of The One True God—rather than under the iron hand of man.

WHAT IS SOCIAL SECURITY, ANYWAY?

"The Social Security system may be accurately described as a form of Social Insur-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ance, enacted pursuant to Congress' power to 'spend money in aid of the "general welfare", Helvering vs. Davis [301 U.S., at 640]."

"My judgment accordingly is, that policies of insurance are within... the admiralty and maritime jurisdiction of the United States." Federal Judge Story, in DELOVIO VS. BOIT, 7 Federal Cases, #3776, at page 444 (1815). (Author's Note: This case has never been overturned, because it is impossible to change this fact of law. All insurance is of Admiralty-Maritime jurisdiction under international law, and a policy of insurance is considered prima fascia evidence that you are a United States citizen. The benefit of passing off your liability for carelessness onto some one else through "insurance" is considered a privilege by the government.)

THE FOLLOWING IS THE DEFINITION OF TRIBUTE (TAX):

"A contribution which is raised by a prince or sovereign from his subjects to sustain the expenses of the state. A sum of money paid by an inferior sovereign or state to a superior potentate, to secure the friendship or protection of the latter." Blacks Law Dictionary forth ed. p. 1677.

You need to know and understand what contribution means in F. I C. A.—Federal Insurance Contribution Act. Read the following definition.

"Contribution. Right of one who has discharged a common liability to recover of another also liable, the aliquot portion which he ought to pay or bear. Under principle of "contribution," a tort-feasor against whom a judgment is rendered is entitled to recover proportional shares of judgment from other joint tort-feasor whose negligence contributed to the injury and who were also liable to the plaintiff (cite omitted). The share of a loss payable by an insurer when contracts with two or more insurers cover the same loss. The insurer's share of a loss under a coinsurance or similar provision. The sharing of a loss or payment among several. The act of any one or several of a number of co-debtors, co-sureties, etc., in reimbursing one of their number who has paid the whole debt or suffered the whole liability, each to the extent of his proportionate share." (Blacks Law Dictionary 6th ed.).

Thereby making you obligated for the national debt, under the law of contracts. The Social Security system is one of the contractual nexus' between you and the king. Because you are involved in the king's commerce and have asked voluntarily for his protection, you have accomplished the following:

You have admitted that you are equally responsible for having caused the national debt and that you are a wrong doer, as defined by the above legal definition. You have admitted to being a Fourteenth Amendment citizen, who only has civil rights granted by the king. By being a Fourteenth Amendment citizen, you have agreed that you do not have standing in court to question the national debt, or the collection thereon. This is the real meaning of being a United States citizen.

There have been men who understood what was to happen to America. The more I learn, the more I wonder if these types of words are a warning, or just a smug prediction?

"All the armies of Europe, Asia and Africa combined could not, by force, take a drink from the Ohio, or make a track on the Blue Ridge in a trial of a thousand years. At what

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

point then is the approach of danger to be expected? I answer, if it ever reach us it must spring up amongst us. It cannot come from abroad. If destruction be our lot, we ourselves must be its author and finisher.” Abraham Lincoln

As I will explain in Part Two, the American BAR Association is actually the American British Accreditation Regency Association—a private corporation under the Lawyers Guild of Great Britain, which is a closely held private stock company—probably the majority of which is owned by the Bank of England (See “the City”).

When you wonder what is going on, remember who legislates all of the laws and treaties—lawyers—and do not forget, that under this system, all judges are FIRST, lawyers of the BAR.

And when you study the Civil War, think carefully about this case site:

“...[T]he United States may acquire territory by conquest or by treaty, and may govern it through the exercise of the power of Congress conferred by Section 3 of Article IV of the Constitution...

In exercising this power, Congress is not subject to the same constitutional limitations, as when it is legislating for the United States. ...And in general the guarantees of the Constitution, save as they are limitations upon the exercise of executive and legislative power when exerted for or over our insular possessions, extend to them only as Congress, in the exercise of its legislative power over territory belonging to the United States, has made those guarantees applicable.”

[Hooven & Allison & Co. vs Evatt, 324 U.S. 652 (1945).

Please carefully note how different this decision is from the limitations brought forth concerning the powers of Congress outside of Washington, DC, in the Dred Scott case. It is easy to see how things changed after the Thirteenth and Fourteenth Amendments.

And yes, many in the judicial community have understood where we are heading and did not like it.

“The idea prevails with some indeed, it found expression in arguments at the bar that we have in this country substantially or practically two national governments; one to be maintained under the Constitution, with all its restrictions; the other to be maintained by Congress outside and independently of that instrument, by exercising such powers as other nations of the earth are accustomed to exercise.

“I take leave to say that if the principles thus announced should ever receive the sanction of a majority of this court, a radical and mischievous change in our system of government will be the result. We will, in that event, pass from the era of constitutional liberty guarded and protected by a written constitution into an era of legislative absolutism.

“It will be an evil day for American liberty if the theory of a government outside of the supreme law of the land finds lodgment in our constitutional jurisprudence. No higher duty rests upon this court than to exert its full authority to prevent all violation of the principles of the constitution.”

[Downes vs Bidwell, 182 U.S. 244 (1901)]

What this is referring to is legislation under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution, under which fully 95% and more of the legislation of today is done—legislation which pertains only to the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress within Washington,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

DC.

ESQUIRE

Lets take just a moment to think about the title of Esquire, which all BAR attorneys proudly proclaim as their own.

“Esquire - In English Law. A title of dignity next above gentleman, and below knight. Also a title of office given to sheriffs, serjeants, and barristers at law, justices of the peace, and others.” Blacks Law Dictionary fourth ed. p. 641.

So, in Black’s Law Dictionary, it is admitted that Esquire is of British law.

Esquire is a granted rank and Title of nobility by the king, which is below Knight and above a yeoman—common man. An Esquire is someone that does not do manual labor as signified by this status, see the following definition.

“Esquires by virtue of their offices; as justices of the peace, and others who bear any office of trust under the crown....for whosoever studieth the laws of the realm, who studieth in the universities, who professeth the liberal sciences, and who can live idly, and without manual labor, and will bear the port, charge, and countenance of a gentleman, he shall be called master, and shall be taken for a gentleman.” Blackstone Commentaries p.561-562.

To live idly—an interesting concept, don’t you think? Particularly interesting if you bother to read Scripture. Perhaps, if you wish to understand the world around you, you should study Scripture—Start with S. Luke 11:46;

He said, “and woe to you jurists! you load men with irksome burdens, and you will not put a single finger to their burdens...”

The word “jurists” in the King James Bible, is translated today as “lawyers”. Is there any question in your mind as to what He means when he says “...and you will not put a single finger to their burdens...”? The law of man is simply a method whereby the parasites can force their daily bread out of the common man—out of the producers in society—nothing else. It always has been, and it always will be.

Today, in the UNITED STATES, there are more police as a percentage of the population than in any other nation on the face of the earth, by a wide margin.

Today, in the UNITED STATES, there are more prison beds as a percentage of the population than in any other nation on the face of the earth, by a wide margin. And they are very serious about building many more prisons.

Today, in the UNITED STATES, there are more prisoners in prison as a percentage of population than in any other nation on the face of the earth, by a VERY wide margin—and they intend to put a lot more in prison, soon. There are many more people in prison in America today as a percentage of population than there were in Russia at the height of the Gulags of Stalin—many more, as a percentage of the population—at least DOUBLE the number!

Today, in the UNITED STATES, they have the best—i.e., worst—asset forfeiture laws in the world. The jack booted thugs now have the right to steal literally anything they wish to steal—under any pretense they wish to use.

Perhaps understanding comes through a little better with this. The purpose of United

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

States citizenship is that the privileged few parasites can live without manual labor—can live idly—can force their daily bread out of the common man, through tribute—sorry, through CON-tribute- ION—contribution. Tribute is the root word of contribution. And if you won't CON-tribute, they will steal what they wish. Why?—because they own it by your voluntary contract.

So when Barack Obama stands up and says; “Everyone should CON-tribute their fair share,” now you know what he is really saying. Think about Barack Obama as you read the following quote.

“Our rulers will become corrupt, our people careless... the time for fixing every essential right on a legal basis is [now] while our rulers are honest, and ourselves united. From the conclusion of this war we shall be going downhill. It will not then be necessary to resort every moment to the people for support. They will be forgotten, therefore, and their rights disregarded. They will forget themselves, but in the sole faculty of making money, and will never think of uniting to effect a due respect for their rights. The shackles, therefore, which shall not be knocked off at the conclusion of this war, will remain on us long, will be made heavier and heavier, till our rights shall revive or expire in a convulsion.”

—Thomas Jefferson

LET THAT SINK IN

Bill Clinton admitted that the accumulative tax rate in America was in excess of 65%, and will reach 85% by the year 2005. Think about this as you read this final quote, and think about all of the poorly paid police officers and others out there.

“...And to preserve their independence, we must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt. We must make our election between economy and liberty or profusion and servitude. If we run into such debts as that we must be taxed in our meat and in our drink, in our necessaries and our comforts, in our labors and our amusements, for our callings and our creeds, as the people of England are, our people, like them, must come to labor sixteen hours in the twenty-four, and give the earnings of fifteen of these to the government for their debts and daily expenses; and the sixteenth being insufficient to afford us bread, we must live, as they now do, on oatmeal and potatoes; have not time to think, no means of calling the mismanager's to account; but be glad to obtain subsistence by hiring ourselves to rivet their chains on the necks of our fellow sufferers...”

(Thomas Jefferson) THE MAKING OF AMERICA, p. 395

Summary:

1. **All members of the BAR are British subjects**, and as such, are bound to enforce the codes and proclamations of Washington, DC. Since all BAR members in the united States are United States citizens, and since the tax code of the United States is for the benefit of the Crown, it is easy to understand that all United States citizens are also subjects of the Crown. Therefore, arguing about the King's taxes makes you two things—a disobedient slave, and a tax protester.

The following is an excerpt from an article which appeared in the Anti-Shyster October, 1991 as written by Alfred Adask regarding the 13th Amendment. This particular section is entitled...

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

INTERNATIONAL BAR ASSOCIATION

“In Colonial America, attorneys trained attorneys but most had no ‘title of nobility’ or ‘honor’. There was no requirement that one be a lawyer to hold the position of district attorney, attorney general, or judge; a citizen’s ‘counsel of choice’ was not restricted to a lawyer; there were no state bar associations. The only organization that certified lawyers was the International Bar Association (IBA), chartered by the King of England, headquartered in London, and closely associated with the international banking system. Lawyers admitted to the IBA received the rank : ‘Esquire’ — a ‘title of nobility’.

‘Esquire’ was the principle title of nobility which the 13th Amendment sought to prohibit from the United States. Why? Because the loyalty of ‘Esquire’ lawyers was suspect. Bankers and lawyers with an ‘Esquire’ behind their names were agents of the monarchy, members of an organization whose principle purposes were political, not economic, and regarded with the same wariness that some people today reserve for members of the KGB or the CIA.

Article 1, Sect. 9 of the Constitution sought to prohibit the International Bar Association (or any other agency that granted titles of nobility) from operating in America. But the Constitution neglected to specify a penalty, so the prohibition was ignored, and agents of the monarchy continued to infiltrate and influence the government (as in the Jay Treaty and the US Bank charter incidents). Therefore, a ‘title of nobility’ amendment that specified a penalty (loss of citizenship) was proposed in 1789, and again in 1810. The meaning of the amendment is seen in its intent to prohibit persons having titles of nobility and loyalties to foreign governments and bankers from voting, holding public office, or using their skills to subvert the government.”

2. All laws in the United States, be they city, county, state or federal, are privately copyrighted (Don’t argue with me, just go look at the fly leaf of the darn code books!). Think about that. If you attempt to use the King’s Rules against him, without having permission to quote and use the rules—unless the King licenses you to so quote and use the rules—what do you think are the chances of you winning your case? Perhaps, if you consider this fact of private copyrighting of the laws you must live under as a United States citizen, you will begin to understand just what an Esquire really is!

3. Who are the real enemies? If the private copyrights could be traced, they would lead back to the Crown, which is the London financial district. This is where all of the municipal corporations in the United States spring from as well. However, these money kings have no real power and authority on their own. Their numbers are much too small, so they absolutely depend upon chosen minions to carry out their work and the subjection of the targeted people. If these chosen minions can be identified, are they not the real enemy? And don’t point fingers at the police or the federal agents. They are just cannon fodder for the real enemies—human targets to shield the real problem creators. And I have already given you the answer; they are called Esquire—men, and women, too lazy to work, and who must bleed their daily bread from the commoners (uh, that’s you and me, by the way). In Scripture, we are told not to enter their courts, and I hope that I have given you some inkling of why we are told that. But, without the Esquires, these same courts can not operate! The police have no where to take their revenue. The federal agents have no where to look for guidance, and protection, when they “follow

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

orders” and violate the Law written in their hearts.

4. Read Part Two. The UNITED STATES was established as a Crown Colony in order to reestablish the authority of the British King over the states, which had successfully thrown off the yoke of feudalism in the Americas. Feudalism is back, ladies and gentlemen, and United States citizens are in that feudal state as subjects of the King every bit as much as are Esquires.

Please, I ask you, think of these things I have written of before you go see an Esquire, and before you admit to being a United States citizen. Think—if not for yourself—then for the children you will leave this once great nation to!

Ladies and Gentleman, I submit to you that we, as a People, can not begin to right the wrongs we have been subjected to until we identify the source of the problem. I hope this essay makes your job of identification a little easier.

A last parting thought; What are 1000 lawyers at the bottom of the ocean?

A pretty good start.

NEXT—Part Two: The Constitution

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART II THE CONSTITUTION

Once again, I understand what many of you are facing with this information. But please, ask yourself if what you reading here doesn't answer so many of the questions you have had over the years and no answers for them. Why is it that no matter who gets elected, nothing changes?

Why are the Republicans and Democrats so much alike? Where are all your "freedoms" going, and why? And there are many other questions as well. This is the answer, like it or not. And what you must do with this information is not just "believe" it, but go to work and confirm it!

Many of you have worked very hard over the years to elect the "right politician". Well, while you have been working for "them", many other men, dozens, even hundreds of them, have been digging through case law decisions, filing freedom of information requests, initiating law suits against government personnel and entities to force the truth out and sifting through millions of pages of government archives, all of them looking for the information you now have access to.

And this is not all. You are going to see a lot more over the next several parts, much of it to confirm to you that what you are reading here is the Truth.

So, please, read on, and prepare yourself for much more in Part III!

What, exactly, Is The Constitution?

The Constitution of the United States of America, Article I, Section 8, Clause 17:

To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever, over such District (not exceeding ten Miles square) as may, by Cession of particular States, and the Acceptance of Congress, become the Seat of the government of the United States, and to exercise like Authority over all Places purchased by the Consent of the Legislature of the State in which the same shall be, for the Erection of Forts, Magazines, Arsenals, Dock-Yards, and other needful Buildings;

UH?

So what?

Is the Constitution fact or fiction? That's all I want to know! Don't bore me with details or rhetoric about words or laws or statutes or any of that other 'stuff'!

Just tell me; What, exactly, is the Constitution? Is it fact or fiction? Does it even exist anymore?

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Of course the Constitution exists, or Washington, DC, as a seat of government, could not exist, because the Constitution is the creation document for what is known as The United States Government (i. e., the UNITED STATES). Without the Constitution, the District of Columbia ceases to have any lawful existence, except as a city (except as a city within the confines of the Commonwealth of Virginia; this is very important to know). Not that this would stop those in power in DC, but it would raise some questions in the minds of the People that probably could not be answered without blood-shed, and some of the blood shed would be that of those in DC, and, of course, their minions.

So I think that everyone can agree that the Constitution is a fact. Not very many people deny that Washington, DC, or that the UNITED STATES, exists. But what about fiction? Yes, the Constitution is also a fiction, but not in the literal sense. The Constitution is a fiction in the minds of the People; Those who persist in believing what they wish to have be true, in the face of all evidence to the contrary, including case law from the courts created by Congress through the power granted by the Constitution. That being said, the questions still remain concerning the Constitution.

Yet the answers to all of our questions about the so-called Constitution is right in the Constitution; if we would simply read it, and think about what we are reading, instead of accepting that which we are TOLD we are reading! It took me many years and many false starts before I finally started to read the Constitution, instead of reading what others have said about the Constitution. Once I did this, what others were actually saying, instead of what I thought they were saying, became very clear.

'They' tell us the answer to the vast majority of our questions at every opportunity, but we simply fail to hear what 'they' are really saying. We prefer to hear that which we think is being said, rather than carefully listening and thinking about the meaning behind the rhetoric.

"DEMOCRACY"

Since when did I pledge allegiance to any old "democracy"?

All of us have heard the old objections and the questions about "what is going on" including the above. Why did we pledge "allegiance" to any creation of man without the realization that our husbands, brothers, fathers and sons (and now daughters) would be sent off to foreign wars for the profits and gain of the merchants of the earth?

I Samuel 8:18 "I brought up Israel from Egypt, I rescued you from the power of the Egyptians and from the power of all the realms that were oppressing you; and to-day you have rejected your God, who has himself saved you from all your calamities and distresses; you have said 'no' to me and claimed a king. Then he added, "Here are the methods of the king who shall reign over you; your sons he will take and place them in his chariots and among his horsemen and to run before his chariots; he will put them in command of his regiments and companies; some will have to plough his ground and reap his harvest, to make his arms and construct his chariots; your daughters he will take for perfumers and cooks and bakers; he will take the pick of your fields and vineyards and olive-yards and present them to his courtiers; a tenth part of your arable land and vineyards he will present to his officers and courtiers; your slaves, male and female, and the pick of your cattle and your asses, he will take and use for his own ends; a tenth part

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

of your flocks he will take; and you yourselves shall be slaves to him. Then you will cry out on account of the king whom you have chosen for yourselves, but the Eternal will not answer you then.”

The above is undoubtedly one of the strongest parts of the Bible, and the one everyone can understand around him in action, if he will but look. It says very plainly that God the Eternal will not hear your call until you come out of her! And it goes a long way in explaining the Constitution, as you will see. And in understanding why those who serve the UNITED STATES in aggressive warfare are so punished for their actions. For instance, all of the POW/MIAs, the Gulf War Syndrome sufferers, Michael New and all the rest too numerous to mention. There have been tens of thousands. There will be thousands more. Perhaps millions more.

You defend your nation on the shores and fields of the nation; You plunder other nations on their shores and in their fields. That is the lesson of foreign wars and of a standing army. A standing army is always, in the final resort, used against the People it supposedly is to protect. A standing army is always, in the end, filled with desperate men who will do whatever is necessary to protect what little they think is theirs, be it rank, starvation wages, or a way of life they can not do without. Pity them, for they know not what they do.

(See the British army in the building of the British merchant Empire and the accumulation of the vast wealth of the Rothschilds/Rhodes and the like. It is very instructive to talk to UNITED STATES soldiers today, and hear how they cannot get an education any other way or, in many cases, earn a living outside of the military forces. This is identical to the situation which existed in England for centuries, and the world is littered with the graves of the common folk of England who died to ‘create’ the merchant Empire of “The City”, and who never saw any gain for their deaths. Also see the book The Empire of “The City” by E. C. Knuth, where you will learn that the real power of the British “Empire” is the London financial district known as “The City”, and “the Crown” is the committee of 12 to 14 men who rule “The City”, thus being the “power” behind the “King”.)

Always the illusion must be kept before the “People” of the united States that what they are supporting and/or fighting for is the Union of States, the united States, instead of some kingdom, the UNITED STATES (a corporation) located on the banks of the Potomac. More on this later. History always repeats itself; those who fail to study history become just so many more victims of history: the Wilderness; Iwo Jima; the Bulge; Stalingrad; Hiroshima; the Ardennes; Pork Chop Hill; Viet Nam; Iraq; Gettysburg; and on and on.

And I’ve said nothing about the above Clause 17 from the Constitution. Perhaps just to give you a chance to think about it some more. Why? Because the answer is right there before us, if we are willing to put our preconceived, preprogrammed prejudices aside and actually think about what we are reading. If need be, get out a legal dictionary and look up the words.

What you are reading as Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution of the United States of America is why so many Americans refer to the United States as Amerika. Because of the Constitution, this is what exists now as the UNITED STATES of 1998, and on into the future. Not a pretty place, from my view point. But it is exactly what was intended by the men who, meeting secretly, wrote the Constitution!

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

And to understand this completely, to understand the secrecy completely, there is one more part of the Constitution which we must consider; Article VI, Clause II:

This Constitution, and the Laws of the United States which shall be made in Pursuance thereof; and all Treaties made, or which shall be made, under the Authority of the United States, shall be the supreme Law of the Land; and the Judges in every States shall be bound thereby, any Thing in the Constitution or Laws of any State to the Contrary notwithstanding. Read the above section again, only end it with not with standing, instead of notwithstanding, and think about how that changes the meaning of the Clause: the laws and Constitution of any state to the contrary will not have standing, in Washington, DC.

This Clause is only interesting if taken within the context of Article I, Section 8, Clause 17. Read again: and all Treaties made... Then think about one clear, simple fact; 'They' put no limitation upon time as far as when the chain of treaties began.

Could the train go clear back to the charter granted in the early 1600s by the King of England to Virginia? A charter issued under the authority of "the Crown", which is the London Financial District known as "the City"? Would this perhaps explain the First Bank of the United States a little better? And Article I, Section 8, Clause 17 would be absolutely essential for this Clause of Article VI to be enforced.

It is also important to understand the relationship of the "Supreme Court" to these proceedings: Only the King's Lawyers have ever been allowed to 'practice' law before the Supreme Court or before any court subordinate to the Supreme Court. But I digress...

What do you think of when you say Constitution? Most people I have talked to think of a beautiful scroll, with the words "We find these truths to be self evident, that all men are created equal" written thereon. In fact, I have even had people tell me that these words are a part of the preamble to the Constitution. Of course, this is wrong, because the words come from the foundation document of these united States, The Declaration of Independence. Legally referred to as the Statute of 1776, The Declaration of Independence is the cornerstone upon which our freedoms rest. The Declaration of Independence is what the men of the Revolutionary War shed their blood for, not the Constitution! But the programming of our People has been so complete that everyone believes that the Constitution is the key document.

Nothing could be further from the truth! The more I learn, the more convinced I become that the Constitution was actually the bankers/King of England/lawyers's answer to The Declaration of Independence. And it is impossible, with any study of history, to believe that "accidents" happen in politics. (If it was an "accident", it would be corrected.) To believe that a "mistake" of the magnitude of Article I, Section 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution of the United States of America just "happened" through error and oversight of the men who created the Constitution. Or that Washington, DC, just 'happened' to be placed within Virginia. Or that the provision of Article VI, Clause II exists.

Most everyone has heard of the "fatal flaw" in the Constitution. But most everyone claims that the general welfare clause is the problem; They are wrong. The clause enumerated above, Clause 17 of Section 8, Article I is the fatal flaw in the Constitution.

How can we tell that?

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

By Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17, of course, and by case law as well.

The Constitution is the law of the land, right?

Wrong!

The Constitution is the law of the land, except for the 10 miles square area known as the District of Columbia!

The Constitution does not apply in Washington, DC! That is precisely what the above Clause of the 'Constitution' is all about! "To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever..."

There is no control on Congress within Washington, DC, whatsoever. Not by the Constitution, and not by the People who supposedly "benefit" from the Constitution. None whatsoever. Congress can do whatsoever they please in DC, with no law, and no People, to answer to. That is, by definition, a "democracy".

And I have already heard all of the arguments that 'one little tiny mistake by our forefathers does not negate a great document, the best effort the world has ever seen in man's attempt to obtain freedom' (see I Samuel 8:18). This is not one tiny little mistake! At least 95% of all of the "laws" enacted by "Congress" are enacted through the power granted by this Clause! And then I hear about how the 'court' destroyed the Constitution by their "false interpretation" of this clause. In *Downes v. Bidwell*, the Supreme Court ruled that "exclusive" meant exactly that; EXCLUSIVE jurisdiction, with no control from the Constitution. (In *Downes v. Bidwell*, the Court ruled that "exclusive" meant "without consideration of the Constitutional restraints...") A few years later, the Supreme Court confirmed this ruling in *Hooven v. Evatt*, and I fail to see how else the 'court' could have ruled! What is not understandable about "exclusive"? But of course, this is not all of the story either!

Tell me, what is the definition of Democracy? And yes, we've all heard the bit about "mob rule", but what does that mean?

Simply put, it means that there is no law to govern by (no Constitution; no Scripture; nothing), that anything is permissible if the majority, or rather the controlling (moneyed) minority, desires it. No law. None whatsoever. Anything goes, including genocide, debt creation, concentration camps, income tax, social security, or anything else that the People can be convinced is good enough to contract for. Oh, and let me be very clear about this; The People only have to contract for the benefits they want, because the rest comes along with the pie, unseen and not thought of until it applies. Think of it this way, a "benefit" or a "privilege" is "bait". As any fisherman knows, "bait" always has a hook in it.

What is the hook? Anytime you apply for any benefit from any arm of the government, you first must surrender all Rights. *All* Rights. There can be no exception to this statement, because any creation of man, capable of giving "benefits", must gain something by the giving of the benefit, or there is no reason to give the benefit. Benefits are privileges. Privileges only exist for your benefit at the expense of some other man. Thus, any benefit for you must be taken from someone else first, so any government "empowered to give" must first be "empowered to take". This is the purpose of Article I, Section 8, Clause 17.

Black's Law Dictionary, Volume 6, page 1197: Privilege. A particular and peculiar

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

benefit or advantage enjoyed by a person, company, or class, beyond the common advantages of other citizens. An exceptional or extraordinary power or exemption. A peculiar right, advantage, exemption, power, franchise, or immunity held by a person or class, not generally possessed by others.

Does it make any sense to ask 'man' for the privilege of being set above other men? To enjoy an advantage over other men? Does it make any sense to think that there is not some cost involved in gaining such a privilege? No lawful government, of the People, by the People, and for the People, can give any privilege to one man, because such can only be done at the expense of another man. So there is always more to the story than what you see on the surface. There is the rest of the story.

Just like the parasitic infestations in pork and in shell fish, the rest of the story is unseen until the host becomes so sick that the problem can not be ignored. All that was needed in order to destroy what was created by the Declaration of Independence and the blood of those who died for freedom in the Revolutionary War was for the framers of the "Constitution" to give exclusive power to make "law" to any branch of the so-called government in any forum whatsoever and the nature of man would take care of the rest.

The nature of man, with a little help from the King's minions, namely his lawyers. Please see the info about Esquires in United States citizen, Yes or No?

Then, when Congress went sine a die in 1861, exclusive Legislative power devolved unto the President, who, at the point of a gun (acting as Commander-in-Chief of the army), reconvened Congress. Thereafter, you find legislation by Presidential fiat, i.e., Executive Orders, become the "law of the land" (but ONLY in Washington, DC, under the municipal code of DC, in the territories and in the federal district States).

The only quasi-legitimate manner in which to convince the vast majority of the People to enter into the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress was to offer a "contract(s)" under the guise of a "benefit", without explaining all of the elements of the contract. Of course, this is called a constructive trust (see Black's Law Dictionary for an explanation of constructive trust, i.e., constructive fraud).

Why must there be a contract? Under the Constitution, the absolute Right to contract is protected, and it is only in this manner that your other Rights can voluntarily be given up for the duration of the contract entered into. The contracts thus entered into form trusts, which I have also seen called Bifurcated Trusts. It is through these so-called trusts that the financial interest in your labor and time is claimed for the benefit of those who conspire to have the laws and statutes passed which most benefit them in the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress in the District of Criminals, Washington, DC.

The only manner in which this thievery of the labor and time of the People of America can be thus accomplished, is that each individual must be, in some manner, convinced to volunteer (perhaps you have heard of our voluntary tax code?) into the jurisdiction of the municipal code of Washington, DC, where Congress holds exclusive Legislative power. The operative word being power. And the Constitution absolutely forbids Congress and the States from interfering in any manner with the Obligation of Contracts.

Once you volunteer into the jurisdiction of the municipal code of Washington, DC, the restraints of the Constitution on the workings of government officials no longer ap-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ply, and they can and will do whatever they wish. By contracting for privileges into Washington, DC, you remove yourself from above the Constitution to a place beyond the Constitution, where there is no law.

This is called the King's Privilege. The King's Sovereignty is based on his 'right' to make law. If he has the right to make law, then he is bound by no law! And those who are bound by the law he 'makes' are called subjects! So if you are bound by the laws written by Congress, if you are a United States citizen, do not fool yourself about your legal status.

This is important to understand, because you, as a native American, are not under the Constitution, unless you are an official of the so-called government; Sworn to uphold and defend the said document. (Why anyone would take such an oath is beyond me, but then, I'm not as young and foolish as I once was!) Did you sign the Constitution? No? Then you are not under it, and there is case law on this subject. The courts understand this, even if the vast majority of us do not. The courts tell us "Don't bring up the Constitution in this court!" and we don't understand that the only thing being adjudicated in that court are contracts.

The Constitution is simply a restraint upon those who work in the so-called government. It is nothing else, and conveys no privileges or benefits to the common man, nor does it grant any protections. The Constitution simply makes the existence of the District of Criminals in Washington possible. And the men who wrote the Constitution understood exactly what they were doing. No one who called themselves a Christian and who recognized the Lawgiver of the Universe could not understand what a license they were handing to Congress with the term exclusive Legislation.

Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 919; License. A personal privilege to do some particular act or series of acts on land without possessing any estate or interest therein, and is ordinarily revocable at the will of the licensor and is not assignable... The permission by competent authority to do an act which, without such permission, would be illegal, a trespass, a tort, or otherwise not allowable... Certificate or the document itself which gives permission. Leave to do thing which licensor could prevent... Permission to do a particular thing, to exercise a certain privilege or to carry on a particular business or to pursue a certain occupation...

"To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever..." Who could issue such a license to "make law"? **Only the King.**

To make any law whatsoever. To 'create' any tax code, for Washington, DC! To create any privilege whatsoever for any one willing to pay enough for the privilege. For instance, the 'privilege' of printing 'money'. But only for Washington, DC.

To make any law whatsoever! It is impossible for me to believe that the men who fought and died for freedom in the Revolutionary War would ever agree to let any man write the law under which they must live. Who has the power to write law? Only THE Sovereign. The power to write law IS the power of sovereignty, and any man who must obey the said laws is known as a subject, as in subject to the power of. The more I learn the more I understand why the Constitution was written in secrecy. And now I understand what I was told concerning the Constitution being sent to Britain in 1788 for ap-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

proval, before the final draft was accepted in 1792. You will understand as well, before I am done.

And I know that many of you will simply shake your head in disbelief about all of the nonsense, like, for sure, yeh, Great Britian! Only the greatest maritime power on the face of the earth for centuries. And just a small island, kinda like a ten miles square district of Virginia, you know, perhaps you've heard of Washington, DC?

However, if you want a lesson in real American History, go to '<http://www.state-citizen.org/files/stateinfobriefs/000contents.txt>' and download the file '1STCONG.ZIP' and read a "true and correct copy of the Constitution from 1789, before the Bill of Rights-check this out, and see all the changes made by our government". This is the version of the Constitution accepted by the delegates of the States, not the one "adopted" by the 'government' in 1792, AFTER the British approved the final version. I think you will find it rather interesting to compare the two versions, and this may help you understand what is actually going on in America.

And remember this; men such as George Washington and Thomas Jefferson certainly knew and understood exactly what was going on. Many of the ordinary delegates and such certainly did not know or understand, or many of the so-called founding fathers would have been lynched!

Now all that had to be done was to devise some manner of convincing all of those so-called free-men out there that it was a good idea to contract into the jurisdiction of Washington, DC! Because no matter what privilege or 'tax code' is created for the benefit of the wealthy minority, it is of no benefit to 'them' without the willing 'taxpayers' to participate. You know; the cannon fodder; the useless eaters, the vast majority of the People of the united States, who must be convinced that the united Sates is really the UNITED STATES, and that the Constitution is a GREAT document! Oh, isn't public education wonderful?

Once you understand these facts, the Buck Act, Social Security (the greatest Ponzi scheme ever devised!), the so-called Income Tax, the IRS, FBI and all of the other alphabet soup agencies begin to make sense. Not much, until you finally grasp that Congress has the right to regulate those who are contracted into their exclusive jurisdiction!

Contracting with equals the acceptance of.

To Contract with Congress is to accept any burden placed upon Washington, DC, by Congress, including the payment of the national bankruptcy, serve in foreign wars for the benefit of the merchants of death, be a guinea pig for medical experiments, in fact, to act as a slave of Congress, just as the contracts spell out. To be, in short, a subject.

EDUCATION

One of the real problems that the People of the united States face is educating themselves, because those who benefit from our ignorance, are not going to volunteer the information required for our freedom! And our education begins with the most basic of all facts: everything you sign is a contract! Or you would not be asked to sign it!!!!!!

When I was younger, I signed everything put before me. Now, you'll have a very difficult time making me sign anything that I didn't write! And for sure I am not going to sign anything that is not completely before me, such as a bank signature card where you agree to abide by all the rules and regulations of the Federal Reserve. After all, there are

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

only about 7 million pages of statutes, rules, ordinances and the like involved, so why worry, right?

This is particularly amusing to me when friends and neighbors argue with me about not being able to obey The True God's Laws, because there are just too many of them (about 728)! But these same people will willingly and even eagerly sign a contract to observe 7 million pages of rules and regulations without batting an eye, and then wonder why they are in trouble with the IRS, or the BATF, or any of the other numerous agencies of Washington, DC.

If you are confused about this, read the Arman Condo Letter, and follow up with Invisible Contracts, then What Is Money? By the time you finish, you will be ready for the book Strategic Withdrawal (find at 'www.klang.com' in the section marked catalog), and you will begin to understand why the book costs what it does. And you may even learn that it is the cheapest book you will ever purchase.

When you look up the Constitution of 1789, take a look at the file 'ACOUNNES.ZIP'. See for yourself where the US went bankrupt. You'll be amazed by documents that prove your property right down to your shorts has been mortgaged to the world bankers, through the exclusive jurisdiction of Washington, DC. See also BANK_WAR.ZIP; Supreme Court statements that the 13th and 14th Amendments undermine the U.S. Constitution and extend jurisdiction over "U.S. Citizens" (and those who claim to be). Many citations that U.S. citizens are NOT protected by the Bill of Rights.

REGULATION, OR BENEFIT?

A friend just brought me some information that is very interesting. In the April, 1998, newsletter from the California Department of Real Estate (DRE), the DRE informs their licensees that under the "Personal Responsibility and Work Opportunity Act" (welfare reform act of 1996) passed by the U.S. Congress (what a surprise!), the State of California must insure that no benefits are provided to illegal aliens. It is interesting to note that the DRE goes on to say: The definition of a public benefit includes professional and occupational licenses issued to individuals by state agencies." For years people have been told that these licenses are only "regulatory" in nature, to insure that the public is protected from unscrupulous or improperly trained personnel in positions that may be prone to cause serious injury (financial or physical) to the public.

As you can see, the truth always comes out. Any license issued by any government is a benefit! And a contract, with the government. It is a privilege issued at the expense of your fellow man, and there is a cost. There is no such thing as a free lunch. We know this, but... we keep acting as if there is not absolute truth in the statement. Remember; any 'government' big and powerful enough to give you anything you need or want is also big and powerful enough to take from you anything someone else wants or desires!

And I know that many of you are going to be in denial about what I have written. However, you should not be, and will not be, if you just continue to study and learn. There are no accidents in politics. Everything is carefully planned to occur in just the manner in which they do. And one of the pieces that I learned that really put everything in perspective for me concerns the so-called father of 'our' country; George Washington.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

I have always wondered exactly where the federal districts had their beginnings. I've seen much of the information developed about 'federalism' and 'federal zones', etc., but every time I thought I had finally arrived at the source of the infection, more information came to my view. On the internet, at '<http://civil-liberties.com>', is a very interesting on-line book titled *The United States is Still a Subject of Great Britain*. Recently new to this on-line book is a summary section in which I found the following information:

"In reading the Messages and Papers of the Presidents, vol. I, 1789-1897, I discovered the following:

Gentlemen of the Senate:

Pursuant to the powers vested in me by the act entitled "An act repealing after the last day of June next the duties heretofore laid upon distilled spirits imported from abroad and laying others in their stead, and also upon spirits distilled within the United States, and for appropriating the same," I have thought fit to divide the United States into the following districts, namely:

The district of New Hampshire, to consist of the State of New Hampshire; the district of Massachusetts, to consist of the State of Massachusetts; the district of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, to consist of the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations; the district of Connecticut, to consist of the State of Connecticut; the district of Vermont, to consist of the State of Vermont; the district of New York, to consist of the State of New York; the district of New Jersey, to consist of the State of New Jersey; the district of Pennsylvania, to consist of the State of Pennsylvania; the district of Delaware, to consist of the State of Delaware; the district of Maryland, to consist of the State of Maryland; the district of Virginia, to consist of the State of Virginia; the district of North Carolina, to consist of the State of North Carolina; the district of South Carolina, to consist of the State of South Carolina; and the district of Georgia, to consist of the State of Georgia." March 4, 1791 (page 99).

In George Washington's Proclamation of March 30, 1791, he declares the district of Columbia to be created and its borders established, he says further:

"And Congress by an amendatory act passed on the 3rd day of the present month of March have given further authority to the President of the United States..."

This replaced the States in Union with the District States in Union formally known as the States of... . This was also necessary for the newly formed Bank of the United States, February 25, 1791, to do business in the State of..., but is actually the District State. Subjection of the States of... was complete, all that was necessary was for a permanent state of war to exist, such as we have had since the Civil War, to invoke statutory law over the enemy, requiring them to obey all license requirements, because enemies (that's us, folks) have no rights in an occupied territory.

Washington declared, under the War Powers, acting as Commander-in-Chief, that the States of the Union were now overlaid by District States, which as I think you know, removes the States boundaries as a matter of sovereignty, violating the Constitutional guarantee of a Republican form of government to the States in Union, Article 4, Sec. 4, which cannot take place if delegated authority is taken under the War Powers, not ceded by the Charter/Constitution.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

The Constitution granted legislative authority to Congress only over a ten square mile District, making Congress the supreme authority, Article 1, Sec. 1.17, over the District. Washington extended this District without Constitutional authority. Washington put in place officers of the District to oversee the District States. As a result of the military rule imposed by Washington, District courts and Appeals courts were ordered to enforce collection and fines and imprisonment of anyone defying the laws of the United States. THESE DISTRICTS CREATED BY GEORGE WASHINGTON HAVE NEVER BEEN REMOVED. The Judicial Districts were created by the Judiciary Act of 1789, two years before Washington said Congress gave him additional powers, thereby HE created District States, so the federal government could use the militias to crush the tax protesters in Pennsylvania, by Washington's order. Since the Judicial Districts already existed, why did they recreate them? Washington said he was dividing the United States into District States.

There is more, and to understand fully, I urge you to read the entire book-on-line. However, the rest of this paragraph, as contained in the summary is, in my opinion, in error. The author of the summary goes on to talk about DIVIDING THE STATES, but that is not what happened. You must understand the difference between the United States and the united States. Washington divided the United States into districts, not the united States. The United States is formed BY the Constitution; the united States are the union States, which unwisely formed the United States. This is a powerful distinction which must be understood for effective action in removing the legal disabilities of contractual obligations with the exclusive jurisdiction of the UNITED STATES. If it was not a powerful distinction, they would not have to contract you into the jurisdiction, but would assume all of the powers they desire without the "legal" niceties of a contract.

To help understand a little better, look at Supreme Court Rule 45.1, which says that all process of that court is in the name of the president of the United States. The Supreme Court (and all courts subject to the rules laid down by the Supreme Court) can only be an executive branch (martial law) court. Since the ultimate court of appeal to all so-called courts now under the American BAR (British Accreditation Regency) Association in the United States is a martial law court, then all subordinate courts are also martial law courts operating in the federal districts originated by George Washington!

(When you are looking up the Constitution of 1789, go to the file marked 'FEDJURIS.ZIP', and read a speech by Judge Yankovich at Stanford University showing federal jurisdiction in the courts.)

There are three branches of government in the United States; legislative, executive and judicial. All three branches of government are capable of having their own courts, i. e., legislative = legislative tribunal; executive = courts-martial (martial law under the president acting as Commander-in-Chief of the armed forces) and the judicial, which must operate in the Union States only under the rules of the common law. I know of no legitimate state courts, which would be courts of the People under common law, in America at this time. No court operating in America can be a common law court if the said court is under the BAR, which owes allegiance to a foreign power, i. e., The City.

The author of the summary quoted above correctly identified the problem, Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution of the United States of America. However, in read-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ing his works, I doubt if he truly understood the real nature of the problem: There is no law in Washington, DC. Anything goes. Anything, that is, that someone is willing to pay enough to make it worth while for the 'politicians' to act. After all, the UNITED STATES has the best politicians money can buy! Of course, "anything goes" subject to their willingness to be bound by and enter into additional treaties. If you wish to understand what I mean, study the record of those in Washington, DC, and the treaties made with the Indians. It becomes very obvious that the only treaties made and kept by "them" are the ones which personally benefit "them".

There is one more quote from the summary, concerning Patrick Henry's speech of June 5, 1788, which is very important here:

"Mr. Chairman... I rose yesterday to ask a question, which arose in my own mind. When I asked the question. I thought the meaning of my interrogation was obvious: The fate of this question and America may depend on this: Have they said, we the States? Have they made a proposal of a compact between States? If they had, this would be a confederation: It is otherwise most clearly a consolidated government. The question turns, Sir, on that poor little thing—the expression, We the People, instead of the States of America. I need not take much pains to show, that the principles of this system, are extremely pernicious, impolite and dangerous. Is this a Monarchy, like England—a compact between Prince and people; with checks and balances on the former, to secure the liberty of the latter? Is this a Confederacy, like Holland—and association of a number of independent States, each of which retain its individual sovereignty?"

The Confederate States of America.

Perhaps that makes more sense to you now. Perhaps you should read the first sentence of the March 1, 1781, Articles of Confederation: "To all to whom these Presents shall come, we the under signed Delegates of the States affixed to our Names, send greeting."

And maybe just a little more of this foundation document, which is superior law to the Constitution:

Article I. The Title of this confederacy shall be "The United States of America."

Article II. Each state retains its sovereignty, freedom, and independence, and every Power, Jurisdiction and right, which is not by this confederation expressly delegated to the United States, in Congress assembled.

Perhaps all of us can now begin to see where our freedoms and Rights went, and what the real intent behind the Constitution and all of the licenses and other contracts entered into with any arm of government really is. Because I bring witness to you, that until you identify the real basis of the problem, solutions are not possible.

I also witness to you that freedom is really rather simple. The first basis of freedom is to not 'request' a privilege from any man or any creation of man which sets you above your fellow men. Such as a license. For to do so is to give prima facia evidence that the man or the creation of man that you demanded the privilege from is superior to you, with the authority to elevate you above other men. You give prima facia evidence that the said power is your sovereign.

If every man and woman in America would realize this, our problems would evaporate. Government is an illusion, created by men for the benefit of men at the expense of

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

other men. YOU give 'government' its force and effect by recognizing it, and by participating in it's games (i.e., voting, licensing, etc.). When enough People wise up, government goes away, or, at least, enough of it goes away that it can become manageable by We the People.

Government is operated by parasites; men, and women, who have no wish or ability to produce. They must exist at the expense of others. Politicians, bureaucrats, lawyers, judges, professional military; all of these have one thing in common: Most, 99% most, have never worked a day in their lives, producing something for themselves or their fellow man. When you take away the incentive for parasites, they go away or they die off! Their incentive is called taxation. License fees are taxation.

To understand this better, read the Constitution. The only taxes authorized by the Constitution, excise and impost taxes and duties, are designed to protect the People of the united States from foreigners. Scripture tells us that only foreigners are to be taxed. Direct taxes (on land, income, labor, etc.) are forbidden, except in Washington, DC, where Congress has exclusive jurisdiction! Congress' incentive to tax ends when We the People stop going to them with hat in hand asking for a special privilege, a benefit, or a license. When We the People quit volunteering into their exclusive jurisdiction!

Oh, by the way, the Constitution is NOT suspended! I remember hearing all about "the suspension of the Constitution" and the talk about how "the judges don't respect the Constitution" and how "the politicians ignore the Constitution"! Nothing could be further from the truth. The problem is not with them; It's our problem. The Constitution is very dear and important to those in Washington, DC. After all, it's the source of their power, so they certainly are not about to suspend it! All they want to do is to figure out how to entice each and every one of the People of the several States to contract with their exclusive jurisdiction for some privilege/benefit.

And it does not matter if the so-called Amendments to the Constitution are ratified by the several States or not. (It's THEIR Constitution, People!) Such as all of the nonsense about the so-called Sixteenth Amendment. The Amendments after the first thirteen (I'm referring to the original Thirteenth Amendment) were simply adopted as part of the municipal code of the District of Columbia by the UNITED STATES, and they have no force and effect outside of the territory of the UNITED STATES except for those under contract into the exclusive jurisdiction wherein the so-called amendments ARE important.

The same is true of all acts of Congress. Congress passes two types of bills. They differ in how they are numbered. Some begin with H, and most with HR. Those beginning with HR are for the municipal code of Washington, DC, and mean nothing to the several States. And the men who serve in Washington understand this very well. It is only We the People who are confused. We have to be made to believe that it is in our interest to volunteer into their exclusive jurisdiction. After all, if they were sitting there on the Potomac, all by themselves, with no subjects to pay them and give them power, it wouldn't be much fun, now would it? So when you come right down to it, whose fault are the problems that we in America are experiencing? The politicians? The bankers? The cops? Or is it our fault?

I think I know where the blame lies.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

It lies with the Constitution and those who serve it, and we who participate with them. Look at all of the problems in America. Look at what is happening to many Americans. Look at the prisons full of men and women who never harmed anyone. Look at all of the abortions, the drugs, the Gestapo agencies, the millions of pages of so-called laws, the federal registry, the 'president' writing law (executive orders), look at all of it very closely. All of this is happening, not in spite of the Constitution, but because of the Constitution. The Constitution is the author of all this misery, deceit and crime. The Constitution, and its fatal flaw.

Chose this day who you will serve: The One True God, or Mammon. I hope this paper makes the choices we each and every one makes each day a little easier to understand.

And if you chose to continue your relationship with Mammon, then quit belly-aching and pay the taxes, because you owe them! When you take privileges from the government, and then refuse to pay the taxes due, they rightly label you a tax protester. If you owe the tax, pay it!

Bless you, each and every one, and through our combined efforts, I pray that once again The One True God may bless the united States, these Union States. One day, perhaps, these Republics; These Confederate States of America!

"If you believe certain words, you believe their hidden arguments. When you believe something is right or wrong, true or false, you believe the assumptions in the words which express the arguments. Such assumptions are often full of holes, but remain most precious to the convinced". Book Three of Dune, page 244.

What is a belief? Simply put, a belief is an assumption accepted without proof being offered. The Constitution is a great document, right? Yet you know a tree by its fruit, not by its roots. In medieval Europe, a serf on his Lord's land owed the first 25% of the newly created wealth of the soil to his master. Today, in America, the land of the "free", at least 65% goes to the hidden masters!

In Bill Clinton's 1993 report on the budget to Congress, it was admitted that the accumulative tax rate in the United States was 65%, and would be 85% by 2005. (They know and understand exactly what is going on.) Simply put, this means that when you buy a loaf of bread for \$1.00, 65 cents is taxes. When you buy a house for \$100,000.00, \$65,000.00 is taxes.

This, ladies and gentlemen, is the "fruit" of the Constitution.

Summary: There have been some additional pages added to this paper. I have also been told that a brief description of the facts contained herein is necessary.

The facts are simple;

1. The Constitution was the answer to the The Declaration of Independence.
2. The Constitution was the formative document for **a new Crown colony**, placed in the united States on a piece of ground ceded by Virginia. This gives the United States the same status under International Law as Canada. This was done by men who had no desire to see the "colonies" separate from Britian. Men who deeply felt the need for a "king".
3. The Fourteenth Amendment was the final installment of the answer to The Declaration of Independence. This was the purpose of the Civil War. See the essay United States

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

citizen, Yes or No?

4. If you are under the legal disability of any contract to Congress through the municipal code of Washington, DC, you are a subject of the said Crown colony. You are a subject of the King.

5. Under the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress simply means under feudal law, i.e., the King's privilege.

6. If you are working on "reforming" Washington, DC, and trying to "elect" the "right people for the job", if you are trying to involve others in this nonsense, you are trying to do the impossible! Washington, DC, is exactly what it was intended to be, and you will never change that!

7. The only solution to Washington, DC, is to stop playing "their" games, and stop supporting it! This will do one of two things: they will either die on the vine, or they will come after everyone (good luck to them if they dare to do this!). Either way, it is the only way we will ever solve the problem.

Anything short of solving your legal disability problems with their exclusive jurisdiction is simply feeding them more power and more authority. And, more importantly, giving them more time to plan their final, apocalyptic scenario which will crush our People. I don't know what that scenario will be, but I have some pretty good ideas, and most of our People will never even understand what has happened to them!

Good luck, and God Bless! And do not lose heart. I would not be doing this if there were not a solution! Keep reading, and all will become clear.

Those who engage in politics do so for self-interest. It is extreme folly to expect that having elected someone who you desire to serve your self-interest, that the individual so elected will not then serve his own self-interest, and thus, serve those with the most money. This is the history of man's government on earth, and those who engage with such governments without understanding this fact of human nature do so at their own peril, and through their own ignorance. To rail at the betrayal of your trust while working in your own interest is not only ignorance, it is self-betrayal at it's worst, and not only betrayal of yourself, but of your family, friends and nation as well.

This is from an original first Congress, dated 1789, (very rare)

Please check this version with the one you have, they have made many changes, in capitalization, punctuation etc. Remember that small s state means country, and capitol S State means corporation or the fictional Federal State created by the "Buck Act", 4 USC 104-110.

DEPARTMENT OF STATE OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, -to wit:

I Hereby certify that the proof sheets of an edition of the laws of the United States, under title of "Acts passed at the first Congress of the United States of America," printed at Philadelphia by Francis Childs, 1795, in 420 pages octavo, have, from page 5 to page 420 inclusive, been carefully collated by sworn clerks, with the original rolls deposited in the office of the Secretary of State, and have been rendered literally conformable therewith; except that the signatures of the President of the United States, the President

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

of the Senate, and the Speaker of the House of Representatives are omitted, and that the approbation of the President of the United States, with its date, is transposed from the end to the beginning of each act.

Given under my hand at Philadelphia, the 10th day of June 1795.

EDm. RANDOLPH

Secretary of State

CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES

we, The People of the United States, in order to form a more perfect Union, establish justice, insure domestic Tranquility, provide for the common defence, promote the general welfare, and secure the Blessings of Liberty to ourselves and our Posterity, DO ORDAIN AND ESTABLISH THIS CONSTITUTION for the United States of America.

ARTICLE I.

Sect. 1. ALL legislative powers herein granted, shall be vested in a Congress of the UNited States, which shall consist of a Senate and House of Representatives.

Sect. 2. The House of Representatives shall be composed of membes chosen every second year by the people of the several states, and the electors in each state shall have the qualifications requisite for electors of the most numerous branch of the state legislature.

No person shall be a Representative who shall not have attained to the Age of twenty five years, and been seven years a citizen of the United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that state in which he shall be chosen.

Representatives and direct taxes shall be apportioned among the several states which may be included within this Union, according to their respective numbers, which shall be determined by adding to the whole number of free persons, including those bound to Service for a term of years, and excluding Indians not taxed, three fifths of all other persons. The actual enumeration shall be made within three years after the first meeting of the Congress of the United States, and within every subsequent term of ten years in such manner as they shall by Law direct. The number of Representatives shall not exceed one for every thirty thousand, but each state shall have at Least one Representative; and until such enumeration shall be made, the state of New Hampshire shall be entitled to chuse three; Massachusetts, eight; Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, one; Connecticut, five; New York, six; New Jersey, four; Pennsylvania, eight; Delaware, one; Maryland, six; Virginia, ten; North Carolina, five; South Carolina, five; and Georgia, three.

When vacancies happen in the representation from any state, the executive authority thereof shall issue writs of election to fill such vacancies.

The House of Representatives shall chuse their Speaker and other officers; and shall have the sole power of impeachment.

Sect. 3. The Senate of the United States shall be composed of two Senators from each state, chosen by the legislature thereof, for six years; and each Senator shall have one vote.

Immediately after they shall be assembled in consequence of the first election, they

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

shall be divided as equally as may be into three classes. The seats of the Senators of the first class shall be vacated at the expiration of the second year, of the second class at the expiration of the fourth year, and of the third class at the expiration of the sixth year, so that one third may be chosen every second year; and if vacancies happen by resignation, or otherwise, during the recess of the legislature of any state the executive thereof may make temporary Appointments until the next meeting of the legislature, which shall then fill such vacancies.

No person shall be a Senator who shall not have attained to the age of thirty years, and been nine years a citizen of the United States, who shall not when elected, be an inhabitant of that state for which he shall be chosen.

The Vice President of the United States shall be President of the Senate, but shall have no vote unless they be equally divided.

The Senate shall chuse their other officers, and also a President pro tempore, in the absence of the Vice-President, or when he shall exercise the office of President of the United States.

The Senate shall have the sole Power to try all impeachments. When sitting for that purpose, they shall be on oath or affirmation. When the President of the United States is tried, the Chief Justice shall preside: And no person shall be convicted without the concurrence of two thirds of the members present.

Judgement in cases of impeachment shall not extend further than to removal from office, and disqualification to hold and enjoy any office of honor, trust or profit under the United States: but the party convicted shall nevertheless be liable and subject to indictment, trial, judgment and punishment, according to Law.

Sect 4. The times, places and manner of holding elections for Senators and Representatives, shall be prescribed in each state by the legislature thereof; but the Congress may at any time by law make or alter such regulations, except as to the places of chusing Senators.

The Congress shall assemble at least once in every year, and such meeting shall be on the first Monday in December, unless they shall by Law appoint a different Day.

Sect. 5. Each House shall be the judge of the elections, returns and qualifications of its own members, and a majority of each shall constitute a quorum to do business; but a smaller number may adjourn from day to day, and may be authorized to compel the attendance of absent members, in such manner, and under such penalties as each House may provide.

Each House may determine the rules of its proceedings, punish its members for disorderly behavior, and, with the concurrence of two thirds, expel a member.

Each House shall keep a journal of its proceedings, and from time to time publish the same, excepting such parts as may in their judgment require secrecy; and the yeas and nays of the members of either House on any question shall, at the desire of one fifth of those present, be entered on the journal.

Neither House, during the session of Congress shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor to any other place than that in which the two Houses shall be sitting.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Sect. 6. The Senators and Representatives shall receive a compensation for their services, to be ascertained by law, and paid out of the treasury of the United States. They shall in all cases, except treason, felony and breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest during their attendance at the session of their respective Houses, and in going to and returning from the same; and for any speech or debate in either House, they shall not be questioned in any other place.

No Senator or Representative shall, during the time for which he was elected, be appointed to any civil office under the authority of the United States, which shall have been created or the emoluments whereof shall have been increased during such time; and no person holding any office under the United States, shall be a member of either House during his continuance in office.

Sect. 7. All bills for raising revenue shall originate in the House of Representatives; but the Senate may propose or concur with amendments as on other bills.

2. Every bill which shall have passed the House of Representatives and the Senate, shall, before it becomes a law, be presented to the President of the United States: If he approve he shall sign it, but if not he shall return it, with his objections, to that House in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the objections at large on their journal, and proceed to reconsider it. If after such reconsideration, two thirds of that House shall agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent, together with the objections, to the other House, by which it shall likewise be reconsidered, and if approved by two thirds of that House, it shall become a law. But in all such cases the votes of both Houses shall be determined by yeas and nays; and the names of the persons voting for and against the bill, shall be entered on the journal of each House respectively. If any bill shall not be returned by the President within ten days (Sunday excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the same shall be a law, in like manner as if he had signed it, unless the Congress by their adjournment prevent its return, in which case it shall not be a law.

Every order, resolution, or vote to which the concurrence of the Senate and House of Representatives may be necessary (except on a question of adjournment) shall be presented to the President of the United States; and before the same shall take effect, shall be approved by him, or being disapproved by him, shall be repassed by two thirds of the senate and house of representatives, according to the rules and limitations prescribed in the case of a bill.

Sect. 8. The Congress shall have power -

To lay and collect taxes, duties, imposts and excises, to pay the debts and provide for the common defence and general welfare of the United States; but all duties, imposts and excises, shall be uniform throughout the United States;

To borrow money on the credit of the United States;

To regulate commerce with foreign nations, and among the several states, and with the Indian tribes;

To establish an uniform rule of naturalization, and uniform laws on the subject of bankruptcies throughout the United States;

To coin money, regulate the value thereof, and of foreign coin, and fix the standard of weights and measures;

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

To provide for the punishment of counterfeiting the securities and current coin of the United States;

To establish post offices and post roads;

To promote the progress of science and useful arts by securing for limited times to authors and inventors the exclusive right to their respective writings and discoveries;

To constitute tribunals inferior to the supreme court;

To define and punish piracies and felonies committed on the high seas, and offenses against the law of nations;

To declare war, grant letters of marque and reprisal, and make rules concerning captures on land and water;

To raise and support armies, but no appropriation of money to that use shall be for a longer term than two years;

To provide and maintain a navy;

To make rules for the government and regulation of the land and naval forces;

To provide for calling forth the militia to execute the laws of the Union, suppress insurrections and repel invasions;

To provide for organizing, arming, and disciplining, the militia, and for governing such part of them as may be employed in the service of the United States, reserving to the states respectively, the appointment of the officers, and the authority of training the militia according to the discipline prescribed by Congress;

To exercise exclusive legislation in all cases whatsoever, over such district (not exceeding ten miles square) as may by cession of particular states, and the acceptance of Congress, become the seat of the government of the United States, and to exercise like authority over all places purchased by the consent of the legislature of the state in which the same shall be, for the erection of forts, magazines, arsenals, dock yards, and other needful buildings; And

To make all laws which shall be necessary and proper for carrying into execution the foregoing powers, and all other Powers vested by the Constitution in the government of the United States, or in any department or officer thereof.

Sect. 9. The migration or importation of such persons as any of the States now existing shall think proper to admit, shall not be prohibited by the Congress prior to the year one thousand eight hundred and eight; but a tax or duty may be imposed on such importation, not exceeding ten dollars for each person.

The privilege of the writ of habeas corpus shall not be suspended, unless when in cases of rebellion or invasion the public safety require it.

No bill of attainder or ex post facto law shall be passed.

No capitation, or other direct, tax shall be laid, unless in proportion to the census or enumeration herein before directed to be taken.

No tax or duty shall be laid on articles exported from any state. No preference shall be given by any regulation of commerce or revenue to the ports of one state over those of another: nor shall vessels bound to, or from, one state, be obliged to enter, clear, or pay duties in another.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

No money shall be drawn from the treasury, but in consequence of appropriations made by law; and a regular statement and account of the receipts and expenditures of all public money shall be published from time to time.

No title of nobility shall be granted by the United States: and no person holding any office of profit or trust under them, shall, without the consent of the Congress, accept of any present, emolument, office, or title of any kind whatever, from any king, prince, or foreign state.

Sect. 10. No state shall enter into any treaty, alliance, or confederation; grant letters of marque and reprisal; coin money; emit bills of credit; make any thing but gold and silver coin a tender in payment of debts; pass any bill of attainder, ex post facto law, or law impairing the obligation of contracts, or grant any title of nobility.

No state shall, without the consent of the Congress, lay any imposts or duties on imports or exports, except what may be absolutely necessary for executing its inspection laws: and the net produce of all duties and imposts, laid by any state on imports or exports, shall be for the use of the treasury of the United States; all such laws shall be subject to the revision and control of the Congress.

No state shall, without the consent of Congress, lay any duty of tonnage, keep troops, or ships of war in time of peace, enter into any agreement or compact with another state, or with a foreign power, or engage in war, unless actually invaded, or in such imminent danger as will not admit of delay.

ARTICLE II.

Sect. 1. The executive power shall be vested in a President of the United States of America. He shall hold his office during the term of four years, and, together with the Vice-President, chosen for the same term, be elected as follows:

Each state shall appoint, in such manner as the legislature thereof may direct, a number of electors, equal to the whole number of Senators and Representatives to which the state may be entitled in the Congress: but no Senator or Representative, or person holding an office of trust or profit under the United States, shall be appointed an elector.

The electors shall meet in their respective states, and vote by ballot for two persons, of whom one at least shall not be an inhabitant of the same state with themselves. And they shall make a list of all the persons voted for, and of the number of votes for each; which list they shall sign and certify, and transmit, sealed to the seat of the government of the United States, directed to the President of the Senate. The President of the Senate shall, in the presence of the Senate and House of Representatives, open all the certificates, and the votes shall then be counted. The person having the greatest number of votes shall be the President, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed; and if there be more than one who have such majority, and have an equal number of votes, then the House of Representatives shall immediately chuse by ballot one of them for President; and if no person have a majority, then from the five highest on the list the said House shall in like manner choose the President. But in choosing the President, the Votes shall be taken by states, the representation from each state having one vote; a quorum for this purpose shall consist of a member or members from two thirds of the states, and a majority of all the states shall be necessary to a choice. In every

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

case, after the choice of the President, the person having the greatest number of votes of the electors shall be the Vice-President. But if there should remain two or more who have equal votes, the Senate shall choose from them by ballot the Vice-President.

The congress may determine the time of the chusing the electors, and the day on which they shall give their votes; which Day shall be the same through the United States.

No person except a natural born citizen, or a citizen of the United States, at the time of the adoption of this Constitution, shall be eligible to the office of President; neither shall any person be eligible to that office who shall not have attained to the age of thirty five years, and been fourteen Years a resident within the United States.

In case of the removal of the President from office, or his death, resignation, or inability to discharge the powers and duties of the said office, the same shall devolve on the Vice-President; and the Congress may by law provide for the case of removal, death, resignation or inability, both of the President and Vice-President, declaring what officer shall then act as President, and such officer shall act accordingly, until the disability be removed, or a President be elected.

The President shall, at stated times, receive for his services, a compensation, which shall neither be increased nor diminished during the period for which he shall have been elected; and he shall not receive within that period any other emolument from the United States, or any of them.

Before he enter on the execution of his office, he shall take the following oath or affirmation:

“I do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully execute the office of President of the United States; and will, to the best of my ability, preserve, protect and defend the Constitution of the United States.”

Sect. 2. The President shall be commander in chief of the army and navy of the United States, and of the militia of the several states, when called into the actual service of the United States; he may require the opinion, in writing of the principal officer in each of the executive departments, upon any subject relating to the duties of their respective offices, and he shall have power to grant reprieves and pardons for offences against the United States, except in cases of impeachment.

He shall have power, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, to make treaties, provided two thirds of the Senators present concur; and he shall nominate, and by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, shall appoint ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls, judges of the supreme court, and all other officers of the United States, whose appointments are not herein otherwise provided for, and which shall be established by law: but the Congress may by law vest the appointment of such inferior officers, as they think proper, in the President alone, in the courts of law, or in the heads of departments.

The President shall have power to fill up all vacancies that may happen during the recess of the Senate, by granting commissions which shall expire at the end of their next session.

Sect. 3. He shall from time to time give to the Congress Information of the state of the Union, and recommend to their consideration such measures as he shall judge neces-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

sary and expedient; He may on extraordinary occasions, convene both Houses, or either of them; and in case of disagreement between them, with respect to the time of adjournment, he may adjourn them to such time as he shall think proper: He shall receive ambassadors and other public ministers: He shall take care that the laws be faithfully executed, and shall commission all the officers of the United States.

Sect. 4. The President, Vice-President, and all civil officers of the United States, shall be removed from office on impeachment for, and conviction of, treason, bribery, or other high crimes and misdemeanors.

ARTICLE III.

Sect. 1. The judicial power of the United States, shall be vested in one supreme court, and in such inferior courts as the Congress may from time to time ordain and establish. The judges, both of the supreme and inferior courts, shall hold their offices during good behavior; and shall, at stated times, receive for their services, a compensation, which shall not be diminished during their continuance in office.

Sect. 2. The judicial power shall extend to all cases, in law and equity, arising under this Constitution, the laws of the United States, and treaties made, or which shall be made, under their authority; to all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers, and consuls; to all cases of admiralty and maritime jurisdiction; to controversies to which the United States shall be a party; to controversies between two or more states; between a state and citizens of another state; between citizens of different states; between citizens of the same state claiming lands under grants of different states; and between a state, or the citizens thereof, and foreign states, citizens, or subjects.

In all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls, and those in which a state shall be party, the supreme court shall have original jurisdiction. In all the other cases before mentioned, the supreme court shall have appellate jurisdiction, both as to law and fact, with such exceptions, and under such regulations as the Congress shall make.

The trial of all crimes, except in cases of impeachment, shall be by jury; and such trial shall be held in the state where the said crimes shall have been committed; but when not committed within any state, the trial shall be at such place or places as the Congress may by law have directed.

Sect. 3. Treason against the United States, shall consist only in levying war against them, or in adhering to their enemies, giving them aid and comfort. No person shall be convicted of treason unless on the testimony of two witnesses to the same overt act, or on confession in open court.

The congress shall have power to declare the punishment of treason; but no attainder of treason shall work corruption of blood, or forfeiture except during the life of the person attained.

ARTICLE IV.

Sect. 1. Full faith and credit shall be given in each state to the public acts, records, and judicial proceedings of every other state. And the congress may by general laws prescribe the manner in which such acts, records, and proceedings shall be proved, and the effect thereof.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Sect. 2. The citizens of each state shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of citizens in the several states.

A person charged in any state with treason, felony, or other crime, who shall flee from justice, and be found in another state, shall, on demand of the executive authority of the state from which he fled, be delivered up, to be removed to the state having jurisdiction of the crime.

No person held to service or labor in one state, under the laws thereof, escaping into another, shall, in consequence of any law or regulation therein, be discharged from such service or labour, but shall be delivered up on claim of the party to whom such service or labor may be due.

Sect. 3. New states may be admitted by the Congress into this Union; but no new state shall be formed or erected within the jurisdiction of any other state; nor any state be formed by the junction of two or more states, or parts of states, without the consent of the legislatures of the states concerned as well as of the Congress.

The Congress shall have power to dispose of and make all needful rules and regulations respecting the territory or other property belonging to the United States; and nothing in this Constitution shall be so construed as to prejudice any claims of the United States, or of any particular state.

Sect. 4. The United States shall guarantee to every state in this Union a republican form of government, and shall protect each of them against invasion; and on application of the Legislature, or of the executive (when the legislature cannot be convened) against domestic violence.

ARTICLE V.

The Congress, whenever two thirds of both Houses shall deem it necessary, shall propose amendments to this Constitution, or, on the application of the legislatures of two thirds of the several states, shall call a convention for proposing amendments, which, in either case, shall be valid, to all intents and Purposes, as part of this Constitution, when ratified by the legislatures of three fourths of the several states, or by conventions in three fourths thereof, as the one or the other mode of ratification may be proposed by the Congress; provided that no amendment which may be made prior to the year one thousand eight hundred and eight shall in any manner affect the first and fourth clauses in the ninth section of the first Article; and that no state, without its consent, shall be deprived of its equal suffrage in the Senate.

ARTICLE VI.

All debts contracted and engagements entered into, before the adoption of this Constitution, shall be as valid against the United States under this Constitution, as under the Confederation.

This Constitution, and the laws of the United States which shall be made in pursuance thereof; and all treaties made, or which shall be made, under the authority of the United States, shall be the supreme law of the land; and the judges in every state shall be bound thereby, any thing in the Constitution or laws of any state to the contrary notwithstanding.

The Senators and Representatives before mentioned, and the members of the sev-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

eral state legislatures, and all executive and judicial officers, both of the United States and of the several states, shall be bound by oath or affirmation, to support this Constitution; but no religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under the United States.

ARTICLE VII.

The ratification of the conventions of nine states, shall be sufficient for the establishment of this Constitution between the states so ratifying the same.

Done in convention, by the unanimous consent of the States present, the seventeenth day of september, in the year of our lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty seven, and of the independence of the United States of America the twelfth in Witness whereof, we have hereunto subscribed our names.

Attest Go. WASHINGTON, PRESIDT

And Deputy from Virginia

NEXT—Part Three: What Is The Truth?

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART III

WHAT IS THE TRUTH, ANYWAY?

This is a paper I wrote many years ago, and it makes up the vast majority of Part III for the simple reason that I do not want you to accept what I say blindly. No matter what you may think, I do not have a clear and concise picture of what is going on. Only those at the root of our problems understand everything, and it is very necessary for each of us to verify everything we are told, to our own satisfaction.

There is another aspect of verification, as well. When you begin to verify and study, you are going to see things no one else has. The reason that so much information is now coming to light is that there are so many of us looking, instead of the dozen or so men who were doing so in each previous generation.

But then, we have an advantage the people of any other age never had; it's called electronic communication. Not only can I look at much more information from many different sources, but I and others, including you, can share that information with so many more interested men and women than ever before.

Please keep this in mind, as you read what I supply: you have a moral obligation to begin your own threads of discovery. With this in mind, read on...

The Doctrine of Reality

Or, Is it really a Lie, Daddy?

truth (trootth) 1. The state or character of being true in relation to being, knowledge, or speech. 2. Conformity to fact or reality. In other words, truth matches reality.

I never intended to write this. Why would it be necessary? People understand truth! But they don't actually understand the truth, and they generally have even less of an understanding about what a lie really is.

What is a lie? Lies are like mosquitoes. No matter how you turn or where you go, lies will always find you. They come at you from above, from the rear, from each side and yes, even from the front where you can see them coming. Why? Because lies only exist to serve someone else's purpose. Lies have no other reason to exist except to serve someone else's purpose! That is why they tell lies—to serve their own purposes! When you are listening to someone tell you something which serves their own purpose, you can know that you are listening to a lie (advertising comes to mind). To serve that other person's purpose, he must throw those lies at you in a constant stream in order to fool you into accepting each lie. One of your first clues that something is a lie is when the facts

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

about that something are endlessly repeated until you are literally tired of hearing about them—balancing the federal budget comes to mind.

The truth, on the other hand, is like a rare gem. You must make an effort to uncover and savor its beauty. Since the truth seldom serves annoyance purpose, it is only occasionally out in plain sight but must be mined and worked for by you. Like a diamond, the truth is indestructible and will always be there, waiting to be found.

And like a diamond, Truth is hard—very hard! How hard is it? Truth is the hardest substance in the Universe! Let me make sure you understand what I am saying—Truth is the hardest subject in the universe, because not even God can change the Truth! Why—because of Gods Nature, which is Perfection, and because God Ordained the Truth. All truth in the Universe was Ordained by God. There is no exception to this statement. ALL Truth in the Universe was Ordained by The True God. And because He Ordained the Truth, He cannot change the Truth, for to do so would deny His being the True God. It would mean that He was acting in His own interest, rather than as God. An imperfect being can not exist forever because an imperfect being will self-destruct, no matter how long, or how short a time that takes (for reference, see Man). And like God, the Truth is indestructible and visible, if you look.

The truth always becomes visible to those who are willing to look because the truth is stronger than any lie and will always win in any conflict against a lie. That is if you are willing to look, because the truth has another tendency—the truth often makes people uncomfortable and will sometimes shake them from their comfort zone—their shell—if you will. Why? Because the Truth is the hardest substance in the Universe! When you confront the Truth, you have only two options:

1. You may deny the Truth and turn from it, or
2. You must change! Because you can not change the Truth, you must change! If God can not change the Truth, then neither can you, I assure you.

When you have uncovered the truth, you must work to polish and to understand it. Then, and only then, can you admire its beauty, its sparkle and its simplicity as it stands above all else like a beacon of light. Yes, I did say its simplicity. The truth is never complicated. Only lies are complicated. When things are made complicated, they always are done in this manner in order to hide a lie. Have you ever read the IRS Title 26 Income Tax Code? The tax code which is deliberately made so complicated that it may be safely hidden from you that this system is designed to transfer all money and wealth upwards, to what is known as the Elite—the super-rich—the money kings and the Royalty.

The truth is ageless, and the truth is indestructible. What is true today was true yesterday and will be true tomorrow, throughout the Universe. The truth never changes; only a lie is capable of being transformed. Just as in the truth, reality is a constant, which never changes. Reality can only be that which actually exists around you—not someone else's lies about your environment, your taxes, or your health care. This is how you judge what is the truth and what is a lie. Does it conform to reality?

Has the government ever taken over any program and effectively made it work better and save money? Then, what members of the government are telling you about improving health care and cutting costs does not match reality. Could it be that they are

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

deliberately lying to you? And if they are deliberately lying to you, in whose interest are they telling those lies?

Who is going to benefit from the government's control of the health care system? (Always follow the money.) The super-rich Elite who will receive all of the money flowing from the government to the various insurance schemes and, of course, to the legal drug companies they already control. One important point that experience with our government shows us to be true is that the average American citizen will not benefit from the government seizing control of health care. The average American citizen will, however, pay a tremendous additional cost for the Elite's control of the health care system, both in money spent and, even more importantly, in lack of care or much poorer care for the common man.

When you begin to feel uncomfortable about what you are hearing or reading, it is generally because you subconsciously realize that it doesn't match reality. You know, subconsciously, that you are being misled—being misled is never an accident. Even if the person misleading you sincerely believes what he or she is saying, you can rest assured that there is always someone behind that person who knows exactly what reality really is! There is always a benefit to be gained by someone every time that reality is twisted. That is why lies are told!

One of the real problems with getting someone to look at the truth and open up his mind is the tremendous investment he has in his beliefs. The words I believe are, to me, the two most disgusting words, when used together, in the English language. Just think how much better it is to be able to say I know.

What is a belief? It is something you have been told by someone else. Sound familiar? But in order to judge your beliefs, you have to admit first that you may have believed someone else's lies. That is very difficult to do, particularly if you have carried some of those beliefs around like lead weights for twenty, thirty or forty years. You have a tremendous investment in those beliefs. Having an open mind with a willingness to look at all facts is difficult, but there is no other way to learn the truth. If you want a real lesson in a closed mind and in a refusal to accept reality, sit down sometime with a collection of facts about Communism's origins with a dedicated liberal or with a dyed-in-the-wool socialist. Now that is a real lesson in what a belief actually is and it will go further in opening your own mind than anything I could ever say.

I have been led to write this by the talks and seminars I conduct concerning the Federal Reserve. People are reluctant to believe that the government and the media have deliberately lied to them and that they have been foolish enough to be tricked. Why are they reluctant to believe this? The truth serves no one's purpose! The truth is simply the truth! Just because you are reluctant to believe someone would lie to you does not mean that he will not, if he can gain an advantage by doing so. He is also not going to stand there and admit to you that he is lying. That would defeat his purpose.

This also means that it is up to you to judge the reality of what anyone else is telling you. That is how you judge the truth. Does what I am being told match the reality of what I see, hear, and observe going on around me? If, as in many cases, something just does not feel right, then the chances are that you are being lied to for the gain of someone else. Remember, lies are told for a purpose! Very few people go around promoting lies

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

for no good reason.

This is how you use the Doctrine of Reality in order judge truth. Does what you are being told match the reality you observe around you? If not, start asking why not!

I want you to notice something in what I have just written. I have talked about people lying or about someone's gain. Nowhere have I mentioned the government lying, because a government can not lie just as a government can not gain. Only people lie; and only people can gain just as only people can pay taxes (corporations do not pay taxes; that is a lie to mislead you. Corporations can only have "expenses," of which taxes are just another expense which is passed on in the form of higher prices to people).

This means that the people in a government are the ones who tell lies. When you identify a lie being told by a government, you must identify which people in that government are responsible for that lie. After you do that, it is important for you to identify exactly who benefits from that lie. After you have done those two things, you have arrived at the source of the lie. If you do not know who is lying to you and who is benefiting from that lie, it is very difficult to combat the lie or even to understand why it is being told. If you do not understand why a lie is being told, you will have trouble believing the truth because the truth will fly in the face of everything else you are hearing.

It is extremely important to understand something here. The truth stands alone. Truth never needs reinforcing, endless repeating, or justification by a law. Whenever you see a government enact a law in order to bring out the truth, you can be assured that you are witnessing a lie. One of the prime examples of this would be the laws in Canada, Australia and Europe, which make it a crime for anyone to question the facts about the so-called holocaust. If many of the holocaust facts were not fabrications to begin with, no law would be necessary in order to stop people from questioning them.

This should also make you wonder about just who is actually in charge of those governments and what those people know about the reality of the holocaust. You might ask yourself what they have gained by the lie they have promoted for fifty years (Author's note: If you doubt what I have just written, you need to do some of your own research. I suggest you start with Wilhelm Staeglich's outstanding book, *Auschwitz: A Judge Looks at the Evidence*, ISBN No. 0-939484-22-1. The second investigation you need to make is concerning who actually paid for Hitler's rise to power in Germany. A hint: who controls the sources of money in Europe and in America?)

Who controls our media? George Washington, writing to Edmund Pendleton in 1795, spoke on the effects of propaganda:

"It is well known that when one side only of a story is heard and often repeated, the human mind becomes impressed with it insensibly."

Bertrand Russell, philosopher, educator and self-styled atheist wrote this:

"I think the subject which will be of most importance politically is Mass Psychology. Its importance has been enormously increased by the growth of modern methods of propaganda...Although this science will be diligently studied, it will be rigidly confined to the governing class (Elite). The populace will not be allowed to know how its convictions were generated."

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Bertrand Russell was privy to information on means of propaganda that George Washington could never have dreamed of, so he was—understandably enough—a bit more insightful than Washington could possibly have been. Russell realized that the common people could never be permitted to know the sources from which their brainwashing came. He foresaw the power of the modern media, and he was able to see who in America would usurp and hold a stranglehold on the power of the media for their own benefit. Now tell me, do you still feel like sitting down to enjoy a few hours of the rich man's harmless TV?

“Truth will prevail. Truth will ultimately prevail where there [are] pains taken to bring it to light.” (Author's note: George Washington wrote this to Charles Mynn Thurston in 1794).

Why you believe what you believe

Experts on the human mind say that humans are convinced to believe things for four principal reasons:

1. You tend to believe most strongly that which you hear first.
2. If you change, it will most likely be to that which you hear repeated many times.
3. You next tend to believe that which you want to believe or that which fits your already conceived ideas or notions.
4. Lastly, humans are least likely to believe that which is logical and makes sense, especially if it contradicts what they hear most!

Interesting, isn't it? Since the truth serves no one's purpose and is seldom repeated, most people are left believing only that which serves someone's purpose. By definition, that means they are left believing a lie. Unless you understand this and guard against it, you will be endlessly confused for most of your life.

This is the end of what I wrote many years ago. But I have a few words to add to it, strictly for the purpose of those reading these threads.

Why is this paper necessary for you at this time?

For those of you who are reading the real facts about United States citizenship and the Constitution for the first time, I understand the turmoil you are going through. I warn you, it will get worse. I know. I have already gone through it. I have done the soul searching, the denial, the turning away, everything, in fact, that you will be, and are, facing. For the same exact reasons.

I had faith in the system—faith, without understanding—without understanding exactly what any system is, and without knowledge of the real facts. I failed, just as so many of you have failed, to understand that faith is a religious term... And it took me a long time to accept that. I hope, for the majority of you, by doing this in an entirely different way, to short circuit the time required for understanding and acceptance. It will not work for everyone; I'm sorry about that, but perhaps for the majority, it will be easier and better.

For those of you reading Part III, let me tell you that you have already accomplished much. Many can not handle Parts I & II, and never reach this point. Sometimes it takes many weeks before they can ask for Part III. There is nothing I can do about that. But... I warn you now, if you continue these threads, they will alter your life. I know! And, in many ways, these three parts are just an introduction to the real information to come.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Believe that, please, for all of our sakes.

The most important part to come out of this is the simplest one; things that are endlessly repeated are lies, or they would not need to be endlessly repeated! Vote, to effect change, comes instantly to mind.

If voting effected change, it would be illegal to vote.

I think of the many men I have talked to over the years. One in particular comes to mind. He had worked—worked very hard—for a long period of time to make things change in Washington, DC. Then, he had been actively engaged in getting out the Republican vote in his district for over thirty years. Things keep getting worse, but he keeps the faith, and keeps working. Nothing I ever said made a difference to him. As far as I know, he is still working to get out the vote so we can change things.

He never caught on that Washington, DC, is what Washington, DC, is and was intended to be—now—and in 1792. Washington, DC, has never changed, nor can it. Washington, DC, is just now coming into focus; it is not changing. It is only our perception of it that is changing as the inevitable corruption of that type of system becomes endemic. History proves, beyond any doubt, that any democracy, which defines Washington, DC, to a T, can never exist for any extended period of time. To exist for any period of time, there must be the rule of law. That means that the foundation of the law can never change. For Washington, DC, that is impossible. So to work to change that system is not only self-defeating, it is very dangerous as well.

Why? Because it is only through your interacting with them that they are legitimized. They require your participation for their existence. And as the voting public continues to shrink, as more and more people wake up to the FACT that their vote means nothing (please find and read the book VOTESCAM), the cries for VOTE FOR A CHANGE will become ever more strident, and there will be more and more laws passed to make it easier for anyone—anyone at all—to vote. They care not one whit who you vote for; they just need you to vote!!! They need you to participate, to legitimize their scam—their fraud.

In many ways, Parts I & II are a weeding out process. To get to this point, you must be different from most people. Many never understand that to change America, they must change! They want to keep doing the same things, and never realize that to do so is to continue to get the same result. They prefer to rant and rave about others and never turn the scope on themselves. Perhaps they are afraid to find out that the problem is them, not someone else.

I want to ask something of you. Before you ask for Part IV, read this Part III at least twice, and then spend a day thinking about it. I know this paper seems really simple, but it isn't. Before I started to study the Bible, I wrote this paper. A man I consider to be a man of The One True God read it and gave me one of the greatest compliments I have ever received. He said that he had never seen anyone who had arrived at this much truth outside of the Bible before. He still uses this paper in his ministry.

And I know some of you are going to object to the use of the word Bible, in any context whatever, but bear with me, please. Especially since you have reached this point. Perhaps there is more to this story than you think!

The next part you will receive, Part IV, has an immense amount of information in it. It

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

is not necessary for you to study all of it, because it is simply there to show you a part of what the men I work with and myself have uncovered, and to give you a different perception of the federal government. For some of you, the perception may not be different, but I assure you, very few have an actual picture of the true depth of depravity and corruption in Washington, DC. There are a lot of sources listed in Part IV. Use what you will.

Part V begins with a quote that I want you to think of within the context of these last few paragraphs and, ultimately, this whole paper. But, please, be sure you have read this paper at least twice before you go on to Part IV, not to mention Part V.

In ending this part, let me leave you with a parting thought: Can you give me one Law of The One True God which man can violate with impunity? I have asked this question before, and I have never received a serious answer. Perhaps you'll be the first with an intelligent, meaningful answer. Understanding the Law as I do, I doubt it, but...

You see, under the Declaration of Independence, the Law in America is the Bible. Perhaps this explains to many of you why there has been such a concentration on teaching everyone in the so-called 'churches' that His Law has been set aside. Perhaps this explains, in some small way why murderers and rapists are released from their prisons but people who reject the system stay locked up for many years. Perhaps.

And, I stand corrected. I have received a very intelligent, well thought out answer to my question above on God's Law. This was submitted by Ken on July 3, 1999. I have waited many years for such an answer, and it was worth the wait!

At the end of Part III you asked the question, "Can you give me one law of the one true God which man can violate with impunity?"

My answer. The law of freedom of will. God allows me to do whatever I want. I have that freedom. However, if I break that law and yield to God's will, and do what God would have me to do, that I can do with impunity.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART IV UNDERSTANDING

For many of you, understanding me will be necessary for you to begin to accept the information that we are discussing. I understand this, because not so many years ago, I was in the same position you are in now, with nothing but questions as I looked around me at the unbelievable and the unexplainable. At that time, I met a man who began my education. I had trouble accepting much of what he said, and found myself—finally—giving him the attention that his message deserved—almost as a denial of the information. Later, as I began to understand more, I did my own research and started to study on my own. I finally understood what he told me. He was not the point. He was simply a messenger.

And I am the same thing—just a messenger. This information is not mine; it belongs to all of the people of America—my country—my people—be they red, blue, green, black, white or polka dotted—my people.

The part about ‘my people’ is very important, because one of the lessons which has been brought home most forcefully to me is the one about freedom. Quite simply, I can not be free unless you are free. Without freedom for everyone, any freedom is an illusion. And I have to be careful here, because this is not intended to be a dissertation about any one subject, and I can get on my lecture podium very easily!

I hope you understand that most of what has happened to America and to my people is because of the introduction of public education to America. The originator of public education was a man named Bismarck (remember the German battleship Bismarck) of Prussia. He was rather eloquent when he explained to purpose of public education, via the government. Give me your children to educate and I will turn them into soldiers.

I think a short look at the history of America since the introduction of public education will prove Bismarck’s point rather well—not to mention trying to talk to a former or current serviceman about the Constitution!

Why does America need carrier battle groups to defend our shores? Of course, we don’t, but the profit in building such tools of destruction is immense. And, I must admit, having the battle groups available in the Middle East and Asia to protect the source of supply of drugs from the ignorant natives who are restless because of the rape of their women, the theft of their land and the impressment of their children to tend the drug

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

fields is necessary, for the benefit of the elite.

Why is the military overburdened with fancy weapons, but the troops underpaid and unable to operate most of their equipment due to a lack of training and spare parts? Because there is little profit to the multi-national corporations in spare parts, and none in pay for the troops.

But then, it is the UNITED STATES army, air force and navy. It has nothing to do with defending America... If my people do not figure this out in the near future, they will learn what the militia is all about, because the fighting will be on their own doorstep, not in the Middle East, Southeast Asia or Europe. I think that most people now realize that the gun control issue has nothing to do with crime, and is devoted to disarming America for the totalitarian NWO. No nation in the world would dare attempt an invasion of America. Our destruction must come from within, hence the United States (government)—but perhaps I am a little ahead of myself here.

But perhaps one more point about the military,—just for more understanding. How many of you know what Kuwait is? It is a British Protectorate. Kuwait was carved off Iraq about 100 years ago by British force of arms for the purpose of stealing the natural resources (oil) of the Iraqi people and giving those natural resources to the three sisters; Royal Dutch Shell, British Petroleum and I forget the third. The British then imported a landless sheik and used him as a puppet to form a new government subject to their control. They pay a royalty to him and everyone is happy—except, of course, the Iraqi people, but they are just ignorant tribesmen, so who cares. If you want to really understand America and the United States military, I suggest you read the book *Inevitable Revolutions*, about the exploitation of Central America by the multi-national corporations. Perhaps for the first time you will begin to see the term Ugly American in a new light, and begin to understand why America and Americans are so hated around the world.

To finish this part on the military, it is necessary to bring in the United Nations and its new military, the United States army. The men doing the research on this have discovered that the UN is the present day existence of that corporation once known as the British East Indies Company. If you wish to learn more, study the use of the British army in creating the wealth of the financial district of London, 'the City'.

Drugs are an interesting subject. How many people know that Britain has controlled the illegal drug trade for over 280 years? The Queen is the richest woman in the world, and she did not get that way taxing the English people (by the way—the BRITISH {a small minority} control the English; a study of English history will show you the difference).

Two books I recommend are *Dope, Inc.* and *Red Cocaine, The Drugging of America*. Both can be ordered from amazon.com, and they will give you a completely different look at the world of drugs than you will have any other way. I would also recommend that you visit <www.copvicia.com> and find out part of the real story in America. Be careful when you read *Red Cocaine*, because the man who wrote it is a professor, and he really has no clue except as pertains to the drug 'problem'.

I realize that as you begin assimilating this information, you will change. It is impossible not to. It is also very difficult to change. To begin to change you must first accept that most (nearly all) of what you are told is a lie. Read the following carefully, then judge

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

for yourself.

The taped admission of Navy vessels in the area cited below is now available here: <http://members.aol.com/fl800/ships.rm>

You'll need the RealPlayer to hear it, which is free here: <http://www.real.com/products/player/downloadrealplayer.html>

In addition to over 100 eyewitness accounts of a rising rocket shooting down the plane, there are several eyewitness accounts of Navy ships close to shore; here are two: <http://members.aol.com/fl800/perry.html> Others witness accounts are cited below:

FBI AGENT ADMITS TWA 800 COVER-UP

In a tape-recorded debate between Reed Irvine and James Kallstrom, who headed the FBI's TWA 800 crash investigation, Kallstrom is reported to admit that three ships tracked on radar near the crash "were Navy ships on classified maneuvers." [1]

The ships in question were within 3 to 6 miles of the crash, in the very same area that triangulated witness accounts indicate to be the launch site of the rocket that witnesses saw shoot down TWA 800. [2] The official story had been that the closest Navy ship, the USS Normandy, was 185 miles away.

Kallstrom was recorded by Reed Irvine of Accuracy In Media [3] on September 14, 1998 during a debate between the two over the phone. The tape recording was first released during a special meeting of the organization Judicial Watch. [4] It was first made known to the public on September 28, with the publication of a letter [5] from private investigator Commander William Donaldson (USN ret) to Louis Freeh, head of the FBI, wherein Commander Donaldson states:

"I...have in my possession a taped conversation held on 14 September 1998 between Deputy Director Kalstrom (Retired) and Mr. Reed Irvine, Chairman of Accuracy in Media. That conversation puts Deputy Director Kalstrom on record with two startling new facts. He alleges: 1. The 30-knot surface contact was a helicopter. 2. Three of the surface radar contacts were U.S. Navy vessels conducting classified operations." [6]

Supporting Kallstrom's admission is the fact that many witnesses reported seeing Navy ships in the area. The Village Voice reported [7] that Dean Steward and Susan Smith saw "a naval warship about three miles offshore" a few hours before the crash. Steward, an eight-year Navy vet, said the ship was an Aegis Ticonderoga-class cruiser. Another witness, Barbara Pacholk, reports that she saw a surfaced submarine and two Navy ships just before the crash.

In addition, The Winds reports [1] that Commander Donaldson has "obtained testimony from several witnesses, one of whom is an ex-Navy Bombardier/navigator... who observed an Aegis Cruiser to the west of the air disaster." The Winds goes on to note that "Because of the highly trained nature of [the witness], Donaldson, in his words, considers the identification of the Aegis Cruiser to be 'positive, with 100% credibility.'"

THE MYSTERIOUS RADAR-TRACKED "BOATS"

The issue of ships in the area first arose after the NTSB released a preliminary report last year, which included radar plots of the crash scene with several tracks said to be unidentified "boats." [8]

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Prior to the recent admission, the FBI refused to identify these radar tracks. When Congressman James Traficant asked the FBI to identify the radar-tracked craft now admitted to be Navy ships, the FBI responded by citing the Privacy Act (US Code 5:552a). [9] Such a response is in itself an admission of a cover-up. Commander Donaldson countered by saying that the Navy is not covered by the Privacy Act.[6]

Even without the recent admission of Navy ships in the area, such could be logically deduced from the available evidence: (a) eyewitness accounts of Navy vessels and activity (missile launchings), (b) radar tracks of large “boats,” and (c) the citing by the FBI of the Privacy Act in order to conceal from the public the identities of those radar-tracked ships.

A TRANSPARENT COVER-UP

After first claiming that no Navy assets were in the area except a P-3 Orion aircraft, the Navy then admitted that they had three submarines in the area.[10] After first claiming that there were no military maneuvers in the area that night [11], months later the Navy admitted that there were. [10] In addition, TWA 800 researcher Tom Shoemaker proved that there was a large-scale wargame in the area during July 17, 1996 [12], and private investigator James Sanders learned through his inside contacts that the Navy was testing advanced anti-missile technologies that evening. [13]

Now, after claims that the closest Navy ship was 185 miles away, comes the admission that Navy ships were in fact within 3 to 6 miles of the TWA 800 crash, in the very area from which witnesses saw a missile rise.

[1] THE WINDS: TWA Flight 800 Analysts Say FBI Is Intentionally Obstructing Justice. October 6, 1998.

And I know that we all understand that the government does lie. Well, actually, that is not true. A government is not capable of lying, because a government has no actual, physical existence. The people in government, in whose interest it is to lie, do the lying. We keep forgetting that. And even understanding this, it is still necessary to belabor the point. Why? Ask yourself why you have never seen the first information that I supplied to you and you will begin to see. All together too many people accept--blindly—the premise given to them by the same people in government that are responsible for the above cover-up that things are going to change, that the Republicans/Democrats can fix the situation. Just don't worry and don't give up the faith!

When you are done with the above research, then ask yourself what is the true story behind the Oklahoma City bombing? Do you think we will ever know? Not unless a great number of Americans get up off their couches and change things—to change things, you must first change.

If you continue to do the things you have been doing you will continue to get what you have been getting—more taxes, more intrusive laws, more programming—of you and of your children. Just continue to do what you have been doing—reinforce the United States by participating in the politician's games. Vote Republican, for a change...

And when you think about these things, think about the Trade Center bombing in New York City. During that trial, a FBI agent admitted—under oath—that the FBI knew about the bomb, that the FBI had supplied the basic material for the bomb, and the train-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ing necessary to build the bomb. But through a slip-up, they failed to intercept the bomb before it was detonated. I believe that the real story would probably include information about the FBI recruiting the men judged guilty of the bombing as well.

Now, part of what we are going to discuss concerns health. It must. Health is absolutely essential to freedom. Without health, there is no freedom, and that includes there is no monetary freedom without health. And when I spoke before of how I could not be free unless you were free, the following information is a part—a big part—of that equation.

GENE ALTERED FRANKENSTEIN FOOD DELUGE ABOUT TO BE EATEN BY AMERICANS

America's fruited plain will yield another bumper crop this year, but it will be a harvest like no other. The genetic codes of roughly one-quarter of the corn and one-third of the soybeans grown this year have been altered to resist herbicides or produce pesticides. Potato, tomato, and squash crops have also been genetically engineered. The unknown dangers that might lurk inside these Frankenstein foods are enough to scare anyone.

Mothers for Natural Law: Campaign to label transgenic crops Campaign for Food Safety Union of Concerned Scientists

A rapid transformation of our food supply is underway with no public consent or warning about unknown impacts on public health.

In coming weeks, these crops will be refined into vegetable oils, livestock and poultry feed, frozen potato slices, and high-fructose corn syrup. These ingredients will find their way into breakfast cereals, tofu, margarine, milk, hamburgers, french fries, soda, candy, and most other foods sold throughout the United States.

A rapid transformation of our food supply is underway with no public consent or warning about unknown impacts on public health. But you wouldn't know it, because the Food and Drug Administration, the federal agency responsible for safeguarding our food supply, does not believe genetically engineered foods should be labeled as such.

Across the globe, people are becoming concerned about transgenic crops -the products of genetic engineering. The American organic foods community blew a gasket when these crops nearly slipped into their national standards. France, the United Kingdom, Austria, and Italy have banned the planting genetically altered crops, citing possible environmental and health risks. India recently banned imports of so-called "Terminator" seeds, which contain a sterility gene that prevents farmers from planting seed from the first year's harvest.

Multinational corporations that develop and market these agricultural products claim that much of the hysteria is unfounded. But consumer advocates and ordinary citizens are picking up on the concerns of environmentalists and biologists who contend there is plenty of reason to suspect that there could be serious risks involved with splicing genes into foods that humans consume.

CHANGE IN DIET

Transgenic crops represent the most serious change in our diet since humans first

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

domesticated plants some 10,000 years ago. In contrast to traditional crop-breeding, in which genes can only be exchanged between closely related species, these new crops contain genes from a grab-bag of diverse plant and animal species, including viruses, fungi, and bacteria.

These transgenic foods contain genes designed to pump out proteins, enzymes, and all types of foreign substances - including deadly insecticides - that were never before part of the human diet. Pesticide-producing crops, engineered to churn out plant toxins in significantly greater volumes than found in nature, may cause many of the adverse effects on human health and the environment that are associated with the spraying of pesticides. Should the government label genetically altered produce?

The pesticides produced within the plant ripple throughout the farm food chain, disabling not only the intended pest, but other organisms. The pollen of genetically modified crops spreads from farm to farm, unleashing a persistent genetic pollution that can be passed from one generation of plants to the next. Crops engineered for herbicide-resistance pass this trait on to nearby weeds, making them immune to the very herbicide intended to destroy them, leading farmers to use larger doses of toxic herbicides.

THE RIGHT TO KNOW

Two recent public opinion polls conducted by the U.S. Department of Agriculture and by the pharmaceutical and food corporation Novartis show that a majority of Americans want to see labels indicating when a food is genetically modified. Yet biotechnology companies and the FDA continue to argue that labeling genetically engineered foods will just confuse consumers: by indicating difference, the label implies the product is unsafe.

Under current loophole-laden regulatory mechanisms, a corporation can obtain approval for sale of a new transgenic crop simply by presenting the FDA or Environmental Protection Agency, (depending on whether the crop produces pesticides) with brief summaries of safety assessments.

There are no independent assessments done by the FDA or EPA.

Despite the fact that transgenic crops contain pesticides and food additives (which both require labels in the United States) clever and fierce industry lobbying has distorted food safety laws and successfully blocked labeling. Most Americans want genetically modified food to be labeled.

Biotech companies and the FDA argue that labeling will just confuse consumers.

The risks attached to this manipulation of the food chain are complex and poorly understood “ even, admittedly, by the corporations whose responsibility it is to assess them. Thus, it would seem wise to maintain impeccable records of production and consumption of these foods and to acknowledge that we do not understand all of the risks, and that the adverse health and environmental effects may not be detected for years.

Mandatory labeling would allow consumers to make informed choices, and give food retailers valuable information on what the public will and will not buy.

“Where there is secrecy, there is no truth;
where there is no truth, there is no justice;
where there is no justice, there is no freedom.”

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

You see, slaves have no right to know the truth, or to judge what is good for themselves. From some of this information, you can better judge the truth of what the first two papers contained. Judge that truth, but do not trust that judgment. I urge you to confirm everything I say and write—not only for your own good, but for the good of America and of your families. I also urge you to subscribe to ACRES USA, P.O. Box 8800, Metairie, Louisiana [70011]. This is probably the finest newspaper in the states, and it totally concerns food and the growing of it. Without the knowledge from this paper, you will have little chance of protecting yourself and your family from some of the problems coming in the states. Subscriptions are \$24.00/year, sample copies \$3.00 each.

I am going to give you one more piece of information before I wrap this part up. How many of you have a Social Security Number? Why? I don't, and I would never dream of having one (I did at one time, of course). Are you aware that the first Social Security Numbers (they weren't called that then, but were 9 digit identification numbers) were issued in the 1870s—to black slaves registering as citizens of the United States?

And how many of you believe that Social Security is only in the United States? Perhaps you should read the following, and judge for yourself what the truth is about the insolvency of the scheme.

STATUTORY INSTRUMENTS

1997 No. 1778

SOCIAL SECURITY

The Social Security (United States of America) Order 1997

Made 22nd July 1997 Coming into force 1st September 1997

At the Court at Buckingham Palace, the 22nd day of July 1997

Present,

The Queen's Most Excellent Majesty in Council

Whereas at London on the 13th February 1984 an Agreement on social security between the Government of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Northern Ireland and the Government of the United States of America (hereinafter referred to as "the Agreement") and an Administrative Agreement for the implementation of the Agreement (hereinafter referred to as "the Administrative Agreement")[1] were signed on behalf of those Governments and effect was given to the Agreement by the Social Security (United States of America) Order 1984 (hereinafter referred to as "the Principal Order")[2]:

And Whereas at London on 6th June 1996 a Supplementary Agreement between the Government of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Northern Ireland and the Government of the United States of America (which Supplementary Agreement is set out in Schedule 1 to this Order and is hereinafter referred to as "the Supplementary Agreement") amending the Agreement and a Supplementary Administrative Agreement amending the Administrative Agreement (which Supplementary Administrative Agreement is set out in Schedule 2 to this Order and is hereinafter referred to as "the Supplementary Administrative Agreement")[3] were signed on behalf of those Governments.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART V WHAT IS GOING ON? COMMITMENT

“Anyone can get excited and enthusiastic, given a sufficient amount of stimulation or inducement. Excitement will get you going, but it is not enough to keep you going. Excitement, by its very nature, wears off.

Beyond the initial excitement, success requires commitment. Commitment keeps you going long after the novelty has worn off. Excitement begins the process of achievement. Commitment sees it through to completion.

Excitement is a reaction. Commitment is an intentional decision. Success occurs when you're able to transform the energy of your excitement into a solid and lasting commitment. That's not easy. It takes effort. It takes dedication and focus. It demands a level of motivation that goes beyond the thrill of the moment. To be committed, you must find a personally meaningful, driving reason to support your commitment, and then continually remind yourself of that reason.

Excitement is so satisfying and energizing because of the promise it makes. Commitment is what actually delivers on that promise.” -Ralph Marston

Interesting, isn't it—very similar to the notes at the end of Part III. So, let's get excited about an election! We will not accomplish anything, but it will keep our attention for awhile, and it will keep us from looking in other directions for the answers. The unfortunate part for the common man is that the elite understand the above principles of advertising very well. It is only we, those who the moguls practice on, that are unaware of the manipulation being done to us.

Excitement and commitment are like marriage. The excitement is the new woman, the new relationship, the beginning. Commitment is where happiness, contentment, the future and, incidentally, where the family lies. The excitement is wonderful, but accomplishes little, except the beginning. Most never progress past the beginning. In understanding the world around you, the same process takes place. The problem that most can not overcome is getting past the excitement, because just like marriage, once the excitement is gone, the work begins. There can be no commitment without work, and the same holds true for Religion, Marriage, our country, and our friends.

Commitment equals work.

Without work there is no commitment.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Those of you who have read this far understand what I mean. Of those who begin this thread, less than 25% will get this far, and the problem is commitment/work. Not just the work of reading this information, but the work required to think—to look up the sources and to confirm. And I beg of you, confirm. Many would rather have the excitement of posting messages, of interacting, of listening to others, and for many, the radio and the TV interfere.

And those same ones who are addicted to the TV/radio will assure everyone that they watch/listen very little. Yet, if they would keep a chart of one week's worth of time spent, especially in front of the TV, they would be shocked.

I began to understand not so long ago that those who can not hear or see—more than anything else—simply can not commit. It is the excitement of the moment that sweeps them away. It is for this reason that they are so effective as cannon fodder for the schemes of the elite.

What is the king's privilege? I mention this occasionally, and everyone assures me that they certainly understand the King's Privilege! Do you?

Why were the ancient Israelites cursed for demanding a King?

When you study the history of Rome, you learn that the people deified the Emperor, and it was more by the people than by his own decree. Why?

It is because the King's Privilege is the privilege to make laws. And it is a privilege, not a power or a right. A right comes from The One True God; a privilege comes from other men. No man has the power to make law. If you doubt this, begin a campaign to repeal gravity, and until man can do so at his whim, the power of Law is God's alone, and we will be cursed forever until we learn this.

Every law ever written by man has been for the purpose of forcing some benefit from another man. There is no other reason for man to make laws, and the ancient Israelites made this demand upon God—to have their own King—so that they could be like other nations. In other words, so they too could make their own laws. Only, as it turns out, it was not their law being made; it was the King's law, and the law was used to give privileges to his supporters—privileges pulled from the Israelites—for the support of his supporters. Nothing has changed since that day and age.

And today, people have still not learned that the laws made by other men are never for them. The illusion must be kept before them that they are the beneficiaries, but like most everything else told to the people, this is a lie. Today, the accumulative tax rate in America is over 70%. And that is not something you will ever see admitted in the major press. I wonder why. But so many in America are convinced that "you must pay your share," and so the propaganda machine grinds on, and on, and on...

In our discussions about the United States, we have seen much about the roots of our problems, and we have learned that it is the root of the United States, which is diseased. Many people are confused about where and when the problems in America began—deliberately so, I might add. Most still believe that the problem started in the 30's with FDR. Well, that is not true, but we do have problems which began there. The following is necessary to show that changing Washington, DC, particularly through the election process, is not possible. This work is by a man I greatly respect for the quality of his re-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

search. His name is Dan Meador.

If you are interested in Dan's article on "Institutionalized Tyranny", go to the "Kay County Patriots" website at <http://idt.net/~tmccrory> I believe Dan is very good at assembling information where everyone can follow and understand.

United States of America Code

Yesterday we received the promised shipment of the "United States of America Code" from the friend who is scouring the nation for all law books. Included in the shipment were the following: 3 supplements to the 1925 edition; the complete 1934 edition, and four supplements, 1935-38, for the 1934 edition. These books will be on display at the meeting sponsored by the Kay County Patriots at 1 p.m., Saturday, Nov. 7 at the Conestoga Restaurant located west of the Ponca City-Tonkawa exit of I-35.

The importance of these books; most everyone who is engaged in research is used to using the "United States Code", not the "United States of America Code". The relevancy will be immediately obvious to those who have read my recent research article, "Institutionalized Tyranny: The Character & Color of Authority", as one of the major points demonstrated in the discourse is that the "United States of America" is a government foreign to the "United States" that has no constitutional or statutory standing in the Union of several States.

Additionally, another section in the discourse defaults the United States Code as not being law of the United States. In recent months, I and other researchers, most notably Paul Mitchell, concluded that the United States Code is municipal law; what amounts to local law in the "geographical" United States. Paul made that conclusion relating to the Internal Revenue Code. The United States Code is not applicable in the Union of several States party to the Constitution where Congress may exercise only constitutionally-enumerated powers. (Note: When he refers to municipal law, he is referring to the municipal code of Washington, DC.)

The styling on the title page is as follows: "THE CODE OF THE LAWS OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA OF A GENERAL AND PERMANENT CHARACTER IN FORCE JANUARY 3, 1935, 1934 EDITION". It was published by the UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE, WASHINGTON: 1935.

On page XLIX, following organic law of the United States (Declaration of Independence, Articles of Confederation, Ordinance of 1787, and the Constitution), the following authority for the original, the 1925 edition, is cited (act of June 30, 1925, H.R. 10000, Public, No. 440, Chapter 712):

"AN ACT TO consolidate, codify, and set forth the general and permanent laws of the United States in force December seventh, one thousand nine hundred and twenty-five; "Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the fifty titles hereinafter set forth are intended to embrace the laws of the United States, general and permanent in their nature, in force on the 7th day of December, 1925, compiled into a single volume under the authority of Congress, and designated "The Code of the Laws of the United States of America."

"Sec. 2. In all courts, tribunals and public offices of the United States, at home or abroad, of the District of Columbia, and of each State, Territory, or insular possession of

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

the United States: “(a) The matter set forth in the Code, evidenced as hereinafter in this section provided, shall establish prima facie the laws of the United States, general and permanent in their nature, in force on the 7th day of December, 1925; but nothing in this Act shall be construed as repealing or amending any such law, or as enacting as new law any matter contained in the Code. In case of any inconsistency arising through omission or otherwise between the provisions of any section of this Code and the corresponding portion of legislation heretofore enacted effect shall be given for all purposes whatsoever to such enactments.

“(b) Copies of this Act printed at the Government Printing Office and bearing its imprint shall be conclusive evidence of the original of the Code in the custody of the Secretary of State.

“(c) The Code may be cited as U.S.C.”

Implications of the above act may not be immediately conspicuous to those who haven't followed recent research, but there are several fatal disclosures. The chief is this: The Constitution vests authority in a governmental entity designated and known as the United States; the Constitution was implemented for the United States of America (Preamble), but no authority was vested in the United States of America.

But this original “United States of America”, formally established in Article I of the Articles of Confederation, isn't the “United States of America” specified in the Code. It is a new creation; a coalition or political compact of Federal territories and insular possessions that was very probably effected under the guise of a municipal corporation (Washington, DC, as I mentioned above.)

This entity is presently classified as an “agency” of the United States; see notes following the current 18 U.S.C. Sec. 1001, and 18 U.S.C.

Sec. 6. This is clarified in Sec. 80 of the 1934 edition of the United States of America Code, which puts the “United States” and the “United States of America” in the same section, and stipulates that the United States will in some cases represent United States of America interests:

“ _ 80. (Criminal Code, section 35, amended.) Presenting false claims.

Whoever shall make or cause to be made or present or cause to be presented, for payment or approval, to or by any person or officer in the civil, military, or naval service of the United States, or any department thereof, or any corporation in which the United States of America is a stockholder, any claim upon or against the Government of the United States, or any department or officer thereof, or any corporation in which the United States of America is a stockholder, knowing such claim to be false, fictitious, or fraudulent; or whoever shall knowingly and willfully falsify or conceal or cover up by any trick, scheme, or device a material fact, or make or cause to be made any false or fraudulent statements or representations, or make or use or cause to be made or used any false bill, receipt, voucher, roll, account, claim, certificate, affidavit, or deposition, knowing the same to contain any fraudulent or fictitious statement or entry, in any matter within the jurisdiction of any department or agency of the United States or of any corporation in which the United States of America is a stockholder shall be fined not more than \$10,000 or imprisoned not more than ten years, or both. (R.S. _ 5438; May 30, 1908, c. 235, 35 Stat.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

555; Mar. 4, 1909, c. 321, _ 35, 35 Stat. 1095; Oct. 23, 1918, c. 194, 40 Stat. 1015; June 18, 1934, c. 587, 48 Stat. 996)”

The United States is clearly not the United States of America; the 1934 edition of the Code is the Code of the United States of America, not the United States; and the United States of America is defined as an agency of the United States in Title 18 of the United States Code. The United States and the United States of America are identified as separate and distinct entities in the 1934 section reproduced above. I have Titles 18 & 28 of the 1934 edition of the United States Code, also printed by the Government Printing Office, and inside the covers the two Codes are identical, including 18 U.S.C. Sec. 80. It isn't coincidental that virtually all Federal civil and criminal prosecution presently proceeds in the name and by authority of the “United States of America” in what are supposed to be courts of the United States.

It appears that those behind the Cooperative Federalism scheme had considerable difficulty deciding how they were going to operate to impose the nonconstitutional deception that would eventually unleash unbridled Federal authority in the several States. To the best of my knowledge, the “United States of America” Code is no longer produced, and in fact I would guess that the 1934 edition was probably the last printed duplicate. However, it is more than possible that most of the material evidencing the fraud is reproduced somewhere in newer editions of the United States Code as thus far we've been able to track down variations and amalgamations of most more straight-forward sections in 1934 & 1940 editions of the U.S.C.

As I was looking the old prize over, a couple of sections from Title 1 jumped off the page to further secure the conclusion that the United States Code and the United States of America Code, which will prove to be one and the same, are municipal law applicable only in the “geographical” United States. I'll reproduce sections 30a & applicable portions of 54 to demonstrate:

“_ 30a. Little and Brown's edition of laws and treaties competent evidence of Acts of Congress. The edition of the laws and treaties of the United States, published by Little & Brown, shall be competent evidence of the several public and private acts of Congress, and of the several treaties therein contained, in all the courts of law and equity and of maritime jurisdiction, and in all the tribunals and public offices of the United States, and of the several States, without any further proof or authentication thereof. (R.S. _ 908)”

“_ 54. Codes and Supplements as establishing prima facie the Laws of United States and District of Columbia; citation of Codes and supplements. In all courts, tribunals, and public offices of the United States, at home and abroad, of the District of Columbia, and of each State, Territory, or insular possession of the United States ≠ “(a) Code of Laws of the United States; effect as prima facie the law.

The matter set forth in the edition of the Code of Laws of the United States current at any time shall, together with the then current supplement, if any, establish prima facie the laws of the United States, general and permanent in their nature, in force on the day preceding the commencement of the session following the last session the legislation of which is included.”

Oklahoma, Texas, Colorado, California, New York, etc., are not “States of the United

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

States”. The District of Columbia is a “State” of the United States, as are current insular possessions such as Puerto Rico. Our respective State republics are States of the Union of several States. (As you are reading this, think about the implications of being United States citizens under the laws the way they are currently structured, and of participating in the so-called elections!) And our States, respectively, are supposed to have courts of law and equity; lawful courts of the United States operate primarily as courts of “law”, being common law, and under Article III, Sec. 2, clause 1 of the Constitution, have equity and admiralty and maritime jurisdiction. In these courts, the edition of laws and treaties of the United States published by Little and Brown are “competent evidence of the several public and private acts of Congress..,” where the Federal Code, whether the United States Code or the United States of America Code, is “prima facie the law” (law by appearance) only in “courts, tribunals, and public offices of the United States of the District of Columbia, and of each State, Territory, or insular possession of the United States.”

These States, Territories, and insular possessions of the United States are party to a political compact or alliance designated as the “United States of America” that is presently defined as an agency of the United States.

Hopefully this reasonably short address of the United States vs. the United States of America subject helps orient those who have had difficulty with distinction. Once you are oriented, the riddle is reasonably simple to understand: The confederation of States that joined under the Articles of Confederation to fight the American Revolution was formally designated as the “United States of America” in Article I of the Articles of Confederation.

This confederation is mentioned in the Preamble and in Article II of the Constitution. However, both the Articles of Confederation and the Constitution, respectively, vested authority in a governmental entity which acts as agent of the original compact, the governmental agent designated as the “United States”. The Constitution, drafted in 1787, (However, there is considerable difference between what was drafted in 1787 and what was adopted as the Constitution in 1792. The differences are the changes made in England before it was approved for adoption here.) is the Constitution of the United States, which We the People enacted for the United States of America. The Constitution vests all enumerated powers in the United States, not the United States of America.

However, under Article IV, Sec. 3, clause 2, the Constitution gives Congress what amounts to absolute power over territory belonging to the United States. So far as the Union of several States is concerned, Congress may enact legislation only within the confines of constitutionally-enumerated powers, but where territory belonging to the United States is concerned, Congress has what amounts to the combined power of State and National governments. (Remember; Article I, Section 8, Clause 17.)

As Congress acquired outlying insular possessions such as Puerto Rico, Guam, etc., United States Government was increasingly moved under Congress’ territorial authority in Article IV. These insular possessions, and the District of Columbia, are joined under an alliance or compact, probably structured as a municipal corporation, designated as the “United States of America”.

Maybe this explanation can be distilled: United States Government has two distinct capacities, and there are two entities known as the “United States of America”. The origi-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

nal confederation was comprised of the several States joined to fight the American Revolution; the latter is a new creation which joins the District of Columbia and insular possessions of the United States. The Constitution of the United States vests no authority in the United States of America other than by way of the electoral college to elect the President of the United States of America who is subsequently sworn in as the President of the United States.

Read Institutionalized Tyranny: The Character & Color of Authority to see that “United States of America” jurisdiction is foreign to jurisdiction of the United States and the several States. The two sections above pertaining to the Little & Brown publication vs. Government Printing Office of the Code pretty well demonstrates the point, but there are far more evidences in the research paper. The research paper, which is downloading at 112 or 113 pages, can be accessed via the Kay County Patriots web site:

<http://idt.net/~tmccrory/>

Unfortunately, I don’t have easy access to the Statutes at Large, so it would be handy if someone who does would follow the “United States of America” trail in Statutes at Large cites for 1926 enacting legislation and cites following 1934 ed., 18 U.S.C. _ 80. The old snake is stinking enough we’re bound to find his den.

The author did not have access to the information about Britain when he wrote this, or the paper on Institutionalized Tyranny. But he does show that the pattern of changing in America continues, adapting each succeeding generation just a little more—not enough to wake them up, but moving a little farther from our basis in the Declaration of Independence—a little closer to total tyranny. And he also shows graphically how man’s law is always for the benefit of other men—at the expense of the many, for the benefit of the few.

Please let me give you an example of what I mean. Do you recycle? Why—because you are told how good it is for you to do so? That is not a very good reason. Why do they keep harping on the theme?

If recycling was a good idea, the government would not need to be involved. However, if you really want to understand, start studying how much money is transferred to the recycling companies from the government, both local and national, and you will begin to see the picture. In the old days, you had rag pickers that went around and gathered up scraps, not only of rags, but also of everything loose lying around. You still see the same thing in most of the world, but not in America—at least, not much in America, yet. But believe me, you will see it in America.

Some of the most virulent messages I receive from my postings are about the IRS. The following is rather interesting.

“The following article appeared in The American’s Bulletin, September 1998. This article concerns a case docketed in the U.S. Supreme Court that centers around 26 USC 83. In nearly 6 years of litigation, the Section 83 Equation remains off limits to those who argue it. Applicable to ALL compensation for services, the statute only permits the excess over what you paid for your paycheck to be taxed as gross income or profit, and it DOES NOT provide that the whole payment is gross income.

The Secret Statute Gets Docketed-Again!

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

The U.S. Supreme Court has again docketed a client of mine seeking a determination as to the language of 26 USC 83 Property Transferred in Connection with the Performance of Services. In five attempts, two Citizens arguing _ 83 have been docketed, the first dismissed on procedural grounds.

While the first four to petition were appealing from Federal courts, this latest case is one involving state income tax imposed by adopted Federal statutes, and this includes 26 USC 83, a statute said to apply to any and all compensation for services but one that prescribes that only the excess over the amount paid is to be counted as profit.

In five years. of litigation, I have gotten the courts to narrow the free labor argument down to these factors: 1) Labor is excluded from consideration as a cost because it is property that cost the laborer nothing to receive,

2) the controlling provisions are 26 CFR 1.1012-1(a) and 1.83-3(g),

3) If you argue the fact that these provisions embrace all property as a cost, including Labor, you will be penalized thousands of dollars for doing so.

In all of the U.S. Tax Court cases and in those cases taken to the fourth and ninth Circuit, my book about IRC _ 83 was filed as Exhibit A, and in every instance, the IRS has failed miserably to justify the exclusion of Labor from cost in light of the Code's contrary stance.

The Fourth Circuit Court allowed McCall onto appeal with nine new issues not raised in Tax Court after seeing its pattern of abuse of those who raised these issues. New issues are not allowed on appeal absent a fundamental error and/or miscarriage of justice, which was my argument for refraining from raising the issues in Tax Court; the Fourth Circuit agreed.

Later, the Fourth Circuit let stand Tax Court's penalty of \$6500 against S. Talmage for "I will concede all facts of the case today if they would just tell me how to comply with _ 83." Why is the penalty once viewed as miscarriage suddenly viewed by the same court as proper and fitting of the obnoxious behavior of inquiring about the law? To kill the argument, that's why. Where, in the language of 26 CFR 1.83-3(g) and/or 1.1012-1(a) is any property excluded from cost because it cost the laborer nothing? This is the question causing all of the hoopla and civil atrocities, so much so that the U.S. Supreme Court has again docketed the issue.

In the most recently docketed case, the state administrative tax court penalized the litigant \$5000 after admitting at length that the tax is not imposed by clear language, an act calculated to overturn more than 15 Supreme Court decisions stating that the taxpayer wins when unclear language imposes the tax. The IRS agent of 17 years. (purposely?) missed 11 checks from a single account that were deposited into a retirement account in her audit, the "court" agreed with the state that 26 USC 83 as adopted did not apply to the Citizen's money compensation, a notion that contradicts 6 Federal Circuit Courts.

We permitted the IRS agent to use a pseudonym "Patricia Wakefield" while on the stand due to the sensitive nature of her duties such as investigating "right wing" and "tax protester" groups. When pressed for proof of jurisdiction outside of Wa. D.C. she failed miserably. (See 4 USC 72) My client had also received a 2358C letter from the IRS stating

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

that he needn't file a return per the IRS' request and based it upon his having inquired about § 83 in a reply to a request for his tax returns.

Patricia Wakefield admitted that her determination that the Citizen owed taxes on his pay was directly opposed to the determination of Timothy Towns (IRS Chief of Compliance) who clearly thought no balance was owed, evidenced by the 2358C letter.

Long story short - such a mess was made of the state's case on the administrative level, and so many issues cried out for justice, that that state's supreme court simply passed on all issues, upholding the \$5k penalty in light of the "unclear language" admission.

All of these privacy issues and faulty audit techniques were dropped from our U.S. Supreme Court effort, opting to keep the Petition simple; property rights and § 83 only. We are pleading against the judiciary's obvious pattern of abuse of those raising issues found within the tax Code itself, the fact that the lower court placed the Citizen in an exemption from taxation (unclear language) but upheld penalties, the lower court's holding that § 83 is inapplicable, and the lower courts' refusal to address the plain language of statute which deprives the Citizen of his right to arrange his own affairs according to law, a right that cannot be doubted.

In the Petition, we kept the questions simple, asking as our relief that the High Court either remand the case back to the state Supreme Court for proper adjudication, or to hear the issue itself because the statute in question is in fact a Federal statute, the Federal Courts having inflicted the most oppression in these cases. We prefer that the High Court hear the issue and not remand the case back to the state, thus relieving both state and Federal taxpayers of the same problems at once.

What's going to happen? From past experience I must admit that I have no clue. Will the High Court choose to protect the IRS and avoid the language of applicable statutes? Will the High Court adhere to the obvious protections in the provisions relied upon? Will the High Court ignore that lower court's admission of unclear language and let the penalties stand, or will it defend its decisions that the taxpayer wins in such an instance?

I think the biggest thing to take from all of this is-KEEP TRYING! I had issues that I developed, ones that nobody else was litigating, and I wanted answers! In 1988 the IRS came to my door flashing a badge. I now have taken five people to the U.S. Supreme Court on the same issues, appeared several times as an expert witness, written several books and manuals, written a new Tax Code, and sell professional opinions through the Research Foundation in Hawaii (The Reliance Defense). Look at my efforts and method, and demand from others who try to sell you their "findings" or pleadings/process that they disclose their method, their track record, their experience.

The Petition itself is published to professional standards in accordance with Supreme Court Rule 33 (6" x 9") and is available to all readers of the Bulletin through the advertisement in this Edition. Even if taxes are not your focus, this document is invaluable if you envision yourself approaching the U.S. Supreme Court for a determination.

I do still harbor optimism, reserved and silent optimism, that statute will indeed prevail, and I see this climate as a favorable one, the IRS being attacked on all sides such as it is. The law, the truth, our Constitutional rights, who needs more? With these things on

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

your side, the government remains the sole occupant of the hot seat. Knowledge is power!”

End.

Amazing, isn't it. This man has found a way to work the system for money, so the system is fine. What he does show, is that even if the system is wrong, the system is right. The detail missing here is that the IRS pays any judge who finds for them 1/3 of the money collected. Do you really think any judge is going to kill the golden calf? Or let any politician kill the golden calf?

The same is true in your local courts. 1/3 of all fines levied by the local judges goes directly into their retirement fund. Nice system, for them, but why can this, and the nonsense shown above, happen? Because we have opted to contract with man for some benefit. Not everyone is subject to the above nonsense. I have not filed or paid the so-called income tax for many years, because I have not contracted to do so. The same is true of many of the Amish communities. They have no contracts with the statutory agencies, so there is no liability. And I know that many will say “But I can not live without the system!” Perhaps, if you will look at that statement, you will begin to understand the term “faith” and where yours really lies.

And still, this is not the entire picture, because as serious as the above abuse seems to us, it really only has to do with the pocket book. I should not minimize that, as many who were targeted by the IRS and other government agencies become part of the homeless, and the abuse of many children and wives can be laid directly at the feet of the monetary problems caused by the economic chaos created by man. After all, the sins of the father are visited unto the children, even unto the fourth generation...

And we think this has something to do with blood, or intermarriage, or... what? It has to do, at least in large part, with all actions of the fathers of each generation and their connection with any portion of man's laws.

Look at the above information again, and then consider the following. As I said to begin with, you have to contract INTO the system in America, because of the Declaration of Independence.

IRS IS NOT A U.S. GOVERNMENT AGENCY

The Internal Revenue Service is not an agency of the United States government. It is true that not only can it NOT be found in Title 31, but it is nowhere to be found in the entirety of Title 5 U.S.C.

Congress THOUGHT it created it but it didn't. Just look at the 1100 manual and it tells you so. Congress only created the Commissioner's Office. He then hired the private collection agency people and used them as the tax collectors. In fact, I defy you to find any IRS employee listed as an Employee of the United States Government with a United States Employee Identification number that has been hired by any District Director in the country. Now I suggest you look at 27 Code of Federal Regulations Section 250.11 and therein you will find the definition of “Revenue agent.” That definition reads “Any duly authorized Commonwealth Internal Revenue Agent of the Department of the Treasury of Puerto Rico.”

I now refer you to the “Secretary” described in 26 U.S.C. 6301. Does it not state, “The

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Secretary shall collect the taxes imposed by the internal revenue laws?" Yes it does. Now Congress mandated this by 68A Stat 775 and you cannot disagree. Does not 26 U.S.C. state that this "Secretary" may make a return based on the information he has if a person does not make a return? Yes it does. Does not 26 U.S.C. 6001, 6011 and 6012 refer to this "Secretary?" Yes it does.

Now, if the Revenue agent decides to prosecute, he approaches the Attorney General and this "Secretary" as noted in 26 USC 7401 to prosecute upon concurrence between both the Attorney General and this "Secretary," is this not correct? Yes it is and all the above is indisputable. Is it now contrary to any rational man that this "Secretary" can only be one person and not many?

Now, I direct your attention to 27 CFR 250.11 again for the definition of "Secretary" as found in all the above. The defining term for "Secretary" is, "The Secretary of the Treasury of Puerto Rico." That man is Manual Diaz Saldana. Those revenue agents operating in the all the states are not United States employees. The Statute mandated to be at the end of each regulation by 1 Code of Federal Regulations (CFR) is 68A State 775 (26 USC 6301). (The men I work with sue Manual Diaz Saldana directly in every IRS case they take on.)

I now direct your attention to the House of Representatives, 39th Congress, 2nd Session, Ex. Doc. 99, titled Salary Tax Upon Clerks to Postmasters, LETTER from THE SECRETARY OF THE TREASURY dated Feb. 20, 1867, referred to the House Ways and Means committee and ordered to be printed. I am now going to prove that the IRS agents are not now nor were they ever employees of the United States. You can obtain the document faster than the man on the street. The postmaster wanted to know why postal clerks had to pay income taxes and why the IRS clerks did not have to. The "clerks" are today called "revenue agents." I quote part of the response that is not taken out of context concerning the IRS employees. Why should I, because it is verifiable by anyone.

"No money is advanced by the United States for the payment of such salaries, nor do the assessors perform the duties of disbursing agents of the United States in paying their clerks. The entire amount allowed is paid directly to the assessor, and he is not accountable to the United States for its payment to his clerks, for the reason he has paid them in advance, out of his own funds, and this is reimbursement to him of such amount as the department decides to be reasonable. No salary tax is therefore collected, or required by the Treasury Department to be accounted for, or paid, on account of payments to assessors' clerks, as the United States pays no such clerks nor has them in its employ or service, and they do not come within the provisions of existing laws imposing such a tax." This was signed by H. McCULLOCH Secretary of the Treasury.

Then to clarify it he included Section 165 which states that the only people to pay income taxes are, and I quote ". . . persons in the civil, military, naval, or other employment service of the United States, including senators and representatives and delegates in Congress, "

Since the postal clerks are paid by the United States and the IRS agents were not, those revenue agents were just like me and the millions that do not work or contract with the United States. Therefore they were not subject to the income tax. And so it is today, and that explains why the private collection agency agents cannot be sued under 26

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

USC 7214 because they are not employees of the United States. Today they are based out of and under the direction of the Secretary of the Treasury of Puerto Rico, strictly to collect alcohol, tobacco, and firearms taxable activities.

The identity of the Secretary is not found in title 26 U.S.C.. The only reference to the identity of the Secretary of the Treasury is in 27 C.F.R. at section 250.11 (definitions) which specifically states: “Secretary means Secretary of the Treasury of Puerto Rico”.

Departamento De Hacienda
Secretary of the Treasury
Manuel Diaz Saldana
P.O. Box 4515
San Juan, Puerto Rico, 00902
1-787-721-2020

He’s the head honcho. Also, you are usually dealing with an agent with a title of “Revenue Agent.” The only definition of revenue agent is in 27 C.F.R. section 250.11 and is defined as: “Revenue Agent means any duly authorized Commonwealth Internal Revenue Agent of the Department of the Treasury of Puerto Rico.”

Amazing, isn’t it? And still I receive a lot of responses dealing directly with this issue and telling me what a fool I am, and that’s why there are so many prisons, for idiots like you! So be it. Before we finish this paper, let me explain the danger to men like me.

Is it from the government? No, although that danger is real enough. The real danger to me is from those who are dead set to save the Constitution. Look at this from my point of view, please. Shortly, here in the good old U.S. of A., there will be men fighting men. One side will be fighting for the Constitution, and the other side will be fighting to save the Constitution. Neither side has a clue what it is that they are engaged in, but that surely will not stop the fighting.

And those fighting to save the Constitution are of a particular mind set: “ifn you ain’t fer us, you’re agin us!” To my mind, does anything reek more of insanity than what is going on here? Or is it just me? Believe this—under God’s Law I will not pick up a weapon to “save the Constitution.”

What did the Constitution do? Did it not establish an earthly government? What was the third temptation of Christ? Did not Satan offer Christ lordship over all earthly Kingdoms?

You can not give what you do not have, and Christ did not challenge Satan’s offer, he simply rejected it. Since He did not challenge the offer, that means that Satan had the right to make the offer. So what is the government under the Constitution? Satan’s government, and if you have faith in politicians changing this, you are going to suffer a lifetime of disappointment.

Once again, under the Declaration of Independence, the Bible is the Law of America. I suggest you review 1st Samuel Chapter 8, and pay particular attention to Verse 8.

What does this all mean? The foundation of any nation is the production of food. Without the production of food, the nation will dissolve, and the people die. This is a fact of history. At the end of the Roman Empire, there were thousands of acres of land lying

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

fallow—wonderful, productive land, and the people were hungry in Rome. Why? This happened because the farmers had been taxed off the land, and the people, with no benefit left with which to support the Empire, let it fall, and the elite lost their privileges. But, as always, it was the people who paid the price. The following is a lead in to the final paper in this series (it isn't the next one!), and I hope it gives you something to think about.

The REAL JUNK FOOD your overbearing Government is covering up, aiding and abetting

The NOBEL PRIZE for MEDICINE was awarded to a man who discovered the "PRION". This prize is not given out for trivial events. What is a PRION and why do you need to know? You may have already heard of Mad Cow disease, but you may not be aware of its cousins... Please share your thoughts... Who is on the watch?

THE PRION, why have you not heard more about it? Why the cover-up? What is the purpose of an overbearing government if not to at least ALERT the public to this potential time bomb. I will contrast this in the next post with the LIFESTYLE POLICE. They determine what is real and what is not real, what matters and does not, what you don't need to know, DON'T THINK, JUST DO. That is the mantra they want you humming. Their goal of 90 % now appears feasible...

ALL THOSE MAD COWS AND YOU

The cattle of England are mad before they die. It seems likely that the British dairy and beef industry may be destroyed in the near future and the British people themselves over the next few decades. And there is reason to believe that the trail of death will not end at this little isle of historic beef-eaters.

Its all about a disease called transmissible spongiform encephalopathy (TSE) which has existed for centuries confined to sheep as a fatal malady called scrapie. Only recently has it become a scourge throughout the mammalian kingdom including man. It turns the brain into a sponge like mass by filling it full of holes. The result is gradual deterioration of brain function leading inevitably to death over a period of months to a few years.

There is no treatment nor is there likely to be. In England, mad cow disease as it was dubbed first raised the red flag of alarm when it was found that some young persons were dying of a disease that clinically and pathologically resembled a speeded up form of an extremely rare disease of the elderly called Creutzfeld-Jacob Disease (CJD). CJD of the elderly had been considered most likely to be a genetically-based condition and not due to an infectious agent. It still is and may simply represent a symptom complex based on spongiform degeneration of the brain that can have more than a single cause.

It was through his interest in the rare Creutzfeld-Jacob disease of the elderly that Stanley Prusiner working at the University of California School of Medicine in San Francisco during the 1970's discovered a new life form. It is a strange sort of thing being neither bacterium nor virus. It is no more than a molecule of protein and is devoid of genetic material. Dr. Prusiner named it a prion for proteinacious infectious particle. His idea that such a molecule so simple and without genetic material when compared even to a virus could actually cause disease brought him worldwide ridicule at first and, fi-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

nally, the Nobel Prize for Medicine with its million dollar reward. His thing, his quasi-creature, is real and deadly.

Proteins are the building blocks of life. They are huge molecules made up of even thousands of atoms. The identical atomic constituents of such a molecule can exist in different configurations with different biological properties for each change in shape.

Prions are like that. A molecule of identical atomic makeup to the prion exists normally in mammals but in a harmless shape or configuration. Prions, the infectious and pathological version or shape of the same atomic makeup is believed to have the ability, by means unknown, to change the shape of the normally present molecule into its own malevolent image.

This is a comparatively slow process. The incubation period—the time between infection by ingesting, one way or another, the prion and the appearance of symptoms—may be three to five years in cattle and ten years, more or less, in humans. The effect is probably cumulative. In other words, a large dose of prions would be likely to cause disease and death in short order while repeated small doses ingested with infected food would more gradually accumulate, postponing the inevitable end.

The end is inevitable because there is no treatment. Apparently the body's immune system does not recognize as an enemy the same protein reshaped from a benign to a malignant form. The body can rally no natural defense. And the prion molecule itself is extremely resistant to destruction. Antibiotics, of course, could have no effect because this thing is not really alive—at least as we think we know what life is. The heat of normal cooking temperatures do not affect it. While meat well- done throughout is safe from bacterial contamination, this does not render it safe from the standpoint of prions. Even formaldehyde does not destroy it.

So—how did this thing which apparently has existed for hundreds of years confined comparatively innocuously to sheep wait until the 1980's to branch out to infect cattle and then other mammals? It is through the process of rendering by which the inedible remains of slaughtered animals, including dead pets and road-kills, are ground up and cooked into a horrible unidentifiable mess that is fed to all food animals including beef and dairy cows as a protein supplement in order to increase the quantities of beef and milk. (Authors Note: In other words, for increased profits. Remember Scripture; the root of ALL evil is the LOVE of money.)

Man has turned a benign ruminant into a cannibal. And there are many products of this mess of the unpalatable remains of dead things. Much of it goes into pet food. Gelatin, for instance, which goes into the capsules that make medicines convenient to take is a product of this mess. Interestingly, on April 24, 1997, the U.S. Food and Drug Administration quietly removed animal gelatin from its list of GRAS (Generally Regarded As Safe) products. This action was necessary, they say, because there was no assurance that gelatin was not contaminated by prions since there is no chemical test for their presence. Somehow, this rather significant action did not reach the controlled mass media.

So, it is thought, the sheep prions got to the cattle from feeding them these protein supplements. The trouble is, this process of rendering has been going on a long time. Why, all of a sudden, did these previously innocuous sheep prions become agents of

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

widespread disease? This remains a valid question.

In an effort to confine the disease, Britain undertook a massive program which included rejection of a process of rendering they had recently adopted from the United States method and the killing of thousands upon thousands of cattle. These cattle cannot be buried because of the likelihood of contamination of the soil and water table. They must be burned. Facilities for burning are overburdened, so corpses are piling up.

But, despite an embargo on the export of British beef, prion disease has popped up on the continent and elsewhere. Why should that be a surprise? After all, the practice of feeding the product of rendering called offal to food animals has been worldwide for a long time. One public health official has actually predicted a world-wide epidemic with hundreds of thousands afflicted and dead.

Worse than AIDS, some think.

And this should not be a surprise either. Transmissible spongiform encephalopathy (TSE) has been found in all animals that make up the domestic meat supply including chickens and even free-living salmon released from government hatcheries where they had been fed the products of offal as hatchlings. Even mink raised for their coats and wild-living elk and mule deer in Montana and Wyoming have been found to carry the disease. And since intrauterine transmission of the prion from a cow to her calf occurs, why not from the chicken to her egg?

Such widespread dissemination of the prion disease should have been expected—if, indeed, it was not. The problem of the disposal of thousands of tons of offal, not even fit for hamburger, from slaughtered animals is profitably solved by providing a cheap nutritional supplement that, at the same time, increases the profit of the meat industry (Author's Note: Sounds very similar to what was done with Fluoride, doesn't it). This practice promotes faster growth and larger animals to be consumed by the poor boobs who know no better because they were not given the opportunity to learn. The disease found its way into the wild game animal population in Montana and Wyoming by feeding offal ostensibly to get them through a hard winter. Whether from governmental concern for their well-being or not, the net result of this unfortunate practice inevitably will spread the disease throughout the animal kingdom. (Author's Note: And the beat goes on: Sure, to get them through a hard winter, and, incidentally, make someone a fortune getting rid of products they can not dispose of any other way.)

That, like it or not, includes us! There is even concern that the use of offal- or sewage-derived fertilizers may result in the transmission of the prion molecule to food crops.

But even so, we in the good old United States of America are blessed. The controlled media continue to assure us that U.S. cattle are free of the disease. Although cattle feed, particularly of dairy cattle in order to enable the prodigious milk production per milk cow demanded by the industry in order to enhance profits, has been supplemented with the packaged remains of their parents, brothers, sisters and others less closely related for decades, we are not to worry.

U.S. cattle just do not have mad cow disease, we are assured.

The reason is simple. In the U.S., it is called downer cow syndrome instead! An estimated 300,000 to one million U.S. cattle die yearly of downer cow syndrome. They die of

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

an encephalopathy which appears to be a variant of bovine spongiform encephalopathy. It is here, it is dangerous—and it is being covered up! That it is a privately recognized hazard in this country would seem to be proved by the action of the U.S. Food and Drug Administration in admitting that gelatin could no longer be considered safe for human consumption. (Author's Note: The scary thing, to me, is that the people covering this up are going to eat the same stuff! So any time you have trouble seeing how people can be so blind, remember this!)

Why should such behavior be no surprise? Our government has shown itself to be so corrupt that it cannot speak the truth about anything. Many of us have learned to decipher federal pronouncements by reversing the meaning of anything they tell us.

Only in this way can we find the truth! When we were told that there was no such thing as the Gulf War Syndrome, we knew there was. When we were told that the virus that causes AIDS was concocted by green monkeys in Africa, we knew it probably had been man-made.

And now we have a brand new role for an old, old disease of sheep. The causative agent finally is discovered by research so brilliant that it is rewarded the Nobel Prize for Medicine! It is a heretofore unknown life-form so strange that its acceptance by medical science as a real thing took many years. The next we know, all of a sudden there is a brand new disease to fit this old, old life-form which somehow changed its spots and became a widely-capable fatal pathogen. One cannot help but wonder just a little. Could this be the story of AIDS and the apparently infectious element of Gulf War Syndrome all over again? And could this strange little non-creature be responsible for the near-epidemic of Alzheimer's Disease over the past decade or more? That question has been raised by Dr. Prusiner himself. Spongiform changes have been found in the brains of the victims of this disease also.

While the media continue to say as little as possible about TSE and then only to reassure the boobs of their safety, a trip to the corner grocery raises a twinge of doubt. Perhaps everyone is not as sanguine about the freedom from pathogenic prions in U.S. meat products as we are told to be.

The labels of all fruit, cereal and vegetable baby food products of a well-known purveyor bear the familiar kosher mark. This means that it is perfectly safe for Jewish people to feed this properly blessed and taxed stuff to their babies. They can even eat it themselves with safety. But none of the meat-containing products of this manufacturer bear the kosher sign. This says, clearly, if you are a good Jewish person, do not feed this stuff to your baby.

Does this mean simply that the sources of meat in baby foods cannot be traced and that the rabbi cannot guarantee that all have been properly blessed at slaughter or do they know something that we do not? But then, perhaps Nature herself is trying to tell us something. After all, science has proved that we are not obligate carnivores.

QUOTE of the DAY:

“Non Jewish members of the Masonic lodges seem to ignore the fact that the motto of Freemasonry is to return all the wealth of the world to King Solomon's Temple in Jerusalem.”

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Am I the only one beginning to see a pattern here about “Get ye out of her,”—and what it really means—and why? And what is the whole story of the food “mess” in America—once the breadbasket for millions? The following is from the newspaper ACRES USA, page 50, for November, 1998. I strongly urge you, once again, to subscribe to this paper.

“El Nino helped weather systems dump up to 20 feet of snow on eastern Colorado. Many cattlemen lost entire herds. Coyotes surviving the winter have opted for rabbit, then some calves, but refuse to touch mature bovines. By the end of May, carcasses remained unclaimed by wildlife. Apparently cows loaded with vaccines and medicines are not considered proper diet by coyotes. Can the human animal prosper on such fare?”

Few people are really aware of just what is meant by the term “organic food” or of the vital importance of such a diet. And, fewer still—who are aware of part of the picture—truly understand how difficult it is to eat clean food. They still believe that a supermarket in business for profit is somehow concerned about their health—and that a multinational corporation deeply concerned about the bottom line will make decisions about how to grow food or animals for the people’s consumption with the benefit of His People in mind. The root of ALL evil is the LOVE of money. I mean what I say—for the good of yourself and of your children, subscribe to ACRES USA.

All of the things we have been over until now are just the symptoms of the problem. The above is revealing, and it shows the extent to which the corruption in America has grown, and what the Law is really about—the health, safety and well being of His People. The next paper is about the root of the problem, and what the Constitution was all about.

In Part IV, I mentioned the different groups I work with. One of them, Gamaliel Ministries, has a book, which details how to cancel all contracts with the government. It is all about understanding and removing legal disabilities (this means contracts with the “system”), how to reclaim your God-given Rights and how to become lien proof, levy proof, and judgment proof. It is very good. It concentrates on how to reduce or eliminate tax liabilities. I like the part about how to claim sovereignty, because the author understands, as do I, that this means sovereignty under God’s Law, and subject to Him.

What is really happening, and just what have the Republicans accomplished?

WASHINGTON - Looking beyond his election as House speaker, Republican Rep. Bob Livingston says his first bill in the new Congress would remove Social Security from the federal balance sheet, where he says it is used to mask an overall budget deficit. If he succeeds, however, the projected \$63 billion budget surplus would become a \$54 billion deficit, potentially ending conservatives’ hopes for a big tax cut. Both parties agree that Social Security, while currently flush with cash, must change to ensure solvency when the baby boomers retire. For now, however, the program produces so much extra revenue beyond what it pays out that it masks the fact that the rest of the government operates at a deficit.

The next paper in this series is an explanation of the so-called monetary system of America. I doubt you have ever been exposed to this information before. As a lead-in to Part VII, please read and keep in mind this explanation of “interest.”

“Interest never sleeps nor sickens nor dies; it never goes to the hospital; it works on

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Sundays and holidays; it never takes a vacation; it never visits nor travels; it takes no pleasure; it is never laid off work nor discharged from employment; it never works on reduced hours; it never has short crops nor droughts; it never pays taxes; it buys no food; it wears no clothes; it is unhoused and without home and so has no repairs, no replacements, no shingling, plumbing, painting, or whitewashing; it has neither wife, children, father, mother, nor kinfolk to watch over and care for; it has no expense of living; it has neither weddings nor births nor deaths; it has no love, no sympathy; it is as hard and soulless as a granite cliff. Once in debt, interest is your companion every minute of the day and night; you cannot shun it or slip away from it; you cannot dismiss it; it yields neither to entreaties, demands, or orders; and whenever you get in its way or cross its course or fail to meet its demands, it crushes you." J. Reuben Clark's classic statement in interest — April, 1938.

A favor, please. I told each of you that there was no obligation in receiving this material. I assure you that is true. What I do ask is that you work to bring two people to begin this study. That is all. Just two people. I know you are talking about it. You have to, just as I do. And, I think, you are seeing why I asked you not to pass the information on, particularly pieces of it. People can only absorb so much, and they must start at the beginning. Please, as you read posts about this, or have questions brought to you about this, mention what you have learned, and encourage them to begin.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART VI

WHAT THE WHOLE STORY IS ALL ABOUT!

Interest never sleeps nor sickens nor dies; it never goes to the hospital; it works on Sundays and holidays; it never takes a vacation; it never visits nor travels; it takes no pleasure; it is never laid off work nor discharged from employment; it never works on reduced hours; it never has short crops nor droughts; it never pays taxes; it buys no food; it wears no clothes; it is unhoused and without home and so has no repairs, no replacements, no shingling, plumbing, painting, or whitewashing; it has neither wife, children, father, mother, nor kinfolk to watch over and care for; it has no expense of living; it has neither weddings nor births nor deaths; it has no love, no sympathy; it is as hard and soulless as a granite cliff. Once in debt, interest is your companion every minute of the day and night; you cannot shun it or slip away from it; you cannot dismiss it; it yields neither to entreaties, demands, or orders; and whenever you get in its way or cross its course or fail to meet its demands, it crushes you. J. Reuben Clark's classic statement in interest — April, 1938.

It is necessary to repeat this paper again. I never, in all the time I studied, before I found out the real story behind the Constitution, could understand the First Bank of the United States (But then, I did not understand the United States either!). The power of interest is awesome. And the power, I should say the privilege, of charging interest on the circulating medium of exchange is the literal power to destroy, or to steal, as is the inclination of those gifted with the privilege.

A close study of our history in America shows that the power of destruction (recessions and/or depressions) has been used nearly as much as the power to steal. Generally, the power to steal has been entrusted in the agents of the bankers after the bankers create economic hardship. Few understand how this is done. It is necessary to understand this to understand America. The following paper will explain most of the story.

However, there is one more part to the story that you need before you start. Very few Americans understand international corporations, or shopping centers, or the concentration of shopping in so-called shopping centers. Few Americans realize how little sense these kinds of things make. Perhaps you will after this.

America used to be a nation of shop owners, craftsmen and farmers. Farming is the foundation of any nation, and the wealth of any nation depends on the land, despite what ever else you have been told. There is now, in America, very little wealth coming from the soil, very few shop keepers left, and darn few craftsmen of any kind. Why?

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Because of the fractional reserve banking system. If you do not understand this system, the paper which follows is a through discussion of how it works. But the real key to this system is in the study of the ultimate result of the use of the system, and why it destroys so completely.

All very successful businesses in the United States depend upon a close relationship with a bank in order to become huge. Why, and how is this done. But, you see, this is the secret to the whole house of cards created by the fractional reserve system.

Every multi-national corporation (including that benign giant WalMart) have a banking relationship. What this means is that the people involved with the business understand the fractional reserve system. Instead of banking with any old bank as the rest of us do, they either buy a bank or enter into a partnership with the ownership of a bank. They do this not for the reasons you and I think of, a better interest rate for instance, but for the sole purpose of multiplying their daily receipts.

Let's say that this store brings in \$10,000 a day, and has a close business relationship with a bank (mutual ownership is the usual case). The bank takes the store's deposits and, using fractional reserve principals, multiplies the money times ten, thus giving the effect of the store having brought in \$100,000 that day but, only having the expenses involved in a \$10,000 business! I think you could say this is a rather profitable business transaction. Now, it is not as simple as I make it sound. After all, appearances must be kept up!

But appearances notwithstanding, this is the effect of what happens; they multiply the daily receipts of a store like WalMart by a factor of ten. Tell me, how does the average shop keeper compete with that? Of course, they can't, so the average shopkeeper in America starts to disappear, and instead, finds himself, his wife and his children working for the multi-national giant for next to nothing when before he and his family were a pillar in the community, and a source of jobs for others. And a source of income for the craftsmen as well.

The same is true of the farmers in America. Where have they all gone? When you couple the banking relationship the multi-national corporations enjoy with the taxation of the land in America, you quickly see why no money can be made dealing in the real wealth of the nation. And you understand how ultimate control of America will be accomplished, and why so many will starve to death here. Multi-national corporations have very few feelings for the suffering of individuals, and are concerned only with the bottom line. And, once again, the people who were the source of income for the craftsmen are gone, and so are the craftsmen.

There is a lot more to this story, but you will learn more as we go on. Please read the following at least twice, even if you think you really understand the monetary system.

Part VII is an explanation of Money, so you can easily grasp the Biblical principals involved, and why His Law is so pure!

THE FEDERAL RESERVE

I.E., THE FED

Another proposal advanced by Paul Warburg at Jekyll Island was the manner of selection of administrators for the proposed regional reserve system. Senator Nelson Ald-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

rich had insisted that the officials should be appointive, not elected, and that Congress should have no role in their selection. His Capitol Hill experience had taught him that Congressional opinion would often be inimical to the Wall Street interests, as Congressmen from the West and South might wish to demonstrate to their constituents that they were protecting them against the Eastern bankers.

Warburg responded that the administrators of the proposed central banks should be subject to executive approval by the President. This patent removal of the system from Congressional control meant that the Federal Reserve proposal was unconstitutional from its inception, because the Federal Reserve System was to be a bank of issue. Article 1, Sec. 8, Par. 5 of the Constitution expressly charges Congress with “the power to coin money and regulate the value thereof.” Warburg’s plan would deprive Congress of its sovereignty, and the systems of checks and balances of power set up by Thomas Jefferson in the Constitution would now be destroyed. (Author’s note: This was quoted from page 6 of Eustace Mullin’s book, *The Secrets of the Federal Reserve*. And, of course, as we know and understand the true, and hidden meaning, of the Constitution, it is in error. However, the basic premise of the information is as valid today as it was when Eustace Mullins wrote it.)

The Constitution for the United States of America was written to provide a means whereby the People of the united States of America, could be preyed upon by the federal government for the benefit of the those who would, through treaties never revealed to the People at large, control that same federal government. That is the reality of the situation. Therefore, the only reason for the federal government to move to increase its own power and reach is to fulfill the mandates of those unrevealed treaties, and to benefit the men they have freely given their allegiance too. The sole purpose of these actions is to violate (rape) the citizens of the United States of America. This can only occur after the Citizens of the united States are fooled into becoming citizens of the United States. It’s that simple. Actually, its even simpler than that. The Constitution was the King’s (Crown’s) answer to the Declaration of Independence, thereby establishing a Crown Colony to be known as the United States, to be placed in Washington, DC, a part of Virginia (see the Virginia Charter of 1606), and directly opposed to the united States of the Declaration of Independence.

And the Declaration of Independence was what reversed the Biblical curse of I Samuel 8:18, where we demanded a King, just as all the other nations had a king. Thus turning our backs on the True King of the Earth; the Christ.

I know this is a lot to take in just the first page. However, nothing else explains the First Bank of the United States, chartered by the federal government in 1792, nor the rest of the information you are going to read about in this report.

And make no mistake in thinking that the men in Washington, DC, do not willingly serve their hidden masters. America, properly led and motivated by the Truth, could easily fend off all the armies of the world in the protection of her shores, and her People would willingly serve in such endeavors. Instead, the men in Washington, DC, deliberately sell their People out for greed, ambition, and power; in other words, MONEY. One of the most visible ways in which they do this is called the Federal Reserve System, and the forced use by the People of America of credit as money. Credit created by the fa-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

vored few at the stroke of a pen, that the favored few can live idly.

And make no other mistake about what you are about to learn, the issue of credit, issued by the stroke of a pen by the favored few, the moneyed few who conspire to control those with the guns, is as simple as I wrote above, that the few may live idly. As Scripture says, The love of money is the root of all evil.

IT'S PRIVATELY OWNED

Now let's establish one point: The Federal Reserve is privately owned. This is not open to debate. Just look it up in any encyclopedia or in the phone book. Not only that, but the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals ruled on this issue in 1983, declaring that, indeed, the Federal Reserve is privately owned (At issue was the demand by Federal Reserve employees for access to government pensions, which are much more generous than private pensions). You should ask right now, "Heavens sake! What's the court doing ruling on such an issue? You're either privately owned or you're not!" Of course, you would be absolutely right to ask such a question.

That would be true unless the Federal Reserve has something to hide, perhaps? If you are a privately owned bank with nothing to hide and someone asks, "Are you privately owned?" you forthrightly step forward and reply "Yes, we are. What's the question?" That is unless you have something to hide.

That brings to mind the deceptive name: Federal Reserve. Do you think the name was used by accident or for a reason? Perhaps, Federal Reserve was used as the name of that privately owned bank in order to be sure that a vast majority of American's never realized that the agency controlling all of their money, credit and interest rates was a private monopoly controlled by those best situated to take advantage of them. Furthermore, I'm sure that those same Americans are not supposed to know that most of the control of the Federal Reserve is from overseas and that the United States Government (actually, the United States government is a private (Crown) corporation as well) literally exercises no control or oversight of the privately owned Federal Reserve at all!

With human nature being what human nature is and with this type of power being unquestionably open to abuse, the Federal Reserve has never been audited by the government. Can you believe that it hasn't been audited, not once since its inception in 1913? Why? The government has no authority to do so! This is what members of the federal government will often times tell you is why they don't push for an audit of the FED. Of course, what those same members of the federal government then fail to finish explaining to Americans is that since Congress established the Federal Reserve with an Act of Congress, Congress can take the authority to audit the FED at any time it chooses to do so. OOPS! Wrong! See what happens when you don't know what the meaning and intent behind the hidden treaties really is? Any attempt to interfere with the FED is an outright violation of the Peace Treaty of 1783, and undoubtedly others as well.

To see to it further that the FED would never have to answer any questions, the Federal Reserve is also exempt from income taxes, both State and Federal, but not property tax, which really blows a hole in the argument that the Federal Reserve is a governmental or quasi-governmental agency. How much property tax does the Post Office Department, a true quasi-governmental agency pay? Zero!

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

THE CENTRAL BANKS OF THE WORLD

You may be very interested to know that the Federal Reserve Bank is effectively controlled by the same families that control the privately owned Bank of England, the Reichsbank (Germany's Central Bank), the Bank of Italy and the Bank of France. Do you believe that it is by chance that such deceptive names are used in each case? Or can it be said that the use of such deceptive names in so many cases constitutes a definable pattern?

What pattern? This is a pattern of deliberate deception of the people of each nation where the banks are located, and ultimately, all the people of the world. How? The men who control the central bank of any nation are the true rulers of that nation. You'll see exactly what I mean as we go along. When you finally begin to get a grasp of this deliberate deception of the people of the world about the creation of money and couple that grasp with an understanding, as explained in this report, of how our economic system actually works, the truth about the ocean of debt our world is swimming in becomes painfully clear. This understanding also brings the New World Order into a painfully sharper focus.

Paul Warburg is credited with writing the Federal Reserve Act. He came to America from Europe in 1902 where the Warburg's family banking house of M. M. Warburg Company, along with the Rothschilds, was and is the principal stockholders of Germany's privately owned Central Bank, the Reichsbank (Author's note: Are you shocked that a European banker set up America's central bank?) For a man to be in this country for the very short time he was prior to the enactment of the Federal Reserve Act and for him to have the immense impact that he did on this nation speaks volumes for the organization that was involved in the effort to saddle America with a Central Bank There are a number of sources where you can read about the history of the continual fight that has gone on since before 1764 to saddle America with privately issued money upon which usury (interest) is charged.

THE ROTHSCHILDS

The Rothschilds family has been a constant through all of that time, while America struggled for peace and prosperity, generally working through the Bank of England. To give you an idea of the Rothschilds' power in the nineteenth century, they had more money than most of the nations of Europe put together. In fact, the only customers large enough to be worth their time and attention were sovereign nations, where they could get special privileges with the granting of their loans. According to the Jewish Encyclopedia, Vol. X, (1909 edition), on page 496, in the year 1848, the Paris bank of the Rothschilds was reckoned to be worth 600,000,000 francs, as against 352,000,000 francs held by all the other Paris bankers. The Paris house of the Rothschilds made one loan to France of 250,000,000 francs in 1847, and their list of customers includes virtually every nation in Europe and stretches across the Atlantic to South America as well. (It is important to note that the Rothschilds do not loan gold or silver out. They only deal in their paper credit, but often require that interest payments to them be made in gold and/or silver.)

The Federal Reserve Act, the basis for the existence of the Federal Reserve System, passed on Monday, December 22, 1913. It passed by a vote in the House of Representatives of 282-60 and in the Senate by a vote of 43-23. You can note from the statistics con-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

cerning those who voted that many members of Congress were not present for the vote. In the Senate alone, thirty members were absent. It has been shown that the vote on this bill was rushed through after many of those not in favor of passage had left for Christmas. I can assure you all those in favor of passage were kept informed and were present. It is fairly easy to see that debate before the full Senate, after the holidays, would probably have led to defeat of the measure just as an earlier version of the Federal Reserve Act, the Aldrich Plan, had died in Congress because of strong opposition. You can read in any number of books about how the money kings' man in the White House, Woodrow Wilson, signed the Federal Reserve Act the day it was passed by Congress.

THE CONSTITUTION LIMITS POWER OF THE CENTRAL GOVERNMENT?

An important aspect of the Constitution that most citizens do not realize is that the full power and existence of the federal government flows from the Constitution. Unlike the Citizens of the United States, who retain all power, the federal government has no powers except those specifically spelled out in the Constitution. One of the most important aspects of the Constitution is that Congress has no authority over any individual, who does not voluntarily contract with/reside in an area which is under the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress. This is a very important concept in law, and it is called jurisdiction (jurisdiction is simply a claim of ownership: God's jurisdiction, or man's jurisdiction; you ARE in one or the other). This limiting of the power and of the jurisdiction of the federal government occurred because the People of the United States were armed and willing to enforce the principles of Biblical freedom with those arms.

The difference between this Constitution and all others of the earth is that the central government retained only a small piece of exclusive jurisdiction (Article I, Section 8, Clause 17), over the ten miles square area to be known as Washington, DC.

I am directly referring to all other constitutions such as the UN's Constitution and the Soviet Union's Constitution, which specifically retain all rights and all powers for the central government in all areas whatsoever. When the media begins telling you about other constitutions under which people are forced to live, don't be fooled into comparing those documents which grant rights, in other words privileges, to the people and reserve all other powers to the respective governments with this Constitution. All powers, not specifically laid out as belonging to the federal government, are reserved to the several states or for the People of this nation and this is acknowledged by the Constitution. Those powers and rights are acknowledged by our Organic Law (Declaration of Independence) as coming from God.

This means that the federal government can never have a legal right to violate any provision of the Constitution. So when the government moves to violate the Constitution, as it did when it created the Federal Reserve System and forced it on the rest of the nation or when it adopted the Fourteenth Amendment (as well as most other Amendments), it is not only attacking the Rights of the People directly, it is also enlarging its own powers in the only manner by which the government can, by violating the Constitution. The secret behind what is going on is that they must then have the People contract into their exclusive jurisdiction before the appearance of legalisms can be established.

It is also very important to understand that Rights come from God, and privileges come from man (government). Rights can not be taxed nor can they be taken away. Rights

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

have to be voluntarily given up, as in voluntary compliance (voluntary compliance simply means that you voluntarily contracted with the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress). Privileges are always taxed, and they can be taken away or restricted at the whim of man. Remember this when you read about property taxes or any other taxes you pay. It is also true in America that all taxes are contractual in nature unless they were spelled out clearly in the Constitution, such as excises, imposts and duties.

This brings us to the natural and expected manner of how a tyranny is established in a republic which is supposedly under the Law. If you wish to control the government, you must control those with the power to do what you wish to have done. You should note how much easier it is to control the Presidency (one election every four years) than Congress, with 535 elections to control. Thus, we find that the removal of the Federal Reserve from oversight by Congress to a form of oversight by the President was accomplished. Since the term of a member of the Federal Reserve Board runs for fourteen years, it would be impossible for a President to have any real impact on the board of the Federal Reserve, even if he were so inclined.

It should also be noted here that each President, no matter which so-called political party he claimed to be a member of, has ALWAYS appointed the men recommended by the bankers to serve on this board. Since this is just like appointing the wolf to tend the sheep, why would we be surprised at the result? I refer you to Richard Kelly Hoskin's memorable book, *The Wolf and The Sheep*, The Virginia Publishing Company, P. O. Box 997, Lynchburg, Virginia 24505.

DOES THE FEDERAL RESERVE SYSTEM REPRESENT THE ENTIRE NATION?

One of the claims about the Federal Reserve System is that the twelve regional reserve banks adequately represent the entire nation. This is totally false. The New York Reserve Bank dominates the entire system just as the founders of the system knew it would. It could work no other way, as that is where the money is, and that is where the money markets are. However, to be sure that this would be exactly the result of the Federal Reserve Act, the manner in which the Federal Reserve system is set up to operate in guarantees that the Federal Reserve Bank of New York controls the system. In *Secrets of the Federal Reserve* by Eustace Mullins, you can find chart after chart to trace out who are the true owners of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York. These charts are necessary because the true owners are very well hidden. You do not have to hide something if it is not ill used!

It has been my experience that things are hidden for a reason, just as lies are told for a reason. I have a letter, dated December 30, 1992, from Henry B. Gonzalez, Chairman of the Committee on Banking, Finance and Urban Affairs of the House of Representatives, to a gentleman in California. In this letter, Mr. Gonzalez says, "...the Federal Reserve is a Government agency."

I deduce from this letter that Mr. Gonzalez is either a fool or a liar. Which would you rather have representing you in Congress; a fool or a liar? Given that Mr. Gonzalez is chairman of the US House of Representatives' Committee on Banking, Finance and Urban Affairs, I'd guess he probably knew the truth but has some reason to lie. Would you believe a member of the government would lie to you? Does he tell that lie to protect you or the government? No, he lies to protect the Federal Reserve, which makes you wonder

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

for whom he really works, doesn't it? Approximately six weeks after Mr. Gonzalez answered the letter we noted above, he gave a speech in Congress containing this information:

“The Federal Reserve Board, which is really not a federal agency, though it was created by the Congress, is really a creature of the commercial banking system, the commercial banks” (Author's note: This was taken from the Congressional Record; House for February 16, 1993, page H 622).

Could we say that Mr. Gonzalez thinks that he can give different facts to different people, depending on what he believes their level of gullibility to be? Reality, Truth, is never different.

Is this an isolated instance? I have another letter from a member of the government. This one is from Senator Hank Brown of Colorado. I note paragraph five, particularly the phrase: “The government-run Federal Reserve...” The only truth contained in paragraph five is the statement that The Department of the Treasury prints what “our” government refers to as “money” (Author's note: Please refer to the legal definition of money contained in Black's Law Dictionary). What Senator Brown doesn't tell anyone is that, while The Department of the Treasury prints what he refers to as money, i.e., Federal Reserve Notes, The Department of the Treasury does not issue this money, but almost literally gives it to the Federal Reserve, which can and does loan it back to the government with interest attached. You will see exactly what I mean as we go along. Everything else in paragraph five of this letter is, in my opinion, deliberately misleading or an outright lie. Of course, former Senator Hank Brown is a lawyer, so what else can be expected?

To take this a step further, in the February 20, 1993, Casper Star Tribune, Casper, Wyoming, there was an Associated Press story about the Federal Reserve entitled “Greenspan Says Federal Reserve Will Play Crucial Role in Recovery.” In the story, it said: “Federal Reserve Chairman Alan Greenspan, whose agency...” Is the word agency, instead of corporation or bank, leading citizens to assume that this is a Federal Agency? Is this a deliberate lie, or once again, the act of a fool? Can we assume that the AP writer in Washington does not know what the Federal Reserve is and that none of his supervisors do either? Or is this an attempt to continue to delude the American people? You figure it out for yourself because I know what I understand and comprehend. If what I know and comprehend is not true, then why do they continually try to mislead us?

It would be very beneficial for you to inquire into the ownership and management of AP. You could be in for a shocking surprise. Reality will do that to you. You can check the important parts of the management of most of the major media in America quite easily.

TO INDEBT A NATION

The FED was created in order to “...indebt a nation.” Before the FED came into being, it was virtually impossible for the government to borrow any meaningful (in other words, large) amounts of money. Why? It is because the money just did not exist. A method had to be set up whereby large sums of money could be created to be borrowed and spent and, incidentally, owed. You'll see shortly what I mean by created. By the way, if you don't understand money and wealth and the tremendous difference between them, it may prove to be instructive for you to study this subject:

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

MONEY, as most understand it, is an exchange item whereby wealth is passed back and forth among the People.

WEALTH is what provides for the necessities of living for the People, i.e., food, shelter, clothing, tools, etc.

As a related subject, you may find it instructive to study the origins of World War I. It is very important for you to understand that World War I was impossible without the existence of the Federal Reserve. The nations of Europe were broke, and the burden of taxation on their citizens was already extreme. One of the subjects of my study addresses the absolute idiocy of there always being enough money for a war to be waged, but never enough money to take care of the needs of the citizens of a nation. This situation occurs, of course, because the bankers and their friends, who benefit from the waging of war, are permitted to control the creation of money as they see fit and for whatever purposes they decide are worthy of being pursued, such as buying warships, guns and bullets from the corporations they control.

The only citizens available to be set-up to be indebted and taxed so that World War I could be waged were the citizens of Russia and the Citizens of the United States. The Czar of Russia refused to permit the International Bankers into Russia so they could install their scheme of economic slavery. In 1923, Lenin invited the International Bankers, the Rothschilds, Rockefellers, Warburgs and their ilk, to be partners in the new Central Bank of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics. This is reality. The people of Russia, supposedly freed from Communism, will now, in the 1990s and beyond, be crushed with a burden of unpayable debts, which will be an excuse for endless taxation while their natural resources are raped and pillaged by the Elite. This taxation is for the benefit of the money kings who invented Communism as one more tool to begin with. The new reality of the citizens of Russia is now identical to ours. Are you confused on this issue? Who do you suppose benefits from all of the taxes paid in this country and who do you suppose owns the oil and gas companies, the big mines and much of the industrial sector of America? You know, all of the major polluters?

MONEY: THE HEART OF THE ISSUE

I have a number of letters written to a gentleman named Byron Dale from The United States Department of the Treasury, which is actually part of the federal government. These letters from the Treasury are Treasury's replies, in letter form, to letters of inquiry, which were addressed to the Treasury by Mr. Dale. These letters from the Treasury are very eye-opening and will give us an insight into our economic system we would never get in any other way. I will be quoting quite extensively from these letters, because they prove, quite conclusively, that our present monetary system is completely fraudulent. Remember and note this very well: Do not think for one moment that most of your elected officials to federal office do not understand this.

In a letter of November 1, 1982, from the Department of the Treasury, Office of the General Counsel, to Mr. Dale, paragraph four states:

If the money supply is to be increased, money must be created. The Federal Reserve Board (or "the Fed" as it is often called) has several ways of allowing money to be created, but the actual creation of money always involves the extension of credit by pri-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

vate commercial banks.

Pretty simple, isn't it? Of course, you must know the legal definition of "money" in order to really understand the deliberate deception used in these letters. "Office of the General Counsel" means lawyer, so you can be assured that the person who wrote this letter knew and understood the legal meaning of the term "money". Let's break this paragraph down:

If the money supply is to be increased, money must be created.

That's fairly straight forward, but let's always keep in mind that this letter refers to Federal Reserve Notes (all bank deposits in America are denominated in Federal Reserve Notes) as money. This also confirms what I said above about "money" (in other words, some type of medium of exchange) having to be created in order to be owed (interesting concept, that any man has the power to create). A little further on, you will see how all money must be borrowed into existence, or created in other words.

In paragraph two of the same letter, it says:

The board of Governors of the Federal Reserve System has the responsibility for determining United States monetary policy...

This is correct. A privately owned bank which operates for profit, and in the best interest of its owners who are not, for the most part, citizens of the United States, sets all monetary policy of the United States, including increasing or decreasing the supply of money. The ability to decrease the supply of money is every bit as important as the ability to increase the supply of money.

Let's examine the last sentence of the second paragraph of this letter very closely:

Since our economy has grown between 1913 when the Federal Reserve System was founded and the present, this ordinarily means that the Board determines the rate of increase in the money supply.

Notice the two words, ordinarily means. This is an admission that the Federal Reserve also decreases the money supply.

They confirm this on page four of the same letter:

That is how the Federal Reserve helps to decrease or increase the money supply.

The word helps is extremely misleading. The Federal Reserve controls the increase or decrease of the money supply to the penny. Paragraph four continues like this:

The Federal Reserve Board has several ways of allowing money to be created.

You will notice that nowhere in this sentence does it say after consultation or with permission. They need not ask for permission nor do they answer to anyone before making any decisions. Paragraph four continues in this way:

...but the actual creation of money always involves the extension of credit by private commercial banks.

This sentence gets the award, best sentence or part of a sentence in a letter, in this report, or written in this century! As I stated above, all money must be borrowed into existence. That is what this sentence says: "...actual creation of money ALWAYS involves the extension of credit (debt)..." BY PRIVATE COMMERCIAL BANKS! The so-called government does not issue ANY money at all into circulation!

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

If you cannot create a medium of exchange (money) except by extending credit (debt), then there is nothing in existence except debt! How do you pay off the debt if nothing exists except debt? The answer, of course, is that you can not. Rest assured, this is not a state of affairs which has occurred by chance.

There is another interesting aspect to this which a man revealed to me. Several economists were lecturing businessmen on the evils of the government issuing too much money and thus creating inflation. The man who spoke to me, during the Question and Answer period, simply asked how it was that a government that issued money to pay its lawful debts could be in debt? At that time, to the tune of 4.5 billion dollars. Needless to say, the so-called economists had no answer and the question put an end to the conference!

It has been said, "You cannot borrow yourself rich." Yet, this is exactly the situation in which most of the citizens of America find themselves. It is impossible for us to have any type of prosperity without borrowing the money into existence, which allows prosperity to occur. Prosperity for a nation is absolutely dependent upon an adequate supply of a medium of exchange! This is the function of money: to allow the exchange of wealth to be easily accomplished within a community so that the community or nation may prosper.

OUR "MONEY" IS NOTHING BUT DEBT!

The only thing which we here in America may use for money under our present system, is debt. Every dollar must be borrowed into existence for the exchange of wealth to be facilitated within our nation. Since every dollar must be borrowed into existence, the natural corollary to this is that every dollar has interest attached to it for every moment that dollar exists. Once you understand compound interest, it is easy to see how this will lead to massive amounts of debt. And not just the so-called national debt, but the accumulated debt of every man, woman, child and business in America as everyone desperately attempts to borrow enough credit to keep themselves and their family afloat.

Always remember: Webster's Dictionary defines truth as "conformity to fact or reality." If what you are reading here conforms to or matches the reality of what is occurring in America, then perhaps you had better give it some serious thought. Do not permit convoluted answers to such simple questions and facts to sway your judgment. The easiest way to hide something this simple is to bury it with megaton words and ridicule.

On page two of the same letter we have been discussing, dated November 1, 1982, in paragraph two, these three interesting sentences are found:

A private commercial bank which has just received extra reserves from the Fed (by borrowing reserves for example) can make roughly six dollars in loans for every one dollar in reserves it obtains from the FED. How does it get six dollars from one dollar? It simply makes bookkeeping entries for its loan customers saying "You have a deposit of six dollars with us."

The very essence of this is that when you borrow money from your local bank, you are paying the bank interest on nothing. A bookkeeping entry to your checking account is the only basis the bank has for charging you interest. You are now beginning to understand how bankers can afford the monuments they build for themselves to house their headquarters. They are being built, not from the interest you pay to them, but from the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

same type of deposits I just described, being put into the banks' own accounts. In other words, their monuments cost them virtually nothing.

Nothing!

To understand fully the nothing aspect of what we mistakenly call money here in America, there was a very interesting article written by Jo Hindman. It was published in the Central Valley, California, Valley Times, on May 15, 1969. This story was titled "\$1,000 Bill Worth Less Than A 10 Cent Trading Stamp" and was inserted in the Congressional Record on May 22, 1969, by Congressman John Rarick of Louisiana:

A recent court ruling that affects your money reveals that the Federal Reserve credit and currency—the same as you are earning and spending—has no lawful value.

It came about this way: a bank foreclosed by advertisement on a borrower's note, I bought the property (loan's collateral) at a Sheriff's sale, sued to acquire possession of the real estate in a case titled: First National Bank of Montgomery (Minn.) vs. Jerome Daly.

Martin V. Mahoney, Justice of the Peace, Credit River Township, Scott County (Minn.), presided at the jury trial on December 7, 1968. The jury found the note and mortgage to be void for failure of a lawful consideration; also the jury refused to give any validity to the Sheriff's sale. The bank lost. Jerome Daly, the defendant, won and kept his land.

The president of the bank, which is within the Federal Reserve System, admitted in testimony that the bank "created" the money/credit by a bookkeeping entry, the so-called consideration for the note and mortgage deed; also that no US law or statute existed that gave the bank the right to create money in that manner. Handing down the Judgment, Justice Mahoney said that "only God can create something of value out of nothing."

The bank tried to appeal the case. The appeal fee of \$2 was offered by the bank, using two Federal Reserve Notes. These were likewise declared unlawful and void. The bank agent failed to appear at a hearing on January 22, 1969, and the appeal was dropped.

By comparison, a humble trading stamp is worth more than a \$1 bill (Federal Reserve Note), or even a \$1000 Federal Reserve Note. The two bills differ only in denomination and perhaps engraved design, each has paper-and-ink value of a fraction of a cent. On the other hand, basic trading stamps—the gold, the blue, the green—each has face value of one mill. Superior to paper money (FR notes), trading stamps have redemptive value in the merchandise offered in the stamp companies' catalog. The Fed's currency cannot be converted into the gold or silver it purports to represent, and can only be exchanged for more of the same—paper or cheap clad-copper coins.

Fantastic? Remember the foregoing Daly case: A United States court prevented the bank's attempt to redeem its worthless note by seizing Daly's valuable land.

The practice works if nobody objects. Do you object to working 23 hours (three days) to pay for a new suit? Or two weeks to buy an automatic washing machine while a Federal Reserve banker needs only to uncap his pen to create and to multiply fiat dollars a thousand fold? Fiat means money cannot be converted into metal coins—gold or silver, etc.

Worse, the Federal Reserve System is a private corporation, not a federal agency,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

despite its name and the 1913 Act that blessed it. This means that private individuals profit from the fraud and the deceit practiced in the name of the FED.

Within months Judge Mahoney was dead. He died from a heart attack brought on by what the coroner said were “unusual circumstances at the death scene and the controversy he was involved in at the time.”

As *The Eagle*, a newspaper in Yakima, Washington, said in its issue of September 11, 1969: “Whether he was given a whiff of prussic acid or handed a fatal cigarette is not known at this time, but the possibility is certainly more than idle speculation. The international conspiracy, which owns and controls our Federal Reserve System, and which has brought our nation to the brink of the most cataclysmic financial crash in history, is understandably unhappy with the earthy judge whose name is Mahoney. The case and its outcome has sent quivers and spasms up and down the entire trunk lines and tentacles of the conspiracy as literally thousands of people across the nation have challenged the duplicity of the king-makers over the thievery of their hard-earned wealth.”

Jerome Daly, the winning attorney in the above case, also got three men off who were accused of counterfeiting Federal Reserve Notes. How? He did this by proving the FED notes have no more value than the supposedly counterfeit notes. Both are nothing but paper. Shortly after winning this case, Mr. Daly lost his license (read this as his Bar registration) to practice law. Of course, I’m sure that the loss of Mr. Daly’s license to practice law, after winning these two landmark cases, was just a coincidence, just as the fact that his license under the BAR (British Accreditation Regency: Esquire) is from the Crown, i.e., the City of London. The financial district of London, a supranational jurisdiction of the world (i.e., New World Order).

THE CREATION OF MONEY BY THE GOVERNMENT

Now let’s carry this creation of money to another level, to that of the government. The Department of the Treasury executes a bond for one billion dollars, or whatever amount, and the Federal Reserve “pays for them with a check on itself” (Author’s note: This phrase is stated on page three of the same letter from The Department of the Treasury from which we have been quoting, paragraph five). The Federal Reserve covers this check by creating a bank deposit from nothing and presents it to the federal government as lawful funds. Now, it does not matter if the presentation to the government of these so-called lawful funds (lawful only by statute, not by Law, and applicable only to those under the authority of Congress) is through the direct purchases of government securities from the Department of the Treasury by the FED, or through purchases of government securities from private entities by the FED; the result is the same.

Just Whom Does this System Benefit?

Never doubt for one moment that every bond sold by the federal government, to individuals or to private banks, will end up being in the possession of the Federal Reserve. Yes, some will be cashed or rolled over by those who own the bonds, but the simple truth of the system is that all debt instruments migrate to the top of this system, and all debt will eventually be owned by a very small, very rich group of men. Please remember that all “notes” are debt instruments, as in Federal Reserve Notes! The underlying methodology of this system allows for no other possible result except that all wealth

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

becomes concentrated in a very few hands. This small group of very rich men will own all of the banks and all of the bonds of the federal government at some point in the not too distant future. The local bankers who believe that this system benefits them look like pretty foolish businessmen once this is understood. Sounds very profitable, doesn't it? Creating money from nothing? But remember, the Federal Reserve Banks don't have to acknowledge any profit because they are not taxable!

In that same letter, on page two, paragraph three, it states:

You may want to know whether the bank is the one getting the benefit of the new money, since the bank owns the new money while the customer has merely borrowed the money. The bank does indeed get the benefit of the new money.

This has to be one of the worst understatements ever to be made in the history of the world. However, while this letter is referring to your bank, the same holds true for the PRIVATELY owned Federal Reserve Bank and the loans they make to the federal government!

Listen as the same source explains how the FED controls the amount of money in reserve in the system. This is found on page three, in paragraph four:

The Fed has several ways of controlling the total amount of reserves in the system. One has already been mentioned, namely the fact that the Federal Reserve Banks can lend reserves to the private, commercial banks. To do this, the Federal Reserve Bank simply makes a new entry on its books showing that the borrowing bank has more dollars in its account with the Federal Reserve Bank (i.e. its "reserve account").

This confirms what I just said: "The Federal Reserve Bank simply makes a new entry on its books." All money, or rather, what we have been fooled into accepting as money, used in America today is created from nothing, and all of this so-called money has interest attached to it.

HOW SIMPLE IS THIS STORY?

This is how simple the entire story of America's economic system really is. As you are reading, remember that this is the system that economists try to convince you is so complicated that you, the average person, could never understand it. When your government borrows one billion dollars (or whatever amount) from the Federal Reserve, International Bankers (the Insiders; the money kings) pay for the bond with a bookkeeping entry and pocket the entire amount as a permanent mortgage on the productive capacity of every American. This permanent mortgage is then used as the excuse for endless taxation!

This unpayable debt is then used as a justification for the massive income taxes, real estate taxes, license fees, and all other forms of tax in America extorted from the American people for the benefit of the International Bankers. They not only collect the interest on nothing as your local banker does, they get to keep the principal as well as a PERMANENT MORTGAGE on our nation! This is why stories that report how the FED forgave interest on the national debt are disseminated to confuse, mislead and placate the American public. Think about this: If you were the beneficiary of such a system (the International Bankers), is there anything you wouldn't do to protect the system? Is there any place you would draw the line? With that kind of money, which you would receive for

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

nothing, is there anything you could not arrange or any person you could not afford to buy? Do you think, perhaps, some people were bought to enable such a system to be put upon the backs of the American public and TO ENABLE IT TO REMAIN HIDDEN?

UNPAYABLE DEBT!

Let me give you something else to consider, something which is very important and goes right to the heart of this matter. Up above, I mentioned unpayable debt. Let me explain to you exactly what I mean. Tomorrow, you go down to your local bank and borrow \$10,000. As we've already seen, there is actually no money in the bank, except for a few miscellaneous savings accounts and CDs plus whatever balances exist at any given moment in the banking system's checking accounts. So to complete your transaction, the bank creates \$10,000 and credits it to your checking account (Author's note: It is allowed to do this by statute, not by Law. Actually illegal or not, this action is totally immoral. And it is a little more brazen than what I am portraying. The bank really steals the note you sign at the bank and converts it to the banks asset).

In return for the creation of this so-called money, you execute a note for \$10,000 at 10% interest, due in one year and present it to the bank. The bank creates the \$10,000 by a stroke of a pen and puts it in your account, basing the \$10,000 on the promissory note you turned over to the bank, which is actually the only legal tender in this transaction (Author's note: The bank actually takes your created money, the promissory note, and loans it back to you!) Did you ever wonder why banks required you to have an account? It is the only way they can create the money! In one year to the day, you return to the bank and pay them the \$10,000 back. This completes the bookkeeping on the original creation of \$10,000. It was created one year ago, and it is destroyed by your return of the funds.

THE EXPLANATION FOR UNPAYABLE DEBTS

Hold it! Kings-X! Time-out! Take a break. I can see the smirks from here. That comes from talking about this for so many years and watching people's reaction when I tell them the money disappears. Money can't just appear and disappear! I mean, get real! But it CAN just appear and disappear when you use a debt-based money. That's what we use: money based on debt. If we don't have debt, we don't have money. When the debt disappears, so must the money disappear!

Part of the proof that our money is debt-based is right on the front of every piece of Federal Reserve currency. They are called Federal Reserve Notes. What is a note? What do you sign down at the bank? Right, you sign a note, which in the case of Federal Reserve Notes are obligations of the Federal Reserve Bank (and of the United States government), just as United States Notes are promises to pay issued by our government.

Just how twisted and diabolical is this system? Or should the question be: "How stupid are we?" It's a Federal Reserve Note. It's an obligation of the Federal Reserve! **THE PRIVATELY OWNED BANK OWES THE MONEY, AND WE PAY INTEREST ON IT!** This is true of all bank deposits. We pay interest on what the banks owe us for because every bit of our money has to be borrowed into existence!

Additional proof that money disappears comes from Report No. 83-125E Congressional Research Service, Library of Congress. On page 29, we read these words:

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Money is created when loans are issued and debts incurred; money is extinguished when loans are repaid.

A loan from a bank creates a deposit which the borrower may draw upon for the payment of obligations; the payee is the new holder of new money.

Some existing money in circulation must be acquired by the borrower to repay the capital of the loan; when that is returned to the bank it is withdrawn from circulation.

Do you remember what I told you? This is the real difference between the FED and your local bank, and this is something that your local banker doesn't even understand. When you repay your loan to the local banker, he loses the ability to collect interest on those funds. The FED requires your local banker to collect on all debt instruments and extinguish them. The FED, however, will never lose the ability to collect interest on the money it has loaned to your government because that debt is unpayable. You'll see what I mean shortly after we finish with disappearing money.

Since it, the money, did not exist until you borrowed it and put it into circulation in the economy, it can hardly exist after the destruction of the original note, its means of creation. This is the explanation of the real problem with our system. We do not have a permanent monetary system in use within America at this time. We have one, which is detailed within the Constitution, but Congress refuses to use it and, instead, insists on paying interest on every dollar they or we spend. The members of Congress insist on paying interest to the International Bankers because we allow them to make that decision by our not understanding how the system works! This means that the amount of money (debt) in existence at any given time is solely at the whim of private, international bankers whose motto is "the end justifies the means" and "might makes right."

Mark this well: the men we are dealing with tell nothing but lies. If "might makes right" were the truth, then the Roman Empire, or else the British Empire, would still exist! Once a few greedy families had monopolized all the wealth of the known world during the time of the Roman Empire, the Empire collapsed. This is because "might flows to right." The biggest fear of the super rich Elite is that the people, who are "the might," will begin to wake up, and the world will see kings beheaded as in days of yore. In their fear, they begin to make the same mistakes anyone can find recorded all through history as they clamp their rule tighter and tighter around the citizens, not only of America, but of the world. It is impossible for the few to govern the many without the consent of the many, for any extended period of time. These men know this very well. However, their egos and fear are their worst enemies and our eternal hope.

PRIVATE CONTROL OF THE PERMITTED AMOUNT OF DEBT

This private control of the amount of debt permitted to be in existence at any given time also explains why our money supply expands and contracts. As loans flow freely and debts are incurred, the money supply expands and creates artificial good times, good times which can only last as long as the money supply lasts. As wealth is freely exchanged among the people of the nation because of an adequate supply of a medium of exchange and as prosperity expands, debts begin to be repaid in the private sector (since the government can never repay any debts while this system is permitted to exist). The money supply begins to fall as payments are made to private banks which ex-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

tinguish the money as it is received by them, except for the interest they collect. The nation then experiences a recession as the supply of a medium of exchange (money) falls below the level, which is necessary for the nation to achieve an adequate exchange of wealth in order for prosperity to continue. We are in an unfortunate position, here in America, where there is no free, permanent money in circulation in our nation except for a small amount called United States Notes dating from the Civil War.

Of course, one of the most important controlling factors on the supply of money in America is the amount of interest which the private commercial banks are permitted to charge to their customers by the Federal Reserve. This is why, when interest rates are held down, job creation and prosperity become so common in America. Low interest rates permit a reasonable amount of prosperity to occur because there is an adequate supply of money created for circulation. Higher interest rates are used by the Federal Reserve in order to break the cycle of good times and permit the friends of the owners of the FED to prey upon the people of America who are not able to borrow enough money to enable them to maintain their payments to the banks.

A BOOKKEEPING SYSTEM FOR DEBT

To explain this a little better, remember that a debt-based monetary system is actually just a bookkeeping system for debt. Since the “actual creation of money always involves the extension of credit by private commercial banks,” nothing exists except debt! That’s what always means: always! This means that the creation of money can not happen any other way!

“...always involves the extension of credit...” Here, credit equals debt. Therefore, the only money available to operate our economy is the amount of debt available each year. You must never stop borrowing or have your credit shut off, or you have a recession. In an extreme case, a Depression will be created. Since our monetary system is actually nothing but a bookkeeping system for debt, all entries must balance. When you borrow money, a bookkeeping entry is made to create the funds. When you pay the money back, a corresponding entry is made to destroy the funds. It can’t work any other way.

But wait! Let’s go back to when you borrowed that \$10,000 from the bank. When you repaid the \$10,000, it disappeared. But now the \$10,000 you owed has a tail, a tail called interest. That is the \$1,000 that you owe to the bank for the use of its bookkeeping entry. Actually, after you understand how the system works, you will see that this is what you owe to the bank for the use of their nothing. From where did this interest that you are paying to the bank come? The bank didn’t create it. They only created the original \$10,000. So who created it? Did you? And I’m not talking about your labor.

Have you the authority to create money? No? Then, from where did the \$1,000 come? We already realize that the \$1,000 was never created, so the only place it could come from is the same place all other money comes from in this system: someone else’s debt. Isn’t that right? This is confirmed in paragraph three of the January 6, 1983 letter from the Department of the Treasury, Office of the General Counsel, to Mr. Dale:

Money for paying interest on borrowed money comes from the same source as other money comes from.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

In other words, money paid for interest must be money made from debt: someone else's debt. And that someone else's debt is principally the deficit run by our national government.

HOW DO YOU PAY THE INTEREST?

NO ONE HAS EVER CREATED ANYTHING TO PAY THE INTEREST! This means that all of the interest each and every one of us pays has to be first borrowed into existence. How can you reduce your total amount of debt if you have to borrow each payment into existence?

This needs to be made clear. Let's say you're banking at Bank A, and you owe them a very substantial amount of money. You don't have the money to make your payment, so you go over to Bank B and borrow \$20,000 to make your payment at Bank A. Once you make the payment at Bank A, does that reduce the total amount of debt you owe? Of course not! The total of what you owe to Bank A and to Bank B is still equal to what you owed to Bank A to begin with, except you owe Bank A and Bank B more than what you owed to Bank A last year because a portion of that \$20,000 you paid to Bank A was used to pay the interest on your loan. The interest due on a loan is always paid first in this system. Next year, if you continue to use the same system of borrowing your payment for Bank A and Bank B into existence, let's say at Bank C, you are going to owe more 'money', or debt, than this year.

Let me put this another way. Suppose that \$10,000 you borrowed from the banker was the only money in existence, real money, not debt. Gold and no other gold exists except that \$10,000. This is all the gold there is in the whole world, and you borrow all of the gold under the condition that you will repay \$11,000 in gold in one year. If you agree to do this, you have agreed to do the impossible. Does it not make sense then to understand that every time we borrow created money into existence and agree to pay interest on that created money that we have agreed to do the impossible?

Once again, let's go back to our bookkeeping system for debt. The \$10,000 you borrowed was created by a bookkeeping entry. When you paid it back, it was extinguished by a corresponding bookkeeping entry. That is how a double-entry bookkeeping system works; you must have two entries to balance the system. In order to extinguish the interest from out of the bookkeeping system for debt, there must be two corresponding entries for the interest. Since the first bookkeeping entry, the creation of the interest, does not exist, the interest can never be extinguished but must stay within the system and accumulate as permanent debt, (Author's note: Permanent debt equals our so-called national debt, both private and governmental) collecting more and more compound interest, with one exception (Author's note: You can pay the interest in this system and extinguish it from the system by using real money in order to pay it. Gold or silver, in other words. Of course, once you run out of real money, debt accumulation begins immediately. A study of money in history will show you that this type of monetary system has been used many times in order to steal the wealth of nations and reduce the people of those nations to abject economic slavery). It sounds just like a banker's dream, doesn't it?

Let me explain this clearly. Almost all of the debt of this nation has been caused by the interest we pay on all of the debt carried by both the public and private sectors of our

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

nation through the creation of money by our banks. This interest (debts due to the banks for the use of their bookkeeping entries, or in other words, this interest due to the banks on nothing) to the banks is paid by the massive deficits our government runs and pumps into the system. Everyone runs around collecting little pieces of the deficit so that they can make next months interest payment to those private commercial banks. This interest can never be paid! It accumulates as permanent debt within the system and becomes a permanent mortgage on the people of the nation through taxation for the benefit of the International Bankers.

ECONOMIC SLAVERY

This is an exact prescription for economic slavery and can only result in higher and higher national debts wherever this system is used followed by higher and higher taxes. There is no other result possible. Congress admits that its own studies show that American citizens now pay 60 to 65% of their incomes in accumulative taxes. CONGRESS ALSO ADMITS THAT ITS OWN STUDIES REVEAL THAT AMERICAN WILL BE PAYING UPWARDS OF 71% OF THEIR INCOMES IN TAXES BY THE TURN OF THE CENTURY. The same Congressional study also admits that within fifteen years, the accumulative tax burden on the American citizen will exceed 85%!

Just a short time ago, for the first time in my life, I finally found a government official who would admit this in public! In the Friday, May 13, 1994 issue of The Montrose Daily Press, of Montrose, Colorado, on page two I found a story entitled "Budget 'Plan for Insolvency': Brown." The Brown listed in the title of this report is Senator Hank Brown of Colorado (Author's note: This is the same Senator Brown who is responsible for the letter mentioned earlier), and the report in the paper is on a statement that Senator Brown, who is a member of the Senate Budget Committee, issued following final passage of the conference report on the fiscal year 1995 federal budget. Senator Brown said everything that needs to be said, so I am going to let him do the talking:

What is unique about this budget and about this conference report is that it is a long-term plan for financial insolvency.

Let me be clear. This is a long-term plan with specific numbers, specific figures and specific programs to lead this country into insolvency. It is a plan to reduce savings, to reduce jobs and will leave our nation unable to pay our bills.

Senator Brown then continued with some of the specifics about the plan, but the real shocker in his statement was on page eleven of the paper where his statement concluded:

In the President's own budget is an analysis of generational accounting. That shows that someone being born today will have to bear a tax burden that is in excess of 80 percent of his or her total income just to meet the obligations that are already on the books.

Yet, this is the same Senator Brown that I have watched walk out of a public meeting when the subject of the Federal Reserve was raised by knowledgeable people in the audience. You can only deny the truth for so long until the squeeze becomes so severe that realization can not be denied. It is simple to solve our problems.

When will we say, "Enough"? We must be the ones to say it! We have learned that GOVERNMENT HAS PROVEN THAT THEY WILL NEVER SAY IT!

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Are We All to Be Slaves to the Rothschilds and their ilk?

Mayer Amshul Rothschild devised the specific use of this system of economic slavery, as we see it being used in America. He and his descendants have used this system, coupled with bribery and corruption of government officials and the European Royalty, to obtain a choke hold on the economic fortunes of the world through ever-increasing amounts of unpayable debts (interest). As time went on, they brought other families and lesser individuals, who were willing to do their bidding, into their plan as accomplices.

Would it surprise you to learn that nearly everything you see going wrong in America today was predicted in a manuscript that Rothschild wrote in 1773? This plan to enslave the world through economic slavery has been carried out over a long period of time. Naturally, I'm suppose to assume that this has occurred by coincidence because it surely could not be a conspiracy!

The ultimate result of this system of economic slavery is the destruction of the middle class, exactly what we see happening in America today, leaving a thin slice of extremely rich at the top. Everyone else, except those working directly for the very rich, is left to pay a crushing burden of taxes for the direct benefit of those same Elite rich. This will eventually leave almost nothing on which the average citizen can subsist (as in England, once this point is reached, the People are then locked out of the public [King's] land as well). At that point, you will not have to wonder who the homeless are or what it feels like to go to bed hungry because you will know! The American people now pay between 60 and 65% of their incomes in accumulative taxes. How close are we to the end, then, when they repossess all of the real property we owe so much money on, just as they took our gold and silver? And it will be lost, all for our excesses in borrowing nothing!

(Author's note: They already have repossessed all of the real property in America. That is why you pay property tax on your property! Property tax is rent, and it is proof that you do not actually own the property. I refer you to March 9th, 1933, and President Roosevelt. One of the first acts that Roosevelt took after he was sworn in as President in March of 1933 was to suspend the Constitutional restraints through the rule of necessity. The rule of necessity is used in the case of a so-called emergency, and it always means that the action being taken is being done illegally. But those taking the illegal action have no choice because of necessity. In other words, it always means that a bogus action is being taken for which no basis in law exists. Roosevelt then declared the United States to be bankrupt and pledged all real property in America and all of the subjects of the federal government to the International Bankers as collateral for our unpayable debts, most of which were still to come.)

WHERE DID ALL OF OUR GOLD GO?

Of course, you need to understand that the interest at the beginnings of this system, the inception of the FED in 1913, was extinguished in the only way it could be: that is with real money, gold and silver. That is until our gold and silver was used up. That's why we were pulled off the Gold Standard in 1934. You should study what happened to the gold Franklin Roosevelt stole from the American citizens. He gave it to the International Bankers, who moved it to Europe. This is why we no longer have any gold or silver, and that includes in Fort Knox.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

There is one more real, which government officials can use to extinguish the interest in this system of economic slavery: real property. However, why would the International Bankers allow that when they hold unpayable mortgages on 98% of all real property now, just awaiting a Depression, so they can own it in detail as well as in fact (Author's note: Once again, I refer you to property taxes) and instead of collecting payments and property taxes, they can just collect rent? If you want to understand Biosphere Reserves, you should look at a bill recently passed by Congress detailing a land for debt swap, of America's public lands for the debts of Washington, DC.

Naturally, the mortgages on most of the real property in this nation have been caused by people being forced to go to their local banker and pledging their property to the bankers for "nothing", in order to operate their businesses, or just to live, and by the inability of the people, through the "creation" of recessions and depressions, to be able to accumulate enough "debt" in order for them to be free of payments. The further a nation enters into this system, the fewer people of the nation there will ever be who will be able to live debt free and still own anything. England is a good example of exactly what I mean. Always remember: Depressions are an artificially created event. Depressions are created by deliberately restricting the amount of money allowed to circulate in an economy. This stops the exchange of wealth, which is absolutely essential for prosperity to occur.

One other process, which slows down the accumulation of unpayable debt within this system, is the charge off banks must make against their earnings (interest charged) for the loans they make, which are not repaid. You can well understand how unpaid "creations of nothing" would irritate the owners of the FED because if enough of this went on, uncontrollable money would exist in the system. This is why commercial banks are severely punished for not collecting back the nothing they loan out. Big banks and the owners of the big banks consolidate their power and wealth and the control of the system by breaking the small banks for not collecting back the nothing which they loan out by manipulation of the interest and discount rates. This is how the smaller banks are severely punished: by breaking them.

In America today, there are very few locally owned banks, especially when compared to the great numbers of them that existed in the past. Interstate ownership of banks is one of the worst crimes Congress and the various state legislatures have ever permitted against the People of America. I take my hat off to those who do not pay the bankers back. They are doing their part to slow down the collapse.

INFLATION

It is very important to understand that you cannot operate this system without inflation. The Federal Reserve is solely responsible for inflation in America (See What Is Money? for an explanation of interest being the source of inflation). Inflation will always be present, if for no other reason, than to foster the illusion that people actually have more money as time goes on. Regardless of the illusion, there constantly must be a larger and larger supply of money available to offset the amount of interest the banks siphon from the economy. Inflation has another purpose as well.

What is the purpose of inflation? John Maynard Keynes wrote the following in *The Economic Consequence of Peace*:

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Lenin (the Russian Communist) is said to have declared that the best way to destroy the Capitalist system was to debauch the currency.

By a continuing process of inflation, governments can confiscate, secretly and unobserved, an important part of the wealth of their citizens. By this method, they not only confiscate, but they confiscate arbitrarily, and while the process impoverishes many, it actually enriches some.

There is no subtler, no surer means of overturning the existing basis of society than to debauch the currency.

The process engages all the hidden forces of economic law on the side of destruction, and does it in a manner not one man in a million is able to diagnose.

Who is the victim of inflation? James P. Warburg (Yes, the same family) correctly answered that question when he wrote the following in his book *The West in Crises*:

In recent times perhaps the greatest enemy of a middle class society...has been inflation.

Why would the middle class be the target of inflation? John Kenneth Galbraith informed the reader that inflation is a method of "income redistribution":

Inflation takes from the old, the unorganized, and the poor and gives it to those who are strongly in control of their own incomes. Income is reallocated from the old to the people of middle years and from the poor to the rich.

So inflation has a purpose. It is not an accident! It is the tool of those who have two objectives: first, to destroy the free enterprise system and (second), to take wealth from the poor and the middle class and redistribute it to the rich. It is very important to understand that you can not have inflation unless a special privilege is granted by the government which permits someone to "create" a medium of exchange without oversight or control. And yes, in the past even governments have been guilty of inflation, but always for the benefit of individual men, not for the benefit of government or for the benefit of those the so-called government supposedly represented, the people of the nation.

Did I mention that it is the super rich, the so-called Elite, who own the Federal Reserve? You should note something here I will be bring up again later: Socialism, Liberalism, Democracy and Communism are nothing but very simple socioeconomic systems designed to remove all freedom and property from the common man.

Have you ever done any reading about Communism? The Communists themselves admit that Communism is brought about through "pressure from above and pressure from below." So if you pressure from above and from below, who is in the middle? Of course, the middle class. Once you understand this, the lie about Communism being for the people is instantly revealed. Who is at the top? The Elite. Who is at the bottom? The poor. Do the poor have the money and the means to organize and force a revolution? Of course not. Then where do the poor receive the necessary funding and leadership in order to revolt? From the Elite! Who paid for the so-called Communist revolution of 1917 in Russia?

TYRANNY

There is only one possible result of the type of monetary system our government forces us to use: tyranny. There can never be enough debt money created to satisfy the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

banks, the government's demands for taxes, and care for all of the members of society. Under this type of system, there will always be unemployed, the unemployable, and the homeless. As the system continues to grind on, concentrating more and more wealth in the hands of the super rich, as it is intended to do, you will have more and more unemployment and more and more homeless. This, of course, leads to more and more calls for the government to do something, which inevitably leads to more and more power for the super rich, who control the government. This is how you establish a tyranny!

As time goes on and the debt grows larger, there are increasing calls for austerity and belt tightening just as you see it happening today. For those of you who are smug in your government paid benefits, retirements or wages, remember, austerity and belt tightening will refer to you, even if it does not appear so at this time.

Well known people step forward and proclaim that we all must contribute and we all have to do our part. Efforts are continually made to make the system work and to fine tune the economy. All of this is a smoke screen, and the people speaking it, by and large, understand this very well.

As time marches on and there is less debt-money to operate the system after the commercial banks demand for interest and the government's demands for taxes are satisfied, the inevitable and intended pressure on wages comes into play.

You see part of this pressure on wages now in the effort to saddle the American worker with the North American Free Trade and Finance Agreement. The average hourly wage in Mexico is \$.95 an hour. When you join our work force with Mexico's (which is what this agreement has done), wages will move towards the lowest common denominator: Mexico's. It is impossible to pull Mexico's wage rate up to ours, so ours must fall, over a period of time, to a level on a par with Mexico's. I sincerely hope I do not have to explain the North American Free Trade and Finance Agreement (Yes, that's the real name of the agreement). You do not need 2000 pages of agreements to set up Free Trade. You need 2000 pages to set up special interest protections. So who are the real beneficiaries? Of course, they are the International Bankers.

HOW TIME BENEFITS THE SUPER RICH ELITE

This is what the entire system is based on time. It works slowly enough that over several generations, the people are not aware of what is going on even while their standard of living is declining.

All of this, naturally, leads to more calls for the government to do something which again leads to more power by the super rich through their control of the leaders of the federal government!

Does this mean that the leaders of our government do not understand what is happening? Of course not! Most of them understand very well and are very willing to help in the destruction of the ideal, which was America, because the super rich make it in their interest to do so. We assist in our leaders' deception of us by not paying attention, studying, and understanding what is happening.

Everything, which you have read up to now, also explains why absolute control of the primary media in our nation is essential for this system to work. If the money kings did not have absolute control of the primary media in America, their control of the FED

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

and of our economic system would have been exposed long ago.

Of course, we also find that as long as the banks agree to roll our debts over again and again as we keep putting up more and more and more collateral, we can continue to operate as if nothing is wrong. What happens, however, when the bank says “OOPS! Time to pay”? Very simple, you and I become tenants on the continent our fathers settled.

Let’s make a reality (truth) check: Do you suppose that the compounding of interest on our snowballing mountain of debt could have something to do with our debt accumulated since 1913 (95% of our nation’s debt consists of compound interest since 1940)? That’s when the Federal Reserve came into being. That was back when our entire national debt was approximately one billion dollars and private debt was negligible. You know, these were the good old days when we were BTF (Before The FED).

OUR TRUE NATIONAL DEBT: \$18 TRILLION

Today, our total admitted national and private debt totals over 18 trillion dollars. Have we, then, agreed to do the impossible? It would seem so, wouldn’t it? Of course, if you would listen to them, there are those who would try to convince you that the debt is caused by excesses, both yours and the government’s. I agree about the excesses, only the excess is created by our habit of borrowing nothing. Now you understand what the truth is, and the truth conforms to reality.

Another aspect of this that I want to make sure you understand is the amount of new debt, which **MUST** be created each year to service the old debt and to replace all of the debt, which had been paid back in the previous year to the bankers. Money is the lifeblood of a system. There must be enough of it around to handle the millions of transactions, which occur each day. So to service the old debt and to keep the economy functioning require the creation of more and more debt each year. As the bankers continue to extend credit, they also act as a siphon, pulling money from the economy as they collect interest and principal on the debt.

I assume you now understand our government’s deficit spending. Without the massive deficits our government pumps into this system each year, the house of cards we call an economic system would collapse overnight. Yes, the government will cut the deficit, and that will be your last warning before the Depression hits.

WHO IS GOING TO OWN THE SMALLER BANKS?

The biggest siphon of debt is the Federal Reserve. I have never of been able to understand local bankers. They, for the most part, don’t understand how the system works. While they sit there, fat and happy, taking advantage of the system and collecting interest on nothing, **SOMEONE IS DOING THE SAME TO THEM!** And they are doing it much more efficiently than the local bankers can, with the will and **ABILITY** to whipsaw and break the smaller banks. It is particularly easy to break our banks at will because our monetary system is nothing but bookkeeping entries. That means there is no real money in our banks to fall back on. When a private commercial bank has less than a 10% reserve (of credit), and if they are loaned to the maximum as most of them try to be, it does not take much thinking to understand how easy it is to break them by simply forcing 11% of their loans to go bad. How? Simply raise interest rates.

This makes them particularly vulnerable to an unscrupulous Federal Reserve. Do

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

you really believe, Mr. Banker, that the massive bank failures since 1980 all happened because of mismanagement or fraud? It doesn't say very much for the banking profession if they did (understanding what I am writing, who can say anything good about the banking profession anyway?). I believe the true facts are much simpler than that: someone with a lot of power wants control of all of the deposits in all of the banks of the nation. I have read many times that by the year 2000, over 80% of all bank deposits in America will be concentrated in a relatively few mega bankers' hands. Would anyone care to make a wager as to how well those mega bankers tie into the Federal Reserve or to the International Bankers? Don't EVER forget the International Bankers, the money kings!

Thou shalt not lend upon usury to thy brother; usury of money, usury of victuals, usury of anything that is lent upon usury. Deuteronomy 23:19

The Bible, I believe, was originally written as a natural guide by which to live, and what was written into the Bible had and has a solid basis in reality. Anything which has a solid basis in reality can be judged to be the truth. That's what the dictionary says; look it up.

There are numerous prohibitions against taking or paying usury (interest) in the Bible, and they are there for a reason. Interest destroys, and there are numerous examples of this throughout history. One of the best books I've read on this subject is War Cycles: Peace Cycles by Richard Kelly Hoskins, The Virginia Publishing Company, PO Box 997, Lynchburg, Virginia 24505. This book also contains the best description of the tally system that I have ever read. You will need to know ALL there is to know about tallies (money substitution in an economy) when we are thrust into the next Depression. I urge you to read War Cycles: Peace Cycles.

THE FED IS STEALING THE MONEY!

I do understand create and creation. I know a car is not created from nothing and that I cannot create wealth but must work for it. Creation is the province of God, not man. Therefore, our government has attempted to bestow God-like powers, the creation of money, upon the Federal Reserve and the commercial bankers. Our government cannot bestow God's power upon anyone or anything. Therefore, if the FED is not using God's powers to create money, it is stealing the money. Go back and take a close look at the bookkeeping system for debt again, and see if there is any other conclusion that can be drawn from this operation. It is theft, theft of the wealth of an entire nation, and ultimately, the theft of the wealth of an entire world for the benefit of special privilege of a very few at the expense of the whole of mankind. This is not a New World Order: This is the same system of privilege and benefit of the few which has plagued the earth since the days of Babylon. In other words, the parasites are back!

One more point needs to be made here. The government, according to the Constitution, has no powers it can bestow on anyone without first taking those powers from the People! The reality of this situation then is that the owners of the Federal Reserve have stolen the power to create money from the People of America! They did this, as they do all things, by bribery and corruption.

CURRENCY

We have reprinted a short letter here from an attorney. Please read it carefully. You

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

may have trouble believing the next several pages if you do not.

In response to your question “Is Article 1, _10 of the United States Constitution, particularly the words ‘No State shall...make any thing but gold and silver coin a Tender in Payment of Debts...’, still binding on a State?”, the only lawful answer is Yes.

Meant to “crush paper money” by unanimous consent of the Constitutional Convention of 1787, this Section prohibits the States from imposing upon the people a paper currency, paper money or anything else other than gold and silver coin as a medium of exchange in the discharge of debts. Since the Constitution can be changed by amendment only, and since no amendment has changed this Section, no federal action can excuse a State of this prohibition.

The effect of this Section is thus:

If a paper dollar is delivered to, or received from a state authorized party without particular objection to its being an unlawful tender under Article 1, _10, no Constitutional question has arisen and the payor/payee, in remaining silent, has renounced his individual rights flowing from the Constitutional prohibition.

Those rights are the following:

A. Discharge of the debt in gold or silver coin, if provided for in the debt;

B. Dismissal or forgiveness of the debt altogether, if the debt is not denominated in gold or silver coin, since any rule or judgment repugnant to the Constitution is void, invalid, and without effect.

As with other rights, the right to gold and silver coin, and the right to be forgiven of any debt not denominated in same, are considered waived unless properly and timely asserted.

Let’s talk about currency, not money-currency. Despite what you may have heard to the contrary, currency is not money. The Constitution clearly states “shall make any Thing but gold and silver Coin a Tender in Payment of Debts” (Article I, Section 10, never rescinded, nor superseded). So unless you are paying off your debts in gold or silver, you are violating the Constitution. Of course, you really don’t have much choice in the matter because of the system our government has forced upon us. However, because you limit your liability by extinguishing your debts with fictional funds, you incur an assumed liability to follow all legislated regulations. Legislated regulations are another word for statutes, which are not law. Legislated (Article I) administrative law has completely replaced judicial (Article III) jurisdiction. And this is true not only in the federal enclaves but in the several states as well.

More and more people are being punished and imprisoned by statutes and regulations, not laws. This is done primarily to People who are digested with the monetary system, and the new prisons are for such People, not for murder and rape crimes.

Howard Freeman has discovered that ARTICLE 1 COURTS (Legislative Tribunals) have jurisdiction over us because we unknowingly enter into a contract any time we use Federal Reserve Notes to “discharge a debt.” Paper currency has no real value since it is created by the FED from nothing. When we use Federal Reserve Notes to buy goods or services, we are afforded “limited liability” against suit for equal value in terms of gold or silver. For this consideration of “limited liability,” the performance is our acceptance

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

of all Article 1 administrative statutes and laws, under the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress. There are a great number of other contracts involved as well.

I want to point out to everyone right now that the above information pertains to you only if you are in the system and are a Fourteenth Amendment citizen of the federal government. This information does not pertain to me because I am a Sovereign State Citizen with no contracts between me and any form of government. You will understand this a lot better after you finish with Strategic Withdrawal. And yes, I use Federal Reserve Notes, but only under duress and against my wishes.

THE CONSTITUTION AND CURRENCY

How long has it been since you have read the Constitution? Do you pay taxes on your property? Do you understand why you do? Have you read the Constitution lately, particularly where it says that debts must be paid in gold and silver? When you bought your land, farm, ranch, place of business or house, did you quiet your title with gold or silver money? If you failed to do so, there is a cloud upon the title to your property, which prevents you from taking full and complete title, i. e., a Quiet Title, to your property! Congress passed acts, on April 24, 1820, and again on May 20, 1862, as well as at other times in our history, which guarantee Americans Allodial Title to their real property.

Allodial Title means that you are not subject to real estate taxes nor any other fees the government may dream up. No one can touch your property! No one! Not the IRS or the EPA or the FBI or anyone! But you can not have Allodial Title to any property, which was not paid for constitutionally by a Sovereign Citizen! In other words, you could not be a Fourteenth Amendment citizen of the federal government and you would have had to purchase the property with gold or silver money. This was one of the primary reasons why Roosevelt took the gold coins and gold-backed currency away from the People of this nation: In order to allow government ownership (the government holds title to all property on which it levies taxes. That is why you only have a certificate of title or a Fee Simple title, not the real title for your property or for your car) and taxation of all property. This works just like it says in the Communist Manifesto. In the place of Constitutional money, we are left with no choice but to use Federal Reserve currency (Author's note: This is called colorable money, as in color of law) which can not give us, according to the Constitution, clear title to anything purchased with it. (Note; There is a process through which you can update the land patent to your land so that you can have complete title, without government interference, and without using gold or silver.)

DO YOU KNOW WHO OWNS YOUR CAR?

I know that many of you are not going to believe much of what I am saying without a lot of reflection and thought. I had the same problem when I finally realized what disappearing money really meant! While you are thinking about what has been written here, give the following story some serious consideration. This came from America Today, PO Box 188, Houston, Missouri 65483:

Tennessee Department of Revenue Operations Supervisor Denise Rottero told Judge Greer how Tennessee's auto registration process works.

The process begins with the "surrender" of the Manufacturer's Statement of Origin (MSO) by the auto dealer to the Department of Revenue in exchange for a Certificate of

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Title. Asked if a Manufacturer's Statement of Origin is proof of ownership, legal title to the automobile, Ms. Rottero said, "Yes."

"Are you telling me that ownership of an automobile must be surrendered to the State before it can be registered?" she was asked.

"Surrender title, yes," Rottero said.

The certificate of title to your automobile is not title, it's merely evidence that title exists. Your car's legal TITLE is the MSO, which the dealer surrendered to the State. Ms. Rottero said the MSO is put on microfilm for permanent keeping, the original is destroyed.

After the trial, spectators expressed shock that their personal automobiles were actually owned by the state. "No wonder state law officers stop people for no reason!" said a housewife. "If your car's got a Tennessee plate, it's theirs, and they can do anything they like to you!" That's the law, but it's voluntary. No one but Judge Greer had dared say that if you don't surrender your car to the state in exchange for plates, you go to jail!

Yes, many of the spectators were shocked at the testimony offered, but how many of them understood that one of the reasons why the state takes the title to your car because you never "paid" for the car? How many of them understood that this occurs because the private owners of the Federal Reserve, through bribery and corruption of "our" government, removed our ability to "pay" for ANYTHING when they stole our system of money? How many of them understood that, because they don't have clear title to ANYTHING, the federal government was able to pledge ALL assets, including the RESIDENTS, of America to the money kings for collateral against our unpayable, non-existent national debt?

YOU CAN NEVER OWN ANYTHING UNLESS YOU PAY FOR IT, AND YOU CAN NOT PAY FOR ANYTHING UNLESS YOU USE MONEY!

(Note; Again, there is a method whereby you can side-step the fraud committed in Washington, DC, and Quiet the title to your car, thus removing your travel out of the jurisdiction of the government. See the book Strategic Withdrawal.)

This includes everything purchased with Federal Reserve Notes, right down to the shirt on your back. You own nothing, because you never paid for anything! All you have ever done with Federal Reserve Notes is limit your liability, through a contract entered into with the person accepting the Federal Reserve Notes, which says that the person who accepts Federal Reserve Notes will not demand actual payment for those items you have purchased from them. You have acquired no actual title or true interest in the items purchased, and you use those items under a cloud of ownership. This is a simple concept to grasp. When you use debt (colorable money) in order to pay a debt, it is obvious that the original debt cannot disappear! Anything purchased in this manner can never be owned by you. This means that anything you purchase with debt can be taken away from you at the whim of any agent or agency of the government which desires to do so. Read the Constitution. It will answer most of the questions, once you understand which questions to ask, about where our Rights have gone.

CURRENCY

How currency comes into being is very interesting. Paragraph two of the December 14, 1982 letter from the Department of the Treasury, Bureau of Engraving and Printing, is

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

very enlightening.

The Bureau of Engraving and Printing produces the Nation's paper currency and sells it to the Federal Reserve system for \$20.60 per one thousand notes. The notes, however, are not money until they are monetized and issued by a Federal Reserve Bank. To obtain notes, a Federal Reserve Bank must pledge collateral equal to the face value of the note. Collateral must consist of the following assets, alone or in any combination: 1) gold certificates, 2) special Drawing Right certificates, 3) US Government securities, and 4) "eligible paper," as described by statute (Author's note: "Eligible paper" means exactly what they say; any paper they deem fit to declare as suitable to use. For instance, all of the uncollectable debt paper which are loans granted to the nations of South America by our biggest banks).

That's right. For a total cost of \$20.60 (recently raised slightly), the Federal Reserve can receive 1000 \$100 bills, or 1000 \$1,000 bills, or 1000 \$10,000 bills or... I'm sure you get the picture. But what's that, you say? They have to pledge security? Right you are. Let's go back to our earlier transaction when the Federal Reserve received a Treasury Bond for one billion dollars, which it paid for with a check on itself. We've already ascertained that the total cost to the Federal Reserve for this bond was nothing. But that bond is now US Government Securities, as described in number three above. The FED then takes this bond, which it will still own and on which it will still collect interest, back over to the Department of the Treasury, pledges it as security, and receives back 10,000,000 \$100 bills or one billion dollars in cash. Total cost: \$20,600. This is what I was referring to when I was discussing Senator Brown's letter when I said that the Department of the Treasury almost literally gives the Federal Reserve Notes to the FED. The FED then takes this cash and distributes it as needed to member banks. We should not have to note, but I will anyway, that the FED does not distribute this cash to the member banks for free.

THE GOVERNMENT ISSUES NO MONEY!

There is one other very important truth contained within this paragraph:

...the notes are not money, however, until they are monetized and issued by a Federal Reserve Bank.

This is an admission that our government issues no money! Even the small amount of cash that circulates in our economy and which still has to be borrowed into existence, is issued by the FED! There is a small amount of cash that is an exception to this which I mentioned earlier, called United States Notes.

I wish to restate something at this time: Our so-called national debt is an illusion! The secret to understanding this is contained in the statement above where we found that our government issues no money. The only way our national government could owe any money is if they were spending money. They are not spending money. They are spending debt, which is nothing but an illusion because they have not borrowed any money from anyone. Remember what I stated before: In order to indebt this nation to the degree that it has been put into debt, they had to be able to create the debt from nothing because that much money just did not and does not exist! And what does not exist can not be owed, and it certainly can not be collected! All this illusion can be used for is to create a belief that we owe more and more taxes, which is exactly what it is intended for

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

in the first place.

HOW DO YOU CONTROL ANY GOVERNMENT?

You restrict the government's access to money. This is why the concept of limited taxation is just as vital to freedom as is the concept of a free press. How do you create an uncontrollable and fantastically fast growing government? You give that government access to unlimited funds. This is our fault. Our forefathers told us that the price of freedom is eternal vigilance. Our freedoms have been stolen from us in an illegal, unconstitutional method of creating debt from thin air and using it as an excuse for confiscatory taxation and as unlimited funding for an uncontrollable government. Yet, we did nothing!

Paragraph three of this same letter states that:

Federal Reserve Notes are obligations of the United States, and have first lien on the assets of the issuing Federal Reserve bank.

This proves that Federal Reserve notes are private money from a private bank. Of course, if it weren't private money from a private bank, the Federal Reserve wouldn't be paying even the nominal cost of printing. Also, this private money shows another way our debt continues to snowball as our economy is paying interest on all currency in circulation. That is what I said above: the Federal Reserve does not issue currency for free. Federal Reserve Notes have to be borrowed into creation the same way as bank deposits are created and are nothing but debt instruments (Author's note: Once again, please see the legal definition of money in Black's Law Dictionary). And you can not use a debt instrument to acquire a Quiet Title to anything, because whatever it is that you are purchasing can never be finally paid for by the exclusive use of debt!

Remember, we do not have a permanent monetary system in use in America. Any money, including currency, which exists at any given time exists ONLY at the whim of the International Bankers, and it ALL collects interest for every moment of its existence. This is called usury. In the Bible, bankers are called money changers. Christ kicked the money changers out of the temple FOR A REASON! I sincerely hope you now understand that reason.

As it says above, our government guarantees the Federal Reserve Notes. That is rather a unique situation when the US Government is guaranteeing the products of a private business. Of course, that guarantee is made through the ability of your government to tax its citizens and thus make good on the debts of the International Bankers, if such should ever be found to be necessary (This means YOU [if you are a citizen of the United States] guarantee Federal Reserve Notes). It is claimed that this guarantee is what makes Federal Reserve Notes acceptable to the people. I claim that it is ignorance of the true nature of Federal Reserve Notes, which make them acceptable.

Paragraph five of the March 16, 1988 letter from the Department of the Treasury, United States Mint, to Mr. Dale, completes the story of currency:

Federal Reserve notes are printed by the Bureau of Engraving and Printing, which is also an agency of the Department of the Treasury. The notes are sold to the Federal Reserve at the cost of manufacture, not at face value. There is no seigniorage or profit on issuing paper currency from the Bureau of Engraving and Printing to the Federal Re-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

serve.

Actually, the Department of the Treasury, by printing Federal Reserve Notes, is illegally competing with private printing firms, which would otherwise do the printing for a profit. This admission that "...there is no seigniorage or profit on issuing paper currency from the Bureau of engraving and printing to the Federal Reserve..." is an actual admission that our government issues no money. Seigniorage, or profit, is a prerogative of the issuing entity of any money and is ALWAYS PRESENT, if for no other reason than to pay the cost of minting or printing. I would say that the difference between the cost of printing one billion dollars in currency, \$20,600, and the value our economy places on that currency, one billion dollars, is a significant Seigniorage for the Federal Reserve. Yes, the Federal Reserve is the issuer of Federal Reserve Notes as their significant seigniorage proves.

There is one more point. I refer a The Coin Coalition letter of April 9, 1990:

There's no need to round checks off to the nearest nickel. Most money exists only as ink on computer print outs. Every time you use a credit card, the bank that is the card issuer creates money equal to the amount of purchase. When you pay off your credit card balance, money is "destroyed." The size of the US money supply rises and falls as debt is created and paid off...

IS THERE ANY PROFIT?

After you've read this report, if you still have any doubts about how profitable it may be to own the Federal Reserve Banks, I refer you to page 160 of Secrets of the Federal Reserve. Mr. Mullins tells us:

The Banking Act of 1933 also legislated that all earnings of the Federal Reserve Banks must by law go to the banks themselves (Author's note: Of course, this means to the owners of the private banks which own the Federal Reserve). At last the provision in the Act that the Government share in the profits was gotten rid of. It had never been observed, and the increase in the assets of the Federal Reserve Banks from 143 million dollars in 1913 to 45 billion dollars in 1949 went entirely to the private stockholders of the banks.

In 12 United States Code 152, we find:

The terms 'lawful money' and 'lawful money of the United States' shall be construed to mean gold and silver coin of the United States.

Read this carefully. You can not have a clear title to anything unless you obey the law! The law says you must use gold or silver to extinguish any other claim to that which you purchase!

AM I THE ONLY ONE SAYING THESE THINGS?

As with the Constitution, 12 USC 152 has never been changed. Why are our Constitution and laws ignored if not to defraud the populace? Throughout our history, as the following quotes will show, much has been said and written about this subject. Do you remember reading any of these quotes in school (Are we to suppose that this is also by chance)? These quotes also serve another purpose. I would not want you to think that what you are reading here is strictly my opinion. What I'm saying has been voiced by uncountable thousands of Americans. Please notice the wide range of occupations of

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

these Americans as well as the range of years these ideas have been on the minds of thinking individuals.

Daniel Webster said:

Of all the contrivances of CHEATING THE LABORING CLASSES OF MANKIND, none has been more effective than that which deludes them with paper money.

Thomas Jefferson said in 1816:

We are now taught to believe that...tricks upon PAPER can produce as solid wealth as hard labor in the earth. It is vain for common sense to urge that NOTHING can produce but NOTHING.

President Andrew Jackson said in his 8th Annual Message to Congress:

It is apparent from the whole contest of the Constitution as well as the history of the time which gave birth to it, that it was THE PURPOSE OF THE CONVENTION to establish a currency consisting of the precious metals. These were adopted by a PERMANENT RULE excluding the use of a perishable medium of exchange... or the still MORE PERNICIOUS EXPEDIENT OF PAPER CURRENCY.

Even Horace Greeley, a man who worked closely with Clinton Roosevelt, had these words to say:

While boasting of our noble deeds, we are careful to conceal the ugly fact that by an iniquitous money system we have nationalized a system of oppression which, though more refined, is not less cruel than the old system of chattel slavery.

President James A. Garfield said:

Whoever controls the volume of money in any country is absolute master of all industry and commerce.

Note well what President Garfield said: "Whoever controls the volume of money in any country..."

Dr. Carl F. M. Sandberg said:

From those not familiar with these things, has come reluctance to accept as truth THE FACT that our government, without getting anything whatsoever in return, gives the Federal Reserve Notes to PRIVATE BANKERS for them to loan out at interest even back to the government itself. To them this seems so senseless as to be unbelievable.

John Maynard Keynes, FDR's Adviser during the New Deal, made this comment:

Lenin was certainly right, there is no more positive, or subtle or surer means of DESTROYING THE EXISTING BASIS OF SOCIETY THAN TO DEBAUCH THE CURRENCY. By a continuing process of inflation, governments CAN CONFISCATE, SECRETLY AND UNOBSERVED, AN IMPORTANT PART OF THE WEALTH OF THE CITIZENS. By this method they not only confiscate, but they confiscate arbitrarily, and while the process impoverishes many, it actually enriches some. The process engages all of THE HIDDEN FORCES of economics on the side of destruction, and does it in a manner that NOT ONE MAN IN A MILLION CAN DIAGNOSE.

I have repeated this quote from Keyes here because it is very important. What is even more important about this quote is based on what we now know. It is not the government which is confiscating the wealth of our nation. It is the private owners of the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Federal Reserve, who are doing the confiscating!

Marriner S. Eccles, Governor of Federal Reserve Board, in testimony to House Investigating Committee, stated:

The Federal Reserve System banks are private corporations whose stock is one hundred per cent owned by international bankers and their ilk. When the banks take a billion dollars of government bonds as they are offered, they credit the US Treasury with a billion dollars, and charge their government on account with a billion dollars; or **THEY CREATE BY A BOOKKEEPING ENTRY, THE MONEY WITH WHICH THEY BUY THE BONDS.**

This quote is to make sure you understand that there is plenty of corroborating evidence for what I have been telling you..

From the testimony of Marriner S. Eccles, Chairman of the Federal Reserve Board, before the House Banking and Currency Committee, September 30, 1941, it is recorded that Congressman Patman asked:

Mr. Eccles, how did you get the money to buy those two billions of government securities?"

Mr. Eccles: "We created it."

Mr. Patman: "Out of what?"

Mr. Eccles: "Out of the right to issue credit money.

(Author's note: Credit money is the correct term for what I call debt money. The term comes from the usage of the term credit in bookkeeping. However, the term credit money is misleading to most of the people with whom I talk. No one mistakes the term debt money for anything other than what it is: money based on debt. In my opinion, this makes the subject clearer and more easily understood to the great majority of my fellow Americans, so we will continue to use the term debt money.)

In an article of the May 5, 1969 issue of US News and World Report, Treasury Secretary David Kennedy was asked, and he replied as follows:

Do you approve of the latest credit-tightening moves?

Treasury Secretary David Kennedy answered, "It's not my job to approve or disapprove. It is the action of the Federal Reserve."

(Author's note: The Federal Reserve neither asks for nor receives permission for any action it desires to take.)

On page 57 of *Lightning Over the Treasury Building*, John R. Elsom said:

"When a great California banker was asked by Andre Nordskog, the author of "We Bankers," how it came about that the Secretary of the Treasury was no longer on the Federal Reserve Board, his reply was: "Because **WE KICKED HIM OFF THE BOARD.**"

Mr. Nordskog then asked why the President of the United States was no longer on the Board and his reply was: Because **WE KICKED HIM OFF THE BOARD.**"

Here are Major George Racey Jordan's comments about usury:

Usury is also strongly condemned in many other parts of the Bible. It is difficult to understand how we can class ourselves a Christian and Godly civilization when we pursue as a nation a course such as this. Our banker money system is a **GREAT USURY CONSPIRACY.** It makes usury an inherent part of our money system. It is economically un-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

sound, and is a wicked, vicious, and defenseless method of exploitation. It is contrary to the laws of reason, to the laws of nature and of God. Such a violation of the laws of nature and of God could only have resulted in bringing the great curses upon our civilization known as “depressions.”

The communists want us to be drowned in an ocean of worthless currency. The privately owned Federal Reserve System (created by Paul Moritz Warburg, agent for the Rothschilds), stands ready to create that ocean.

MR. ROSS PEROT, A TOOL OF THE INSIDERS

Tell me, are you one of those who was enamored of Mr. Ross Perot with his evening TV telecast, explaining how we all have to pay our fair share? Remember how Perot told you that it was going to hurt, but paying your share of the debt was something that had to be done? Do you really suppose Mr. Perot doesn't know the facts I've been outlining? He's not your friend. He's a tool of the Insiders.

What do you suppose would happen if Mr. Perot had taken the air time that he did take and explained the truth I've just shown to you about our system to the American people? With one show, repeated for five nights during prime time, say at 9:00 P.M. Eastern time, by the time Mr. Perot got to the fifth night, word of mouth would have seen to it that 80-90% of all Americans would have seen the show. The resulting scream of outrage would have blown Washington, DC, wide open. Of course, even if I, or you, or Mr. Perot produced such a show, it would never be allowed on the national networks.

If you doubt what I'm saying, try calling any of the nationally syndicated radio talk shows and present the facts about the FED, the facts I've just given you. They'll cut you off at the knees. Believe me, I've tried. It doesn't work because it's instantly time for a break.

So just the very fact that Mr. Perot was allowed to present his program on TV shows that he's tied in with the Insiders (Author's note: That wasn't his program anyway; he was flying a trial balloon for Clinton. It was a trial shot at a “Let's see what kind of reaction we get” program).

Remember what I told you about the Media? Do you think there would be some interest on the part of the American public in seeing such a show? Do you believe there would be any chance of getting it broadcast nationwide? Do you see why it's called the Federal Reserve? Do you also see why it is necessary for each and every one of us to see to it that as many of our friends and neighbors as possible are exposed to the truth?

THE ECONOMIC THROAT OF AMERICA

I sincerely hope you do not need to be told in too many other ways how terrible our present economic system is. You should understand by now that whoever controls the FED has his hands firmly around the economic throat of America as long as he exercises that control. Here is one more story you should see, taken from John R. Elsom's *Lightning Over The Treasury Building*:

In 1763, Benjamin Franklin made a visit to England. While there he was asked how he accounted for the prosperous condition of the Colonies. His reply was simple. “It is only because in the Colonies we issue our own money. It is called ‘Colonial’ Scrip, and we issue it in the proper proportion to the demands of trade and industry.” It was not

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

very long that the Rothschilds Bank caused a Bill to be passed through Parliament which provided that no colony of England could issue its own money. They had to use English bank money. The colonies were compelled to discard their "Scrip" and mortgage themselves to the Bank of England in order to get money.

Franklin stated that in one year from that date the streets of the Colonies were filled with the unemployed, because when England exchanged with them she gave them only half as many units in payment in borrowed money from the Rothschilds Bank as they had in "Scrip." In other word, their circulation medium was reduced fifty per cent, and everyone became unemployed, according to Franklin. He said that this was the cause of the Revolutionary War. He said: "The Colonies would gladly have borne the little tax on tea and other matters had it not been that England took away from the colonies their money, which created unemployment and dissatisfaction.

The refusal of King George III to allow the Colonies to operate an honest colonial money system, which freed the ordinary man from the CLUTCHES OF THE MONEY MANIPULATORS, was probably the PRIME CAUSE OF THE REVOLUTION.

During the Revolutionary War, 16,000 Hessian soldiers were supplied by the Rothschilds to keep America in bondage to this evil system.

Have you seen this story in any of the US history books you read in school? All of your life, you have been told "taxation without representation," lest you find out the truth. We fought a revolution in 1776 to break the bounds, which stifled freedom. In the 1860s and beyond, we find that those same bounds are being tightly drawn across our chests.

If you want to investigate the conspiracy theory thoroughly, start looking up the tax exempt foundations and the control they exert over the universities, which produce your teachers. Start looking at the ownership of the firms which write and print your text books and look into who controls the think tanks, which promulgate the ideas for and changes in your educational system. This is how you take the ultimate control of a nation: through the educational system and the minds of the children of that nation.

If the people of a nation are kept unaware of these types of controls being formed around their educational system by the gradual implementation of the control, and if someone has an unlimited source of funds (such as the FED) with which to capture this control, it is easy to see that this is a relatively easy way to conquer a nation.

Through all of the investigations you could possibly do on this subject, you will see men in decision-making positions who are members of The Council on Foreign Relations (the glue that holds it all together) and the big banks. This is a connection the media does not acknowledge or admit when they talk about our educational system. Of course, how can the media Elite admit this connection when they will not report anything on The Council on Foreign Relations? Suffice it to say that the CFR is a creature of the Rothschilds and the Rockefellers, or should I say, the money kings?

Here is more alarming information about the Federal Reserve Bank from the book *Secrets of the Federal Reserve*:

From 1914 to 1982, a period in which many thousands of American banks went bankrupt, the original purchasers of Federal Reserve Bank stock have not only survived but they have consolidated their power. And what of "the London Connection"? Does it still

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

exist, and is it still dictating the economic destiny of the United States?

The Washington Post, May 19, 1983, carried a story datelined Nairobi, Kenya, noting the meeting of the African Development Bank. "The British merchant bank, Morgan Grenfell and a syndicate of the United States, Kuhn Loeb, Lehman Brothers International, the French Lafazard Freres and Britain's Warburg are discreetly acting as financial advisors to about ten debt-plagued African states."

There are the same names we encountered in 1914, still managing the finances of the world, with profits for themselves but with disastrous results for everyone else. Perhaps we can look for relief to the present Administration of President Reagan. Unfortunately, before reaching him we have to run the gamut of the long list of his principal staff (Author's note: All members of the CFR) composed of men from J. Henry Schroder, Brown Brothers Harriman, and other leading components of "The London Connection."

Lopez Portillo, President of Mexico, in addressing the National Congress of Mexico in September, 1982, called the world credit boom of the past decade a financial pestilence akin to the Black Death which swept Europe in the fourteenth century. "As in mediaeval times, it flattens country after country. It is transmitted by rats and it yields unemployment and misery, industrial bankruptcy and enrichment by speculation. The remedy prescribed by faith healers is forced inactivity and depriving the patient of food" (Author's note: He means depriving the patient of debt).

Forbes magazine stated October, 1982, "The world gasps for liquidity, not because the supply of money has contracted but because too much of it now goes to pay off old debts rather than fund new productive investments" (Author's note: Has this gotten any worse since 1982?)

The policy of high interest rates and tight money has been disastrous for the United States. In early 1983, a slight easing of money and credit promises some relief, but as long as the Federal Reserve System and its unseen manipulators continue their control of the money supply, we can expect more problems. The Nation on December 11, 1982, in commenting on economic problems, stated, "The blame for all this lies at the door of the Federal Reserve System working as usual on behalf of the international banking system."

Only two segments of American society banking and big business-have any substantial representation on the boards (of the Federal Reserve) and often even these become merged through interlocking directorates...Small farmers are absent. Small business is barely visible. No women appear on the district and branch boards only thirteen members from minority groups appear.

The study raises a substantial question about the Federal Reserve's often repeated claim of "independence." One might ask, independent from what? Surely not banking or big business, if we are to judge from the massive interlocks revealed by this analysis of the district boards.

The System's mandate is too essential to the nation's welfare to leave so much of the machinery under the control of narrow private interests. Concentration of economic and financial power in the United States has gone too far.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

OWNERSHIP OF THE FEDERAL RESERVE

The only story left to tell about the Federal Reserve here is ownership. That is the only thing left, which common sense can't fill in for you. On page 179 of Secrets of the Federal Reserve, we find the following statistics regarding ownership of the FED:

As of 11:05 Tuesday, July 26, 1983, the list of member banks holding Federal Reserve Bank of New York stock includes twenty-seven New York City banks. Listed below are the number of shares held by ten of these banks, amounting to 66% of the total outstanding number of shares, namely 7,005,700:

	Shares	Percent
Bankers Trust Company	438,831	(6%)
Bank of New York	141,482	(2%)
Chase Manhattan Bank	1,011,862	(14%)
Chemical Bank	544,962	(8%)
Citibank	1,090,813	(15%)
European American Bank	127,800	(2%)
J. Henry Schroder Bank	37,493	(.5%)
Manufacturers Hanover	509,852	(7%)
Morgan Guaranty Trust	655,443	(9%)
National Bank of North Am	105,600	(2%)

The tremendous number of shares held today as against the original purchases in 1914 is brought about by Section 5 of the original Federal Reserve Act which called for a member bank to buy and hold stock in the district Federal Reserve Bank equal to 6% of its capital and surplus.

Currently, shares held by five of the above named banks comprise 53% of the total Federal Reserve Bank of New York stock. An examination of major stockholders of the New York City banks shows clearly that a few families, related by blood, marriage, or business interests, still control the New York City banks which, in turn, hold the controlling stock of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York.

It is notable that three of the banks holding Federal Reserve Bank of New York stock, in the amount of 270,893 shares, are subsidiaries of foreign banks. J. Henry Schroder Bank and Trust is listed by Standard and Poors as a subsidiary of Schrodgers Ltd. of London. The National Bank of North America is a subsidiary of the National Westminster Bank, one of London's "Big Five." European American Bank is a subsidiary of the European American Bank, Bahamas, LTD...

This information, derived from the latest issue of the tabulation available from the board of Governors, Federal Reserve System, is cited as current evidence which indicates that the controlling stock in the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, which sets the rate and scale of operations for the entire Federal Reserve System is heavily influenced by banks directly controlled by "The London Connection," that is, the Rothschilds controlled Bank of England.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

THE TRUE OWNERS OF THE FEDERAL RESERVE

What this doesn't show is that the true owners of the Federal Reserve are eight so-called Jewish families. These families control the entire FED, and only three reside in American. According to page 609 of *Called To Serve*, that source stated:

The Eight principal stock holders of the US federal reserve are: Rothschilds of London and Berlin, Lazard Bros-Paris, Israel Moses Schiff-Italy, Kuhn and Loeb-Germany, Warburg-Hamburg, Lehman Bros-NY, Goldman and Sachs-NY and Rockefellers-NY.

The above statement, about the eight Jewish families, is not totally correct. These families practice the Jewish faith but are not descendants of Jewish blood. In the book *The Thirteenth Tribe* ISBN 0-394-40284-7 by Arthur Koestler, a Jew, we are shown conclusively that the families in question are Khazars, or as remembered in a popular Jewish legend, Red Jews. That's important to know unless you don't understand that the international bankers bought and paid for Communism and that Communists aren't just called Reds by a coincidence. You may even want to take a close look at the Red-coats who fought against George Washington and the colonies. These Red Jews are descendants of an Asiatic tribe, with Edomites, Esauties and Chaldeans thrown in for good measure, and are not Semitic in blood. However, if you attempt to examine what they are doing, they instantly scream anti-Semitism and claim persecution. Since they are not Semitic in race, exposing what they do cannot be anti-Semitic, which shows that they are hiding behind a lie. Since it is prosecution and not persecution that we seek, we can identify another lie. Why? The answer should be becoming obvious and will be even more obvious as we move along.

It is amazing to me that we, here in America, continue to ignore the Bible. We were warned, in Revelation, Chapter 3, Verse 9, about those who would come, claiming to be Jews:

Lo! I give them of the synagogue of Satan, who are affirming themselves to be Jews, and are not, but say what is false...

I think that I have shown that you can consider our so-called economic system, controlled by these so-called Jewish bankers, to be false.

THE SIXTEENTH AMENDMENT

There is one other item of real interest in the story of the Federal Reserve, and that is the so-called Sixteenth Amendment to the Constitution (Author's note: This is the Amendment authorizing "our" so-called income tax). As I stated, the Federal Reserve System was created to indebt our nation and its people. The holders of the debt of a sovereign nation hold first lien on the labor and productive capacity of every citizen of that nation through taxation. If you are going to collect on a massive debt, it stands to reason that there has to be a massive system of taxation in place to accomplish the collection. Prior to 1913, there was not.

Let me explain, first off, that our income tax is not really an income tax. The US Supreme Court said in 1916 (in its ruling on the Sixteenth Amendment) that the Sixteenth Amendment did not change the US Constitution because of the fact that Article 1, Section 2, Clause 3, and Article 1, Section 9, Clause 4 of the Constitution were not repealed or altered; the US Constitution cannot conflict with itself. The Court also said that the Six-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

teenth Amendment merely prevented the income duty from being taken out of the category of INDIRECT tax and placed into the category of DIRECT tax.

Therefore, it's an excise tax which you contract to pay. Because it is an excise tax on doing business, you must voluntarily contract to (as in voluntary servitude or voluntary compliance) pay it on your income, and that is what it says in your IRS tax guide. Voluntary compliance.

Of course, you're supposed to assume that it is a required voluntary compliance. Here is where the Constitution continues to get in the way of the bankers. How can you be required to file an excise tax return when the Fifth Amendment to the Constitution says "...nor shall be compelled...to be a witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty, or PROPERTY, without due process of law..." There are still to many restrictions in the Constitution for the bankers.

You cannot be compelled, nor can you be deprived of your property without due process of law until you waive your Sovereign Rights under The One True God. Then, why are people sent to jail for income tax evasion? Because they violated a contract with the federal government. Of course, many People did this in order to get a return of their withheld money, and return is the key word here, which is why withholding was set-up, as in return of your withheld income. Of course, if you fail to volunteer (as in voluntary servitude, see the Thirteenth Amendment), an IRS agent will explain your obligation in exhaustive detail, and he wouldn't lie to you, would he? It is morally reprehensible to give (volunteer) to the government anything not forced from you at the point of a gun.

Unfortunately, the IRS is the point of a gun. This brings up the question as to why we have a terrorist organization funded by Americans. This organization (the IRS) obviously operates outside the bounds of the Constitution as its use of tax courts proves. But is the IRS even part of America? You may find it of some interest that Treasury Delegation Order No. 92 states that IRS employees are trained under direction of the Division of "Human Resources" (U.N.) and that the Commissioner (International), by the "Office Of Personnel Management." In the 1979 Edition of 22 U.S.C.A. 287, The United Nations, at page 248, you will find Executive Order No. 10422. In this order you will find it detailed that the Office of Personnel Management is under the direction of the Secretary General of the United Nations.

The IRS is also a member of a one hundred and fifty nation pact called the "International Criminal Police Organization". Details on this membership can be found at 22 U.S.C.A. 263a e l b. The "Memorandum and Agreement" between the Secretary of the Treasury/Corporate Governor of "The Fund" and "The Bank" and the Office of the US Attorney General would indicate that the Attorney General and his associates are soliciting and collecting information for Foreign Principals. For more detailed information see The United States is Bankrupt Now by John Nelson.

PUBLIC SERVANTS?

Look it up. Where are tax courts authorized in the Constitution? Where does a foreign power such as the U.N. have the authority to tax American citizens? Think about it. Then, think about the delusion most public servants are under, such as sheriffs and police officers. An IRS agent goes to one of them and says, "I have a paper here. You have

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

to go with me to seize the property listed.” The officer dutifully goes with the IRS agent, without questioning or looking at anything but an ID. What is the paper, and who authorized or signed it? The paper is nothing, and the IRS agent himself signed it. There is no due process, and the agent is actually going to steal the property listed with the assistance of the required public official. Please note that the Supreme Court has ruled that the notice by the IRS agent constitutes due process in this certain circumstance. There is a reason for this circumstance to exist in direct contradiction to the Constitution!

THE REAL PURPOSE OF SOCIAL SECURITY

Take Social Security for instance. I have a January 10, 1986 letter from the Department of Health and Human Services to a Mr. Schiefen. In this letter, it is stated that “Social Security is a voluntary system...” Does that come as a shock to you? Reading the rest of the letter is interesting because they also reveal the true purpose of Social Security numbers; taxation, and use by the banks. When you understand what is going on, the deliberate use of double talk in this letter becomes very obvious.

For instance, in paragraph number three, it is stated: “...requiring each taxpayer to furnish an identifying number...” This leads people to believe they must have a social security number in order to work or to do virtually anything. The truth of the matter is that there is a legal definition of taxpayer, and one of the first ways you become a legal taxpayer is by having a social security number! The real question is which comes first? You can not be conceived here, in America, and be a legal taxpayer without first having a social security number! A Social Security number also acknowledges that the federal government has jurisdiction over whomever has applied for the number (the agent becomes master over the principal). I wonder why the government is now requiring children, still in the hospital, to be issued a social security number? (It is very important to know that ALL hospitals are now designated as ports-of-entry to the private corporation called The United States government.)

In M.J. ‘Red’ Beckman’s book, *The IRS and the Black Robed Cover-up*, there is a lot of interesting information. This information is a listing of the forty-eight states that were supposed to vote on the ratification of the Sixteenth Amendment and what’s wrong in each state’s case with the so-called ratification of the Sixteenth Amendment. He claims, and I believe (Author’s note: This is one belief to which I will gladly admit, as I know the caliber of the men who have done the work on this vitally important question) he is right, conclusive proof that the Sixteenth Amendment to the Constitution was never properly ratified. You may order *The IRS and the Black Robed Cover-up* by sending to Common Sense Press, PO Box 15444, Billings, Montana 59103. Of course, it also becomes much clearer after you study this subject thoroughly that the federal government never declared the Sixteenth Amendment as ratified. They declared it as adopted, under the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress, which makes it legally binding on all second class citizens as administrative law (Author’s note: this means by statute, not by law) by the federal government.

To go into even more detail on this subject, Mr. Beckman and Bill Benson co-authored two hard cover books in 1985: *The Law That Never Was, Volumes I and II*, published by Constitutional Research Associates, Box 550, South Holland, Illinois 60473. These books are an exhaustive study of the ratification of the Sixteenth Amendment on a state by state

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

basis. They leave no doubt that the Sixteenth Amendment was never properly ratified by the several states, and the books contain government documents which show that members of the government knew this and declared the Sixteenth Amendment ratified (adopted) anyway. But by now, do you feel this is really a surprising state of affairs? Just remember; those who declared the Sixteenth Amendment adopted did so only within the context of the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress!

If you want to investigate this further, order *The Federal Zone: Cracking the Code of the Internal Revenue* by Mitch Modeleski. You can obtain it from Account for Better Citizenship, PO Box 6189, San Rafael, California Republic, Postal Zone 94903-0189/TDC. About this book, Martin A. Larson, columnist for the *Spotlight* newspaper, wrote:

The book offers 12 highly detailed and documented chapters in order to establish Modeleski's thesis that each and every one of the 50 States is a separate sovereignty. Whenever the term "United States" is used in the Internal Revenue Code, it means the limited area in which the federal government has exclusive jurisdiction. It does not include the territory occupied by the 50 States.

It is indeed stunning to realize how carefully crafted definitions such as those for "State" and "United States" are found in IRS instructions intentionally so complex that no one can understand them. This indicates that they are carefully prepared to accomplish what is perhaps the greatest fiscal fraud ever perpetrated upon any people in the history of the world.

As the sellers of the book explain:

The "federal zone" is a carefully constructed and enforced trap that has extorted the earnings and spirit of countless Americans. Like any other lie, the scrutiny of truth will break it.

A simple matrix is the key to a complex deception.

The *Federal Zone* is 456 pages of incisive documentation that cracks the Internal Revenue Code. By convincing most Americans that they were inside its revenue base, Congress reaped trillions of dollars and became the masters rather than the servants of We the People of the 50 States.

Author Mitch Modeleski shows conclusively how most Americans are, in fact, outside the "federal zone" and what they can do about it. Already sold out in its first edition, this book has become the standard of proof that our income tax system is the greatest fiscal fraud in the history of the world. One thing Mr. Modeleski did miss is the contractual nature of taxation, and what to do about that. Once again, see the book, *Strategic Withdrawal*.

Of course, how many of you are aware that not one dollar of your income (excise) tax goes to the Federal Treasury? (I know. Some income tax dollars do reach the Treasury, about \$23 from each \$1000 collected. For my purposes, that IS nothing.)

Have you ever written a check to the IRS? Go look at it. On the back it will say, "Deposit to any Federal Reserve Bank in payment of US government debts." Do you think this may be part of the reason why they are careful not to let the majority of American citizens know the Federal Reserve is privately owned? That is the one thing wrong in the statement above, where they say: "Congress has reaped trillions of dollars..." It is not

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Congress and the Treasury, which reap the benefit of the income tax; it is the Federal Reserve that reaps the benefit!

I also realize that no matter what I tell you about the income tax, some of you are going to shake your head and wonder about all of the nuts running around loose out there. Tax protesters, again! What about David Rockefeller? Do you mind that he pays no income tax? How about those billions of dollars that the super rich have tied up in tax exempt foundations? Do you mind that all of the profit those foundations make is tax exempt? There are reasons why the super rich don't pay taxes. They were never intended to pay taxes in this system! Taxation is for the poor and the middle class. Am I a tax protester? No, I just have this weird interpretation of the law which says that I have the same rights as David Rockefeller!

AMERICA'S DEBT: PAID IN FULL?

Can America ever pay off her debts, public or private, using the system the Federal Reserve controls? Of course not. Just look at this logically. The amount of standing debt in this nation, about \$16,000,000,000,000, far exceeds the amount of money (debt) in circulation at any given time.

So what happens if the banks just quit lending as they did in 1812, 1837, 1893, 1907, 1919 and 1929? So what happens if you take, or are called to take, a substantial portion of the existing money (debt) and apply it to the standing debt? Depending upon the amount applied out of existence, a recession is precipitated, or a Depression is created as industry grinds to a halt for a lack of funds and a lack of customers with funds. In fact, the amount of debt (money) in existence each year must increase by a percentage at least equal to the average amount of the interest being charged by the banks. If this does not occur, a slump is precipitated as there is less money around as the banks continue to act as a siphon, drawing money (debt) out of existence as loans are paid down.

It is a simple matter of fact that this is a weak situation, just increasing the money supply by the amount of interest the banks are charging (Author's note: Of course, this increase occurred after you have replaced (borrowed back) all of the principal debt, which had been paid back in the preceding year), because of our negative balance of trade payments and the hoped-for expansion of our economy. Anything, which removes money (debt) from our shores, from interest to the purchase of a foreign car, brings us that much closer to a recession or, in our next case, a Depression. Do you begin to see why the 18-20% interest charged on credit cards is so damaging?

CAN AMERICA CUT HER DEFICIT?

No, but she will. The Federal Reserve and her minions are busy burying the federal government with as much debt as they can to keep this bubble afloat while restricting the growth of money (debt) creation to business.

If you doubt that, go ask a small businessman, farmer, or rancher. He will tell you that the banks will not lend him any money (debt). Why?

Ask a banker. He'll tell you, "The FED won't allow us to." I've asked several bankers and received the same answer each time. There are reasons given, but the reasons are immaterial. It is the effect, which is important, and that effect is the dumping of the creation of money (debt) upon the public back. This allows access through taxation to the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

pocket books of even those who refuse to indebt themselves to the banks and is a rock solid indication that we are almost out of time and near a New World Order.

And the last indication that you will have of the impending implosion of debt will be when this is reversed and the government cuts its deficits and interest rates drop low, so that the debt burden falls on the People instead. Then, you know they are close to pulling the plug.

Can we change what is going on? Yes, we can, but not without addressing the following issues: educating the public, and changing our monetary system away from one founded on debt creation.

Is our nation's wealth to be thought of as bottomless? No, I think not. Nothing exists in an endless supply as even the sun will one day fail. Then, what happens when something continually draws that wealth from you without refunding anything? What if that something acts like a leech, continually drawing its sustenance from your blood (money)? But unlike a leech, the Federal Reserve never attains a point of satiation and continues to feed as a spider does upon a fly until nothing is left but a desiccated husk. Is that where we wish to live, in a dried-out husk of a country? Do we really wish to raise our children as tenants and to live and work in a nation our forefathers settled, now foreclosed and owned by the international bankers, and all due to a lie? That is surely our fate if we continue to stand by and watch as the greed of the Rothschilds, Rockefellers, Morgans, Warburgs and their brethren swallow our nation whole as they have swallowed much of the world already.

In conclusion, let Mr. Robert H. Hemphill, credit manager of The Federal Reserve Bank, Atlanta, Georgia, have the final say:

If all the bank loans were paid no one would have a bank deposit and there would not be a dollar of coin or currency in circulation. This is a staggering thought. We are completely dependent on the commercial Banks. Someone has to borrow every dollar we have in circulation, cash or credit. If the banks create ample synthetic money we are prosperous; if not, we starve. We are absolutely without a permanent money system. When one gets complete grasp of the picture, the tragic absurdity of our hopeless position is almost incredible, but there it is. It is the most important subject intelligent persons can investigate and reflect upon. It is so important that our present civilization may collapse unless it becomes widely understood and the defects remedied very soon (Author's note: This quote is from page nine of the book, *The Buck Stops Here! Now!*)

The most important lesson of this report is simply this: It is impossible, using our present economic system to balance the Federal budget and eliminate the deficit without creating a severe Depression.

Did you know that Paul A. Volcker once wrote a book, entitled *The Rediscovery of the Business Cycle*? He wrote it in the 60s, and on page 32 of that book, he states:

It could be interpreted symbolically as the demise of the doctrine of annually balanced budgets. Memories of 1937, when concern for a balanced budget had led to both tax increases and expenditure reductions...

Mr. Volcker then goes on to explain, very clearly, that budgetary deficits are needed in order to keep the economy functioning. The problem in 1937 was simply that the FED

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

had not yet broken the politicians completely to lead. They were still foolishly trying to balance the budget as if it were a good thing to do! In looking at our deficits today, I would have to observe that the small oversight of 1937 has been rectified.

This foolishness of politicians has exhibited itself eight times since we went off the gold standard in the 1930s. That is how many times we have had a balanced federal budget since 1933. The last time this occurred was in 1969. Each time, not surprisingly, this balancing of the budget led the nation directly into a severe recession. There is always a reason for events which occur!

If you are a citizen of these united States, it is important that you understand some basic facts. Those basic facts are contained in this report. Go back and read this report as many times as you have to until you thoroughly understand just how simple our economic system really is. Then you will understand how important it is for the safety of you and your family for you to get completely out of debt. You should also understand by now how important it is that you begin to educate those close to you as to how our system really works. Then, volunteer to talk to service clubs, schools, teachers, your church or wherever you can find people willing to listen and learn. Together, that's how you and I will make a difference. You and everyone else in America are either part of the solution, or you are part of the problem. There is NOT an in-between course.

STOP! Right now. Do not reread this report and do not go on to another book. Put this report down. Do not turn on the radio or the TV. Don't talk to anyone. **JUST STOP AND THINK!** What you have just read here is actually very simple. Why wasn't this subject taught to you in school? Why isn't it written about in the newspapers you read? Why aren't the politicians you are voting for discussing this? Have you heard it talked about on the radio or TV? Understanding these simple questions should run a shiver up your back, and it should go a long way in demonstrating to you where change in America **MUST** come from...**YOU!**

Just exactly how controlled is America? What if I could show you convincing evidence that the last Presidential election in America was a complete sham? Would that get your attention enough to make you want to learn more and to pass on that which you are learning to others?

On February 21, 1991, during the 102nd Congress, 1st Session, H. RES. 86 was introduced by Mr. Gonzalez. This resolution was for the express purpose of:

Impeaching George Herbert Walker Bush, President of the United States, of high crimes and misdemeanors.

If you will take note of the date of this Resolution for Impeachment, it was well before the last election. How many Democrats mentioned this during the campaign? How many times did Perot or Clinton mention this Resolution for Impeachment? How many members of the media, including that great champion of George Bush, Rush Limbaugh, mentioned this Resolution? Was this just an oversight? An accident, do you suppose? Articles of Impeachment are not minor items. They are very serious matters, and have been filed very seldom in the history of the United States, up until the last few years, of course. The Democrats controlled the House of Representatives; yet, they did not make an issue out of this Resolution. Why? Because this election was already fixed, and everyone in-the-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

know understood that Bush could not be reelected, or he would have been impeached! If not on this Resolution, then there were others which would have been filed sooner or later on any number of counts including treason, bribery, etc.

You can find Mr. Gonzalez speech on this Resolution for Impeachment and the Resolution itself in the Congressional Record-House, for January 16, 1991, on page H520, and following Section 1310.

The details on how this election was fixed involve Mr. Perot and his deliberate actions to spilt the Republican vote so that Clinton would be elected. Please study the election of 1912 where the Bull Moose campaign of Theodore Roosevelt, who was a Republican President in 1908, was used in order to make sure that Woodrow Wilson was elected President. Roosevelt was backed by the money kings, in order to split the Republican vote and defeat a Republican President who would not do the bidding of the money kings. Wilson was elected with about forty-two percent of the vote, and the rest, as they say, was history.

But to understand exactly what Mr. Perot's role in this so-called election really was, we have to know a little more about him. For instance, his banking connections go directly to David Rockefeller's Chase Manhattan Bank, and he has joined the Council on Foreign Relations. Mr. Perot, in 1979, received the Winston Churchill award (Author's note: It is very important to know that Winston Churchill and Cecil Rhodes were dear friends with very closely shared beliefs). He is one of only four individuals who has received this award. Perot claims that Winston Churchill has always been his hero.

During and after his campaign for President, Perot liked to play on words by stating that you could join his United We Stand group as a R-O-A-D Scholar for Fifteen Dollars. This information will have a lot more impact on you after you study about Cecil Rhodes and the Rhodes' Scholars, and Rhodes stated intention that Rhodes scholarships be used to train the men necessary to return America to British domination. .

Perot's wife, Margot, whom we seldom hear much about, is a descendent of a long line of Englishmen—the Birminghams. Her maiden name was Gertrude Margot Birmingham, daughter of a wealthy banker named Donald C. W. Birmingham and his wife Gertrude (Price) Birmingham. The further you dig under Ross Perot, the clearer it becomes that he had massive help in acquiring his billions of dollars. Such help always has a heavy price which must be paid.

Matthew 7:15 - Beware of false prophets who come to you in sheep's clothing, but underneath are ravenous wolves.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART VII SLAVERY

Understanding this part—after the others—is not difficult, and it is very necessary. The problem with us is that we do not understand that when the old Israelites asked God for a King, they were really asking for slavery, and slavery has been the natural state of man ever since.

It does not matter if you wear your chains openly, or partly hidden as they are today in America. The condition exists nevertheless, any time you can be called into military service at the whim of the state or if any part of your property can be seized at the whim of the same government or of any of its agents. That is part of the privilege of the King, that he may make ANY law he pleases, including that law that takes your property, or your life. The King's privilege includes the ownership of EVERYTHING in the Kingdom, including you. Welcome to "Amerika."

WHAT IS MONEY?

Money; In usual and ordinary acceptation it means coins and paper currency used as circulating medium of exchange, and does not embrace notes, bonds, evidences of debt, or other personal or real estate. Lane v. Railey, 280 Ky. 319, 133 S. W.2d 74, 79, 81.

The complete lack of understanding concerning money, that I see in my fellow Americans, has astonished me to no end. Of course, that astonishment was years ago when I had first begun my studies. Since then, I have been equally astonished at my naiveté in considering that other Americans were lacking in understanding. My own ignorance became the driving force for my learning, and that must be anyone's first concern. Only study, and knowing that each of us has a long way to go in order to really understand, pierces the conditioning and programming that we have all been subjected to. Most Americans accept that which they are told very readily; this acceptance makes Americans very susceptible to conditioning and to programming. Why do you think they call television "programming?"

The above explanation of money was taken from Black's Law Dictionary (6th edition). It has little or no relationship to the Truth, but then, hardly anything in Black's actually does. To understand Black's, a person must study for a long time, because the definitions given in Black's are all for very specific reasons. Few of those reasons have anything to do with Truth; they are simply there to serve the purposes of the men (the International Bankers) who derive a benefit from the use of the private system of statutory

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

(private, contract law for public purposes) law (using the banker's enforcement surrogates of the American Bar Association), which covers up the Babylonian Monetary System (that's what the "money system" actually is) of the Federal Reserve System.

(A side note: BAR, to the best of our understanding at this time, is British Accreditation Regency; undoubtedly a private stock company, the majority of which is owned by the Bank of England and the Crown of the the City of London.)

For instance, in the above definition it says: In usual and ordinary acceptation... What does this mean? It means that this is not necessarily the truth, it's just what everybody accepts as a belief. What is a belief? A belief is something not based on fact, but accepted without proof being offered. It is something accepted on faith, so any belief can be attributed to religious principles. Think about this very carefully anytime you make a silly statement such as, "I believe in the government!"

In the above quoted definition, Black's also mentions real estate, but if you do not understand the term "real estate," you have no way of seeing what it is that "they" are referring to. Real estate comes from the word "Realty," and English land law is based upon the ownership of all realty by the Sovereign, i.e., the King, under the King's Allodium. Thus from the Crown, all titles flow (the "Crown" is separate and distinct from the King, and comprises, generally, all those whose interest it is to keep the current King in power for their own benefit. Today, the "Crown" in England specifically refers to the bankers of "the City" of London). Under this system of "real estate," the title to land is held in the form of "fee simple absolute" (sound familiar?). In modern English tenures (i.e., tenant), the term "fee" signifies an inheritable estate, being the highest and most extensive interest anyone—other than the King—could have in the feudal system.

(A side note: to continue we must understand the word system; a system is an artificial creation of the few, designed for the express purpose of benefiting the same few, at the expense of the many. A few examples are; government (not established under The True God's Law); church (not established under The True God's Law); religion (not established under The True God's Law); etc. The only way a system works as the few design it is, when the many are programmed to think it benefits them. Think about this carefully and think of Part VI, and what is written there concerning the FED, as you continue to learn about and understand the true nature of "credit.")

"Simple" means that you may transfer/pass on your estate without restraint, as long as your heirs stay in favor with the King and maintain the tribute payments when due!

"Absolute" merely denotes that the entire estate could be transferred, assigned or passed to heirs. "Fee Simple Absolute" designates mere user privilege on the land (i.e., real estate), subject to the King's Allodium. Allodium means ownership in your own Right, without owing any rents (property tax), tribute or service to any master. This also means that there is no substance to Real Estate because there is no ownership—only the interest of a tenant.

To really understand what I am getting at, it is very necessary to know where your so-called property tax (as well as all other state taxes) is actually going and who is benefiting from the same. All taxes collected by the State of, or the County of, or the City of corporate franchises of the federal corporate state are subject to having a certain per-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

centage of the said taxes taken before they are allocated for local uses. This is to pay the State of franchise tax on the federal corporate bankruptcy. Simply obtain a copy of the Comptroller's Report to the Governor of your respective State of and examine the trust funds being paid into, from every taxing authority in the state. Ask some pointed questions concerning these trust funds and why payments are made into them before accountability is required at the state level. Good luck! It is also interesting to note here that ALL taxes are under Admiralty jurisdiction.

Remember, there are no state taxes when the State of is a federal franchise. ALL taxes today are federal in nature and derive under contract from and through the UCC, and are levied against privileges extended by the god-state (faith, anyone?).

Substance can only be determined by that which is left when all privileges are removed. If your ownership is determined by privilege, and not by Right, then there is no substance to the ownership, and if the county can move you out for the failure to pay your property tax, then—by definition—your ownership is through the state's privilege and not by the Rights detailed in the Declaration of Independence.

After all privileges have been removed, what you have left is what you own. If there is nothing left, you own nothing, and have arrived at the perfect description of socialism/communism/democracy/capitalism/Judaism!

But I will guarantee to you that you are not going to learn this type of detail by studying Black's Law Dictionary! (It is very important to note here that Black's Law Dictionary, 6th Edition, has a TABLE OF BRITISH REGNAL YEARS on page 1657. No United States Presidents are listed in the book. This is a clear message as to where Black's Law Dictionary originates.) And, if we are not going to learn these important details from Black's, then where do we turn for the Truth?

Unfortunately, there is no simple answer for that question. Most of what we need to know is scattered over many books and texts, and some of it has yet to be rediscovered. Many of the details about the Law in this nation(s) have been carefully hidden away, or obscured by years of deliberate lies and half-truths (which by definition are lies). The one place we can turn to for answers is Scripture, but most no longer believe that, and those who do believe it have so little basic understanding or education that most of Scripture is unfathomable.

The details concerning money are some of the most carefully concealed subjects in the world, for if the American People were ever to begin to understand this subject thoroughly, the ability of the bankers to prey upon them would end overnight! That is how important this subject is, because it is only through understanding how the banker's Predation is done, and the real intent of that Predation (the actual, physical claim of ownership of the people of the nation), that enough understanding comes forth to break the years of conditioning by the Predators upon We the People.

So, that said, just what the heck is money?

A medium of exchange, right? I mean, how complicated can this subject be?!

Well, yes, the accepted explanation is that "money" is a medium of exchange. But to really understand whether that is the truth or not, we simply need to look at the definition in Black's. That is what "they" say, so just for starters, I would mistrust that explanation,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

since anything in Black's serves the banker's purposes or it would not be there! And, if it serves the banker's purposes, then it probably does not serve the People's purposes.

Yes, "money" does serve as a medium of exchange, but that does not explain what "money" is. It simply tells us the use of money. An object's use is not the definition of that object! And, if they are not giving us the true and complete definition, is it possible that there is a reason for such an omission?

So, if "money" is not just a medium of exchange, then is it gold and silver? That is what the Constitution says, that no State shall make Anything but gold and silver a payment in tender of debt. So does that say that gold and silver are money? Yes, gold and silver can be used as "money", as tender in payment of debt, but does that mean that they ARE money?

No—gold and silver simply fulfill the command in the Bible that a man must be paid in substance for his labor. And, gold and silver are a compact and valuable substance with which to heed this command. But according to my understanding, any substance, agreed upon by both parties, could be used as the substance to pay a man for his labor. Never doubt for a single moment that Pay is an exacting Command.

So what is the secret? What is money? Why are we commanded, under Biblical Law, to use substance to pay a man for his labor?

Because "money," as we understand gold and silver to be, is simply a substance used to compress time. That is actually what "money" is—compressed time. Therefore, money IS time in a very literal sense. We have all been told this in a business sense, that time is money, but we have ignored the absolute truth buried in that "figure of speech."

Anyone, no matter what the level of his skill or his knowledge, trades his time as a means to sustain life. He can grow a garden and build his own shelter, or he can labor for someone else and take his PAY to exchange for food and shelter, but it is the time he spends—the time which is a gift from his and our Creator—which he expends in sustaining his life, and the lives of those dependent upon him.

What we call money is simply a storage unit for time wherein time is compressed for storage so that it may be converted for a later, more convenient use or at a different location.

For instance, when you hire a man (you actually hire his time) to till your field, the man consumes a portion of the time that is allotted to him upon this earth, in the performance of your labors. When his labor for you is completed, he arrives in your presence for payment (tender in payment of debt; your labor performed, your debt in time for his time; how did you obtain the "money" with which to pay him?). Payment may be arranged in a number of ways—food, clothing, shelter, or some other substance. Gold and silver have for many thousands of years been that other substance. And when you place those silver or gold coins into that laborer's hands, he has literally taken the time spent in your fields and compressed it into those coins. Just as you took the time spent in managing the fields/farm, doing the planting, harvesting, and/or performing other labor to obtain those gold or silver coins in your own Right, as a means of storing your own Time.

At some point in the future, when your laborer has need of his time to be exchanged for food, shelter, clothing or any other item that he needs or desires, he will take that

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

stored time and transfer it out of those coins, by expending them. The time that he had labored in your fields is thus used to fulfill his needs, whether it is done tomorrow, next week, next month or several years down the road. The point is, his time was safe, as long as it was stored for his later use in some form of substance, ready for him to spend that time at his convenience.

Let us place you in a similar situation. You go down to the store and purchase food. What did you use to PAY for the food—"money?" From where did you obtain the "money,"—from your PAY check? How did you earn the PAY check? You received the PAY check because you labored last week working for your "employer," and he was obligated to PAY you for that time consumed (something consumed can never be replaced). And that "money," for which you consumed your time, is where the "money" came from to purchase your food, so in a very real sense, you have literally spent your time in exchange for the food you and your family need to sustain life, and for your shelter, your transportation, every need and luxury item you own along with anything else in your possession—provided, of course, that you did not steal, as bankers do, what is in your possession!

And for this reason, there is a point-of-fact that must be mentioned here. Namely, Federal Reserve Notes, when obtained by a man through the performance of labor, thus by the expenditure of his Time, ARE lawful money. And it is only through the control of "our" tribunals-called-courts by the American Bar Association that the jurisdiction claimed over Americans by the owners of the Federal Reserve for the privilege of using Federal Reserve Notes can be maintained. (The claim is that this jurisdiction comes about through the Common Law declaration of bankruptcy in 1928 of the corporate federal government in an international tribunal by which you, through contractual obligations acquired voluntarily through licenses, and other privileges [such as Social Security] you have agreed to participate in. Of course, without full disclosure, the fraud is self-apparent.)

(A side note: the owners of the Federal Reserve, in their excessive greed, have, through law (statutory codes) acquired a monopoly on the exchange unit in America. This monopoly is called the Federal Reserve note. Because of this monopoly, and no one having any choice in what they use today, the use of Federal Reserve notes, as bankruptcy script of the United States government, under common law, becomes in the nature of a gift. Unfortunately, arguing this in a federal tribunal is a waste of valuable breath. By the way, Federal Reserve notes are obligations of the UNITED STATES under the Brenton Woods agreement of 1947, and are based on SDRs (Special Drawing Rights [under bankruptcy]) according to the international bankruptcy of the corporate UNITED STATES.)

How free or how equal, can any man be when he must consume his time to earn the necessities of life, compared to the man who is privileged, by fear/force of government, to create the exchangeable storage unit of Time out-of-thin-air? The Privilege, which is ordained by statute, to create from nothing, an exchange unit with which to steal the Time of the citizens of the nation, creates the bondage of men, which is simply the owning of the labor (Time) of men. That is all this or any bondage is—the owning of the labor (Time) of a man. No matter what name the bondage is done under, i.e., slave, resident, serf, or peon—bondage is simply control of the time that a man must consume in order to survive.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

It is a Maxim of Law that from nothing comes nothing. When a banker creates from nothing the exchange unit with which to steal the labor/Time of the residents of his town, that is exactly what he has created—nothing. Man can only create NOTHING! Man does not have the power of God! And from that “nothing,” flows only waste, despair, grief, slavery, and virtually every ill that stalks this once great land.

Almost EVERY ill effect! From this perversion of Law comes the vast majority of all divorces, all bankruptcies, the vast majority of the homeless and the poor, our nation’s slums, the ecological damage to our nation and planet, and the hand to mouth existence of most of the bonded servants of this nation’s “banks”. This is what creates the stress, the hopelessness, the drug addiction as a means of escaping a hopeless existence, and the overwhelmingly large portion of our crime problem; as people—who deserve better—turn to crime as the only means of bettering themselves in a system which does not permit any other way of actually getting ahead. As Scripture says, the root of ALL evil is the LOVE of money.

How safe is your Time, stored in the private paper of these bankers? How safe is your family when the coming cashless society of the bankers puts every minute of your Time into their complete oversight and control? Think about that because every time you use one of the banker’s private debt instruments (credit/debit cards), you put your stamp of approval upon the banker’s plans to reduce you to complete servitude through their complete control of your stored Time!

And yes, we will always call gold and silver “money”, but that does not change the real nature of money. There is nothing that a Man has to spend/consume upon this earth, except his Time. We come into this life naked, with only Time on our hands, and we will leave here in the same manner. No matter what you think you may have accomplished or accumulated on this earth, you still will have spent nothing but Time, because everything else you may have owned, consumed or possessed upon this Earth is still here after you have left, even if in a different form from when you first touched it! The only thing you can actually consume, that you can completely use up on this earth, is Time.

This also exposes one of the bigger lies that our so-called ministers have been telling to us for so many years. Think about it. How many times have you been told that you are born into this world with nothing? This is a bold-faced lie, because you are presented at conception with the greatest of all gifts by our Creator—the gift of Time. It is how you elect to spend this gift of time that will make the difference in how you spend the next 10,000 years!

How you spend this gift of Time will determine how you leave this earth. And no, you do not leave this earth with nothing, for you leave with either condemnation or salvation (and don’t bother to argue with me about it! For if I am right, then you lose for your ignorance, and if you are right, you still lose because your existence ceases at death. I’d rather not be faced with such a stupid approach, particularly since Scripture is so easily provable to a dedicated seeker of Truth.)

The other Truth that is revealed to us by understanding Time is in the Scripture that tells us that the root of all evil is the love of money,—not some evil, not even most evil—ALL evil! But to understand what is meant, you have to understand that Time is money, and that what is meant is the love of human bondage for personal benefit, always through

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

force, fraud and deceit. And always, so that the few can live idly at the expense of their fellow man, producing nothing.

And if a Man is Lawful, there is virtually no chance that he can accumulate the immense stores of time that constitute being “rich,” just by spending his own Time doing so. Can he be well off—very comfortable—yes, because an industrious, righteous man is rewarded in this life, just as a willing violator of the Law is sanctioned in this life! (If you do not understand this, then you should study the dietary Laws of the Bible, and then study the causes of most diseases. Disease IS a sanction of The True God’s Law, for disobedience of His Word.)

Therefore, in order to accumulate vast amounts of stored Time, a man must—to be very rich—prey upon other Men and steal their Time for his own personal gain. (There are exceptions to this, but very few. A few men have found immense wealth, such as gold, silver or diamond mines, which are not the Lawful property of the People. Almost all natural resources ARE the Lawful property of the People, to be shared equally.) Perhaps the parable in the Bible that tells us that a rich man has so little chance of going to heaven now makes more sense.

Understanding these subjects and finally knowing the true meaning of real estate explains to you why Black’s Law Dictionary says that real estate is not “money.” Because “real estate” is solely a “mere user” privilege of the realty and there can be no ownership, thus no substance, involved.

TO STORE TIME

Throughout recorded history, many types of substances have been used to store time. Almost all of them have been found to be lacking after their use has been tried for a period of time. For instance, some of the forms of substance that have been used as money are: sea shells [break, too easily found], silk [perishable, too easily controlled by a few], grain [perishable], rocks of different size or shape [bulky, not easily transported or safely stored] and even human beings [care and feeding of].

Besides these few examples, dozens more types of substance have been tried. None worked as well as gold and silver. This weeding-out process took thousands of years, until today, gold and silver are recognized by those “in the know” as the most acceptable storage unit for Time (“money”). To understand this, simply examine the complete absorption of the bankers in their never ending quest to collect every scrap of gold and silver they can lay their hands on, despite their claims that our paper is as good as gold.

Once the bankers control all, or at least a great majority, of the available gold and silver “storage units,” then it is simple for them to substitute their “exchange medium” (debt instruments) into the economy.

Why—because it is through the substitution of debt instruments, in the place of substance, into the economy as “storage units” for the Time of the People that they steal or devalue the Time, the money, of the people of every nation that they control. They can accomplish this without the outward trappings of slavery (guns and chains), but it is slavery none the less. And, do not be lulled into a false sense of security, because as the wealth is concentrated in fewer and fewer hands, the chains and the guns become more readily used as the power of the few grows.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

WHAT IS INFLATION?

Is inflation increasing prices—of course not! Increasing prices are simply a symptom of the problem, but they are not the problem. Inflation is the term used by the bankers to conceal the real process of “inflation” which is the devaluation of the storage unit used as the exchangeable medium of the Time of the People of the nation. Inflation is simply the process through which the Time (the life force) of the People is appropriated by the privileged few for their own personal benefit and gain. The most important fact is, firstly, that the bankers must keep this process secret for fear that the people will awaken to what is going on and hang the bankers—which is exactly what has happened many, many times in the past. Never doubt for a single moment that inflation does not exist, except through a definable and specific plan of action. It is deliberate!

Understanding the real nature of money also explains why so-called equality can never exist. Some men can justify the Time they spend at an exchange rate of \$5.00 per hour/day; others can easily justify double, triple or ten times this amount because of their increased productivity in sustaining lives through their labor. A man who must spend his Time irrigating is not as valuable, nor should he be rewarded as much as the man who tills and plants or harvests the food, or the man who builds the shelters or levels the roadways, etc. (I hope I do not have to explain here that a lawyer, politician, judge, military man and their ilk have no productive capacity so there is no basis for any wage PAID to them. They are simply parasites scabbling for the scraps of the productive in society. Unfortunately, we permit them to write or to enforce laws, which enable their scraps to become quite impressive.)

On the other hand, because of the control of our society by the bankers, many dislocations exist in our nation. Corporations are a very good example. Corporations exist only to take control of immense wealth by the self-styled Elite, and to enable them to hide that control from the common man. This also explains how control of our major media is so carefully concealed in just a few hands. Wall Street, and the so-called stock market, simply should not and do not exist! They are a fiction we have been carefully programmed to see in our minds for the benefit of a few at the cost of many (a system).

And, as long as we think they do exist, the predatory actions, “Predation,” upon the people of the world will continue for the benefit of the few at the expense of the many—in direct opposition to the Law. Wall Street and corporations are just tools to steal the nation(s) from the people who create and sustain civilization. I mean, come on! How much sense is required to understand that no “government” has the “right” to “create” an “artificial being,” [i.e., a fiction, a nothing] with the same Rights as a Man. This is what governments do when they “create” corporations—they literally attempt to act as a god! Decide this day, which God you wish to serve—the god-state, or your Creator, and His Law. And do not tell me about how we are not under the Law, because you are either under His Law (about 728 of them), or the god-state’s laws and statutes (about how many millions of pages worth?).

The general principal of the creation of the god-state’s artificial beings revolves around and is in complete opposition of Christian Law through limited liability, which is the controlling principle of corporations. (For some interesting research, study incorporated churches.) They are intended to take the responsibility for illegal acts by the true

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

owners of the property and therefore stand as a buffer against the Law. The single most important aspect of Christian Law is personal responsibility, but that is absolutely not acceptable by the internationalists and their minions. When they break the Law, they want protection from the fruits of their actions on this earth, which is why they teach and believe that there is no greater power than them, which will hold them accountable at some point in time. So be it, and may The One True God have mercy upon them.

And the other purpose of the corporations is to hide from the People the true identity of exactly who has stolen all of the wealth of the nation through fractional reserve banking (artificial creation of debt instruments by the bankers).

Do you doubt this? Go down to the nearest mall and just walk through the place. Look at each business, and ask yourself how many of them are owned locally. Not very many of them, IF any are. Most of those stores are owned by large corporations, most of them multi-national in outlook and scope, and the People who once benefited as entrepreneurs—by owning small businesses in America—are left with no choice but to work—at very low wages—for those corporations. Those corporations have no concern for America or for her People.

Take a close look at where the vast majority of the goods sold in those stores come from and you will quickly learn where the industrial base of America has gone. Of course, I understand that this is just an accident—there could be no identifiable plan of action. As your standard of living in America, and as the standard of living of your children continues to drop, just keep telling yourself that. I assure you, the media (owned by the same men who own all of the other corporations) will continue to explain this “accident” to you in ever-exhaustive detail. Primarily, the media will concentrate on our “inability” to handle “debt.”

Those corporations have another privilege not extended to the average American. They are greatly benefited by a “bank” (many directly owned by a bank) through very easily created “credit” at very low Usury. Generally, you will find that these corporations are part of a business association where a bank and the various businesses around the bank are owned by the same people. This makes it virtually impossible for the average man to compete with them and their “creation of the medium of exchange” from nothing. This is why a real understanding of fractional reserve banking is necessary if you are to understand what is going on around you. Any of those businesses in an association with a bank, both owned by the same people, simply keeps its deposits (all deposits are the property of the bank—this means that they can fractionalize them) at the friendly bank so the bank can multiply the deposits six to ten times from thin air!

Once you understand how fractional reserve banking works for those “in the know,” Walmart and the other retailing giants make sense. How do you compete with someone who has the privilege of multiplying his daily receipts by six to ten times with no additional expense involved? Now you understand why so many businesses and corporations are owned by so few, super-rich individuals, why the gap between the rich and the poor keeps getting larger, and where the middle class is going. Only those who serve the Elite will comprise the middle class in the future—i.e., attorneys, judges, doctors, politicians, the military hierarchy, etc.

Understanding the “privilege” of corporation also explains why those artificial privi-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

leges of government (corporations) are subject to the so-called Income Tax and Man is not. (Man must contract for the income tax.) Corporations are the creations of government and as such are controlled/owned by government. (There is only ONE corporation in America. All corporations flow from the same Crown charter which “created” the federal corporation in 1871 [see Federal Corporation as defined at 28 USC 3002]). Thus, corporations are subject to the whims and desires of those who control the government.

This is also why the “government” must view Man only in a fictional corporate capacity, i.e., their “corporate shadow,” in order to justify and legitimize jurisdiction/ownership. (Jurisdiction IS a claim of ownership/interest). (In other places this fiction is not necessary, but in America the “government” can only control that which it creates, as in corporations. Once you begin to understand the problems created for the Elite in America by the restriction of the Declaration of Independence, the push for a convention to alter the Constitution becomes understandable.)

This “view” of Man is taken at the highest levels of “government” and carefully concealed from the masses, and from those who serve the masters of government. To reveal this view, and the real meaning (ownership of the People) of the view is to expose the lies and deceit practiced by the self-styled Elite, and this exposure always puts the Elite at grave risk—and with good reason!

THE REAL ISSUE

I hope that you are beginning to see the real issue, which is simply the protection of the Time of the People of ANY nation. Protection of their Time against the depredations of criminals that style themselves as bankers and/or politicians—when they are nothing but enslavers of Man for their own personal gain. And that is exactly what we are talking about; enslavement by stealing Time for the gain of very animalistic humans and their controlled imps. To accomplish this, the hidden master must have a physical claim of ownership of those under his control. That claim is hidden within the statement of jurisdiction.

Slavery is a very simple subject. It simply means that your owner/master will be fed first from the fruit of your labors/Time. Slavery does not even have to be an openly acknowledged state-of-affairs so long as the actions taken result in the owner/master being fed first. Inflation (the deliberate destruction of the storage unit of the people’s Time), is the most obvious of these crimes. However, it is not the only one. Reducing the people, as Roosevelt did in 1933, without their knowledge or consent, to a mere user status on the land; mere user of their cars, mere user of anything possessed, under Socialism/Communism/ Democracy

See Senate Document 43, “Contracts payable in Gold” written in 1933;

“The ultimate ownership of all property is in the State; individual so-called ownership is only by virtue of government, i.e., law, amounting to mere user; and use must be in accordance with law and subordinate to the necessities of the State.” This is still on the books; still in force and effect today.)

This “mere user status” which is hidden behind the lies of a Constitutional Dictatorship for the benefit of the money kings is another, much more obvious type of slavery. Slavery IS the owning of the fruits of the time spent/consumed by Human Beings upon

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

this earth! And, make no mistake about the above Senate Document 43—what it simply says is that the “government” has the right to tax anything and everything because the “government” owns everything, and that the government has the right to deny the “privilege” of “ownership/use” to anyone who is deemed to be a threat to those in power.

The third and most blatant claim of ownership of the Man, after inflation and the forced reduction of their status, is the creation of a “fictitious debt” by claiming the “privilege”—always through bribery and corruption—of charging interest, or—to understand a little better—to charge Usury upon the medium of exchange of time permitted to flow through the economy. It is only through control of this, that the bankers can work their inflation AND taxation tools against the people in order to steal from them to the extent that the banker’s greed finds necessary.

Just as ALL depressions and recessions are deliberate in nature and exist only for the gain of those with the power to arrange them. Recessions and depressions do not occur naturally! It is impossible! Recessions and depressions can only occur because the storage unit (medium of exchange) for the Time of the people is missing in a complicated society where barter is not a viable option. People want to create—to work and produce. People want to eat and enjoy the tremendous benefits of this earth. They do not willingly quit eating or working unless some outside force prevents them from doing so.

This is why the real treason being committed in this nation(s) is extending the privilege of “creating” the supply of the medium of exchange to a few criminals. Namely the Rockefeller (red fellow) and the Rothschilds (red shield) banking cartels (systems). And if you think that the use by the Communists of the color red (the British Redcoats are another example) is just an accident, then you have not yet seen the situation clearly or deeply enough. I strongly recommend that you read the book by Eustace Mullins entitled *The Curse of Canaan* so that you may better understand.

DIRECT TAXATION

What is DIRECT taxation? It is the taking, or the actual theft, of a man’s Time from him by force, police or military powers, of the government. This can not be accomplished without an interest of ownership being established in the laws of the nation, which clearly demonstrates that the state has a claim against the Time of a Man (see *Invisible Contracts* by George Mercier). A claim against a Man’s Time is a physical claim of ownership. And if you are still paying the so-called Income Tax, understand why you are being taxed by the federal state. They CLAIM ownership of you, and you willingly agree and contract with them! Their “brand” is the contractual Social Security number.

What is a “government?” It is a mindless beast, an illusion, which exists only in our minds and whose minions do that which they are directed to do. “Government” does not exist in the physical sense. It must be given force and effect by men. Only two forms of government have ever existed! They are (A) Dictatorship of man over other men for the benefit of a privileged few, or (B) a government “of the People, by the People, and for the People” under the Laws of The One True God. The (B) “government” can not exist except under the Law of the Creator! (Do you want to talk about Grace now?)

Man’s law, which must, by our nature, always result in type (A) government, is always written to exact some benefit from another man for the benefit of a few (see sys-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

tem). Never, in the history of the earth, has any law been written by man that did not cost another man some part of his substance and/or freedom. God's Law—on the other hand—is and was written to protect Man—principally from himself—but also from other men. How much sense, then, does it make to state that we are not under THE Law?

Power broadly spread: We, the People The United States Government

Power concentrated: the united States, as agents of the People Human Resources

Note the exact opposite nature of the two systems. The pyramid is the favorite symbol of the self-styled elite for a good reason.

In a Lawful government “of the People, by the People, and for the People,” the government has no jurisdiction over Man, and is strictly controlled by the Law. The only reason for the government's existence (under God's Law) is to protect the nation and the People, and to enforce the Law. Constitutions (We, the People thought) were intended to be instruments of Common Law procedure. The constitutions (state and federal) are supposedly strict restrictions on the actions of those who volunteer to serve the People in government; the constitutions DO NOT apply to the People! (Case law exists to show this.) It is only through extending jurisdiction (ownership) over Man through contracts that the second type of government—a government for the privilege of the few at the expense of the many—can be established. However, this statement, “through contracts,” is only true in America because of the Declaration of Independence. All other governments of the earth assume full jurisdiction over their people, and will enforce that jurisdiction at the point of a gun.

The jurisdiction claim of government is the claim of ownership of the time spent/consumed by the people of any nation. This is the general power exercised by all the governments of the earth—for the benefit of the few at the expense of the many—formed under the laws of man. That is all governments—including the United States government.

This ownership benefit is accomplished by and through the term taxation. This is the reason that a heavy, graduated income tax, a direct tax, is one of the planks of the Communist Manifesto — to appropriate (steal) the wealth of a people/nation and transfer that wealth to a privileged few — sound familiar? No Lawful government, which represents the People, can ever tax the people directly, for that IS a claim of ownership—ownership of the Time spent/consumed by the People. Think about this—a government of the People, by the People and for the People,” is an agent of the People, and the People are the principal. How can an agent tax the principal!?

All direct taxation is a claim of ownership. This is not only the so-called Income Tax, but property tax, which is a direct tax on real estate; a county or state tax on a motor vehicle, which is a direct tax on the vehicle; even a drivers license, which is a direct tax on the privilege to travel. All such taxes are direct claims of ownership by the state to the benefit of those who control the state and are simply methods of redistributing wealth in the only way that it has ever, throughout history, been redistributed: upwards from the People to the self-styled, corrupt Elite.

To take from one man's Time and give that Time to another is prohibited under a Lawful government. It is only a government that exists to prey upon Man for the benefit

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

of others that this Predation can occur. This is the lie of Democracy—that Man’s Time can be Lawfully appropriated/stolen for the benefit of another. The reason for this lie is to conceal from the People that the only beneficiaries of this system are the Elite who control the government.

If you doubt this, then take a walk through any of the Great Slums of any major city in America or in any city in the world where Democracy is proclaimed and see the result of “Democracy” for yourself. Take a careful look at the plight of these people trapped in despair and abject poverty, and understand that the only ones who benefit from the plunder of the Time of the people of any nation are those who control the government of that nation! Almost all of the plundered/stolen Time ends up in the hands of the few, corrupt, self-styled Elite. Very little is actually ever returned to anyone through so-called benefits.

(The figures showing the amount of transfer payments made in America are very revealing. If the amount spent on poverty was directly distributed to those listed below the poverty level, each and every one of the poor in America would receive well over \$45,000 each year. They obviously don’t.)

Remember, a government that does not exist to do the bidding of the people, exists for the men/man who control that government. Determine which situation exists and you can easily find where your Time is going. (Follow the money!) And note, once again, that America is in a fraudulent bankruptcy for the benefit of the international bankers, and that the Law in America is suspended by contract. This means that the government is no longer bound by the restraints of the constitution.

This explains why Americans have been fooled into coming under the rule of the Municipal Code of Washington, DC, as citizens of the District of Columbia, i.e., the well-known United States citizen we have all been trained to believe we are—as compared to the Citizenship detailed for us in Scripture.

THE UCC

The Uniform Commercial Code (the “Code”) is a unique system of statutory jurisdiction privately copyrighted by the American Law Institute and the National Conference of Commissioners on Uniform State Laws (see Business Law and the Regulatory Environment published by Irwin Publishing, 1986, page 15 of Appendixes), and is private, corporate commercial law used for public purposes. One of the more interesting aspects of the Code is that everything has a back door—a way of undoing, or of getting out of any provision of the Code. IN other words, there is a way around every provision of that Code! It is beyond my comprehension, how anyone could willingly choose to put themselves under such a system. Of course, the benefit of such a system for unprincipled men is that they cannot be held accountable for their actions. As long as they know all of the trap doors and neutralizing elements of the system, they have a get-out-of-jail-free-card usable anytime that the very wealthy wish. And since the “rich” control almost limitless amounts of fictional “exchange medium,” they can pay any number of scribes to find the trap doors while the poor and middle class can not, but instead must suffer under the tyranny of private law for public purposes.

In this regard, however, there are one or two provisions of the Code that are worthy

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

of note. For instance, on money...

The Code lists four things, which are “money.” Naturally, since the corporate UNITED STATES Government is in bankruptcy, we should understand that, Constitutionally, there can be no “money”, because that is the reason for a bankruptcy—no “money,” i.e., no gold and silver coin of the nation. So the Code does not and can not address the issue of gold and silver. The reason for the Great Depression (and all of the other “depressions” we have suffered through) was to allow the bankers to steal the “money” (and the literal Money) of the People of this nation; and they did a very good job of doing exactly that. To achieve their goal, they first had to eliminate/steal the substance (gold and silver—”money”) wherein the People of the several states could store their Time safely away from the bankers’ reach.

However, if you do not have any “money,” then something else must be substituted for use as a “medium of exchange” (money) in the economy. As I stated above, the Code lists four things as money:

1. Checks
2. Drafts
3. CDs
4. Promissory Notes (Not necessarily in this order.)

Of these four things, elsewhere in the code, we are told that checks, drafts and CDs are NOT money unless there is “money” on deposit to cover them! As I said, the Code contradicts itself every step of the way. Compare that to the Scripture, which can not contradict itself!

So what is “money” according to the Code? Only Promissory Notes. Why?

What gives a Promissory Note value? When you sign a Promissory Note, what are you promising/pledging to do? Aren’t you pledging your Time to make the note good? Do you not agree to make so many payments of so much “money” to pay the note back? And how do you obtain the funds to do so—with your Time, right? Then the value of a Promissory Note comes from the pledge of Time “to be spent” on the part of the signer thereof to make the note good. It is a pledge of Time. Therefore, what is the only money recognized in the Code?

TIME

How do the banksters work this to their advantage? First, we need to remember that there is no “money,” i.e., no exchange/storage medium of substance, in the system. So there has to be another way of allowing the system to run. So when you go to the bank and pledge your Time on a Promissory Note, the bank takes that Note, deposits it into a checking account, without your knowledge or consent, and writes a check to you from that account. (This is how we arrive at the term “check-book money.”) Since what has been deposited in the checking account is your Promissory Note, you must be the one to sign the check issued against it. However, the bank simply forges your signature, or uses another signature, to issue the check.

Simply put, under the Code, the bank takes a mortgage upon your Time, creates a fictitious deposit with the stroke of a pen and lends the “deposit” back to you (check-book money), after attaching Usury to the transaction. This creates a bonded servant

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

relationship between the bank and the “borrower”, through the ignorance of the “borrower,” for the exclusive benefit of the owners of the “bank” and those privileged to “charter” the private bank i.e., the owners of the Federal Reserve system. This is particularly true when you finally realize that it was actually the “borrower” who lent his Time to the “bank!” We lend our Time to the “bank” and the bank collects the Usury upon it! Just how stupid are we? Perhaps this is why the bankers quaintly refer to us as their “little slaves.”

Actually, when you lent your Time to the bank, the bank created a bookkeeping entry called check book money which is the bank’s debt and is entered on the bank’s books as a debit! In order to accomplish this and balance the books, your promissory note is stolen and entered as an asset of the bank! They literally steal your promissory note for their own exclusive benefit! And you—the bonded servant of the bank—have agreed to pay off the bank’s debt!

Never doubt for a single moment that the Code is the private law of the banksters—the international criminals who style themselves as bankers—for the bankruptcy of a nation. Perhaps you now understand better the interworkings of this system and the reason for its creation. And further, note that they are using private law for public purposes!

According to the United States Department of the Treasury, the only way to “create” money in this nation today is through local, private commercial banks. However, creation is the province of God, and I have just shown, and as I have always maintained, these local banks “create” nothing! All of their actions are based upon deceit and fraud, and they are literally stealing the Time of the People of America for their own personal gain.

Quite an ingenious system, don’t you think? And this system can not exist except through the ignorance of the people. Completely fraudulent and deceitful because the bank has “no interest” (i.e., no “money”) in the contract. In other words, the bank has neither provided nor given anything of value to justify their economic participation in the Note. Except...

What the little bankers (that’s every banker except the Rockefellers and above) don’t realize is that they will not benefit from this system, except for a long enough period of time to install it completely in America. Their participation is not wanted after they have served their purpose of assisting in the subjection of America.

Under the Statutory Jurisdiction of the UCC, all debt instruments MUST travel to the top of the system—to the Rothchilds and their ilk. They control the rules and there is no room for anyone who could grow rich enough to compete with them. The bankruptcy of the UNITED STATES is controlled through the Federal Reserve, the IMF, and the United Nations, and both the FED and the IMF answer to the U.N..

The U.N. is nothing but the private government of the Rothchilds—a private corporation operated out of Switzerland and once known as the British East Indies Company. Actually, the Dutch East Indies Company is where it all started. It is interesting to note that in Holland, several hundreds of years ago, the people became aware of the scams being perpetuated against them, and they simply, one fine day, hung all of the bankers in the nation. Believe me, the bankers are serious about gun control. It is the only way

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

they can be even halfway safe for any extended length of time. And not having gun control is the only thing keeping America from experiencing the atrocities of the Russian Revolution, which the bankers I am writing about were solely responsible for, as well as all of the other Communist atrocities world wide. It must be just a coincidence that all Communist holocausts primarily target Christians.

CHATTEL PROPERTY

No man's Time may be taken from him unless he is the chattel property of those who benefit from the taking. That is the essence of slavery; the owner/master will be fed first. So a man can not enter into a subjection/servitude contract with a bank under the laws of Usury unless he has a Social Security number—a brand, to show that he is the property of the state—i.e., property of those who control the state because the state, having no physical existence, can not own anything! Today, if you are a “taxpayer,” this means you are the property of the owners of the IMF and the U.N., and a voluntary correspondent to the International Bankruptcy of The (corporate) United States Government.

This is why, contrary to Biblical Law, a man must pay three times what a house or other property is worth to establish “mere user” privilege of the Realty, or half again as much to establish “mere user” privilege of a car or truck.

You pledge your Time, Usury is attached, and then you are given permission (privilege) to use your Time to claim the use of whatever you wish to possess, provided that your fees to the state are kept current (property tax and licensing fees). This is the very essence of Socialism, where the state has ownership/control of all property, for the taxation benefit of the so-called Elite, or of Feudalism. Feudalism and Socialism/Communism are one and the same.

The real failure point of this “system” comes within the greed of man. As the system grinds on, the amount of Usury and taxation reaches the point where the common man no longer can support himself or his family, and he simply walks away and, with his production gone, the “system” collapses. When you study history, always keep this in mind, because it is exactly what happened to every empire recorded in history. And, it happens just as soon as the wealth becomes concentrated in a few, greedy hands.

But to understand this completely, you have to face the truth of Empire/Socialism/Feudalism —ALL THINGS ARE PROPERTY OF THE “STATE,” AND THIS INCLUDES YOU. Since this nation is as thoroughly socialized as any in the world (except that the restrictions of the Constitution because of the Declaration of Independence [i.e., Constitution = instrument of Common Law {Biblical} procedure] are still in force and effect for those that understand the Law), and once you understand the real nature of Socialism/Feudalism, you need to read from Senate Document 43 again, about all property belonging to the State.

Senate Document 43, “Contracts payable in Gold” written in 1933;

“The ultimate ownership of all property is in the State; individual so-called ownership is only by virtue of government, i.e., law, amounting to mere user; and use must be in accordance with law and subordinate to the necessities of the State.”

This is still on the books—still in force and in effect today.

If you have no Rights, then you are the property. And the property being referred to

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

in that odious document is not land or cars—it is Rights. Rights are the only property that exists. Within those Rights are all other things, including the Right to own land, or a car, or anything else, including the Right to have the means to defend yourself. Those are the Rights that the Senate was talking about. Not your land, because without those Rights you are the chattel property, and property has no Right to own property, nor does property have any Right to the fruits of his/her own labor. Property may keep only that which the owner/master deems is permissible for him to possess (not own). Your master owns everything you have, and you are permitted to use it.

SLAVE: A human being over whom some other person has the same property rights as he has over a domestic animal which he owns. A slave has no legal status, no right [sic] of action in court, no property and can neither enter into a contract nor a valid marriage... (Rabin's Law Dictionary)

Do you understand the so-called "courts" that you enter into when summoned by the "law" or when you "sue" someone? To enter that court you must be "represented," i.e., you must step aside and represent yourself (pro se), or you must hire a BAR lawyer to represent you because you have no standing in that court! The very use of BAR controlled courts proves that you are a SLAVE!

Perhaps now you understand the soon to be 85%, currently 70%, accumulative tax burden that Bill Clinton predicts for America within the next few years! Make sure that you understand accumulative taxation. 70% accumulative taxation means that when you buy a loaf of bread for \$1.00, 70 cents is taxes! When you buy a home for \$100,000.00, \$70,000.000 is taxes!

Before we begin with a discussion about inflation, let's be sure that we clearly understand the Rothschilds and the "privileges" bought and paid for by them. The Monarchies of Europe, and the corporation known as The United States Government, gave the Rothschilds permission, because of bribery and corruption, of forcing Men into Economic Servitude through bondage of their Time to banks. This bondage does not have to be directly to the Rothschilds, because the small bankers can do nothing without paying "homage," monetary and personal homage, to the Rothschilds and their ilk.

This extends to each nation's taxpayers as well. Governments turn over "taxpayer backed bonds" to the Rothschilds; the Rothschilds turn the "promissory note-bonds" into "check-book money," and lend it back to the government. This creates an unpayable debt of bondage to the Rothschilds, and at the same time, it creates an uncontrollable government by greatly expanding the ability of the government to "spend" the time of their subjects. (Are you so surprised now at the size of the military-industrial complex? What else would the bankers permit the bankrupt governments to spend their credit on but guns, so that the collection of taxes can continue no matter what?)

How do the people of any nation control the government—by restricting the government's access to funding, by limiting the government's power to tax. But when the government is in debt, and has the ability to "create" unlimited debt, those kinds of controls disappear, largely through the ignorance of the people. From this seed we then have wars, demands for "living space," and anything else which will divert the people's attention from the real issues which are money, and the bondage of those same people through Usury.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

WHAT CAUSES INFLATION?

The real cause of inflation is very simple. People do not, people cannot cause inflation just by the ordinary process of buying and selling.

But it is only through the understanding of the real nature of money that inflation can be understood.

In a nation, there is only so much Time of the People of that nation in existence. And the People of the nation will spend that Time in their own interest. In doing so, whether they pledge the Time for land or other material benefits, there is still only so much Time. You can not water down the Time of the people—it is a physical impossibility!

The only thing that you can do is water down the storage medium of the People's Time, so that the stored Time of the people has less value when it is "spent" than when it was stored. This can be accomplished in one of two ways.

1. The "government" issues excessive script (known as fiat currency) in order to pay for benefits for the Elite. This is usually done under the guise of "building for defense," "public works," "war" or some such nonsense, but since the federal government in Washington, DC, no longer issues any "money", we understand that this is not the problem in America. This is also why a balanced budget is an absolute necessity with a Lawful government so that the people who control the government cannot prey upon the people of the nation through the government's power to issue and value the "money," the storage unit of the people's Time. (And this means debasement of the gold or silver coin, as well as use of paper currency.)

2. The second, and most common form of inflation, is through the process of Usury. When a Man pledges his Time at a bank, and the bank lends it back to him through our current process under the bankruptcy of the federal government, the Usury charged to that man automatically devalues his Time, because when he pays back his Time that he has borrowed, he must pay the Usury as well. If he borrows \$10,000, he must pay back \$11,000, and the devaluation of his Time is automatic in ANY instance in which Usury is charged—ANY INSTANCE! And the inflation is automatic at this point.

Usury/interest is the primary cause of inflation wherever it exists! This is why, under Christian Law, no Usury/interest may exist! It is literally the stealing of a man's Time upon this earth for the benefit of those privileged by man's law, the "government," to do so.

The single largest source of inflation in America is the federal deficit; Usury charged against the "taxpayers" of America for the benefit of the international bankers. And this deficit MUST exist in this system, or our economy would collapse.

Let me make sure that you understand exactly what the deficit really is: The deficit exists as a means of pumping into the economy the approximate amount of the Usury removed from the economy by the International Bankers as "interest" charged against the fictitious national debt. This is accomplished by the bankers through the so-called Income Tax which is paid directly to their private Federal Reserve bank as tribute for the "privilege" of being able to work through the use by our nation of their "storage unit," the Federal Reserve Note. It is not an accident that the "deficit" has always closely matched the "interest" paid by that bankrupt entity known as The United States Government. This

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

is deliberate and necessary or our economy would collapse. If the federal budget is balanced, a depression is a certainty!

And the men and women serving the self-styled elite in Washington, DC, understand this very well indeed.

Make no mistake about this—Inflation is a result of the privilege extended to bankers and known as “fractional reserve banking”. As long as this evil is permitted to exist in our nation we will have the poor, the homeless, and the victims of oppression in ever increasing numbers. There is no other result possible as this system continues to grind its way through the wealth of America.

FORECLOSURE — OR TAX SALE?

To really understand America today, one more piece of information may be necessary.

This is something that has just come to my attention through the efforts of a friend of mine and the work he is doing against this predatory system of banking in America.

What foreclosure? The bank has no interest in the contract—no interest in the Mortgage Note (i.e., promissory note) that the bank loaned back to the man who signed the mortgage. The only interest that the bank has in the contract is in the Usury attached to the Time of the maker (a Human Being) of the Promissory Note! (Go back and review how the bank actually “creates” “money.”) How do you foreclose on Usury?

But what other provision of the “contract” can the bank foreclose upon? Why do the banks require that they hold the “property use tax” charged against the property for your “mere user” privilege of occupying the property? What if the real process in the “foreclosure” is actually a tax sale to the bank by the “government?—a simple change of the privileged occupier of the property at the whim of the master/owner?

And the more that we find out about foreclosures the more we are beginning to understand that this is probably what is actually going on. This is the explanation of why it takes so long to foreclose upon the property. They quit paying the “property tax” when you quit making your payments and they have to wait until the property comes up for sale on the tax roles.

Doing a tax sale accomplishes the single most important thing that the bank needs done—it eliminates your “credit” with the bank, which is the deposit of your promissory note, which is a debit against the bank. The bank must eliminate this to gain the equity in the property.

Do the people working in the county tax office realize what is going on? People have tried to go in and pay the past due taxes on their property, which is being foreclosed and the assessor’s office refused to accept the payments! I would say that they know exactly what is going on. The only ignorant ones—once again—appear to be Us the People, as the Feudal system is once again installed for the benefit of the self-styled Elite at the cost of the common man through the elimination of the Law.

And this is a very real system of Kings and Queens (Dictatorship), because under these Codes, there can be only one Sovereign. Or we in America, unlike the rest of the world, can go back to the Common Law for everyone, and every Man in America can be a Sovereign on the land once again—a Sovereign, whose Time belongs solely to him,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

and to God—no one else. Everyone is free, or no one is free and freedom can only exist under The True God's Law. I wish no benefit from anyone, but I refuse to permit someone else to consider me their property, to dispose of as they wish, and to steal from me, as they desire. Am I a taxpayer? NO!!!

Nor am I property of the State. This is the Question of money—What Is Money?

The Time you spend, ladies and gentlemen, and only the Time you spend is money. Is that your Time—granted to you by your Creator—or does your Time belong to another man? The choice is simple. I've made mine.

Again, all of these distortions of America really should not come as a surprise. After all, freedom is not free, and every subterfuge that is possible will be used in order to change your status — from that of FreeMan as granted by our Creator and as declared in The Declaration of Independence— to the level of an animal; the chattel property of he who controls the power of government.

In passing from this Part, it is necessary to belabor one point; the LOVE of money is the root of ALL evil.

This is necessary, not because you have not heard it enough, or because you have not begun to grasp the significance of this part of Scripture in understanding the world around you. It is necessary because you do not get it yet.

Why? Because you look at this as a lens through which to see the world, instead of yourself...

This Scriptural passage is not referring to the world—it is referring first to you. It is telling you to quit making decisions based on money. Decisions are first to be made based on right and wrong—absolute right and absolute wrong. There is no other basis to be used in making decisions, and to use money as the first primary concern in decision making is to acknowledge this Scripture in your own life, and in the lives of your family.

I hear it so often. “Organic food is so expensive! Herbs are so expensive! That book is so expensive! Besides, I have medical insurance so I really do not need the Herbs, or the better food, or...” And the list goes on and on, but the first to suffer are your families. I know people today who are paying over \$100/month for cable television! They are making payments of more than \$600/month on a new pickup, some much more on two new vehicles, and others pay \$100's for insurance.” But to pay thirty or forty dollars for a book on Herbs, or health—nope—no money, not for that!

When will you have the money for “that,” or for anything of importance? When will the scams of the advertisers, the bankers and the international corporations mean less to you than your family does—when? When will you make the decision to change your life, to become closer to Him, and to move towards the Right, the real Right? When will you get out of the city, and back to where He wants you, self-sufficient and out-of-her? When it is too late?

The LOVE of money is the root of ALL evil... Television is a very close second...

It is not hard to understand the world—simply look at yourself first.

When I started doing this, my anger about the men who do this to us disappeared. After all, as I discovered in my studies, they do the same things to themselves. The ones

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

playing with the food supply eat the same filth they sell to us, all for the love of money, and they feed it to their children. And the drug importers often are the first hooked on the drugs, or their children are. And the law enforcement thugs often find their own children and relatives ensnared in the same mess we have identified, or with the IRS, or with...

Vengeance is Mine, saith the Lord. Oh, how often we forget the absolute truth of Scripture! His Law is Absolute, and it works at all times. It is only we, the blind and deaf who do not recognize the infinite wisdom inherent in the world, and struggle against submission to Him.

Be not angry with them, for they know not what they do. Instead, pray for them, and pray for the strength to alter your own actions, to His Plan.

Now that you have finished Part VII, and I hope you enjoyed it as much as I enjoyed bringing it to you. Part VIII contains research and sources you will be hard pressed to ever put together any other place. They are fantastic!

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART VIII

TAXPAYER? CONTRACT? WHAT'S GOING ON!?

This information is more of a lead-in to Part IX than it is anything else. However, you will find leads to some excellent sources here, and a much fuller, detailed look at the depth of the research that is going on in America, away from the professional politicians.

If you follow this thread thoroughly, you will really begin to understand how little the average American understands, and you will become much more effective in explaining the Truth to your fellow Americans.

Taxpayer for what purpose? I pay gasoline and cigarette tax, which may or may not be legitimate, grocery tax, etc. Therefore, I'm a taxpayer. But am I a taxpayer, or more appropriately, am I required to pay tax prescribed in the Internal Revenue Code?

You might want to take a little journey: At 26 U.S.C. 7321, you will find that Congress has vested the President with authority to establish internal revenue districts. When you consult the Parallel Table of Authorities and Rules in the Index volume to the Code of Federal Regulations, you will find that there are no general application regulations listed for the section. However, if you will look at 26 CFR, Part 301.7621-1, you will find that the President has delegated authority to establish internal revenue districts via Executive Order No. 10289. Statutory authority which prescribes how the President must delegate authority by Executive Order is at 3 U.S.C. 301; E.O. No. 10289 is published following this section, and you will find that the bulk of it pertains to tariffs, the Anti-Smuggling Act (maritime), and related matters. The original was amended to delegate authority to the Secretary of the Treasury to establish revenue districts.

By once again consulting the Parallel Table of Authorities and Rules, we find that E.O. No. 10289 is listed, but the only authority is 19 CFR, Part 101, which is general authority for the United States Customs Service. The U.S. Customs Service has established ports of entry for import-export purposes in most States of the Union, but not internal revenue districts that extend into any of the several States.

Our conclusion, then, is that there are no internal revenue districts in the several States, per requirement of 27 U.S.C. 7621.

This might seem strange, but the research community has long known that the only delegation of authority from the Secretary of the Treasury to the Commissioner of Internal Revenue, who presides over IRS & BATF, is T.D.O. No. 150-42 (1956), as amended by T.D.O. No. 150-01 (1986). The original delegated authority in Puerto Rico, the Canal Zone,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

etc., and removed authority over customs in insular possessions of the United States from district and regional offices in Florida, Georgia, and New York.

If you didn't know, IRS & BATF are successors of the Bureau of Internal Revenue, Puerto Rico, created by the provisional government of Puerto Rico in about 1900 to administer collection of internal revenue taxes in Puerto Rico, deposited in the Puerto Rico Special Fund (Internal Revenue), in 1934 redesignated Puerto Rico Trust No. 62 (Internal Revenue). Internal revenue districts under IRS administrative jurisdiction were established in accordance with T.D.O. No. 150-42 by the Commissioner of Internal Revenue in insular possessions of the United States.

The Internal Revenue Code is municipal law in territory subject to sovereignty of the United States under the territorial clause at Art. IV, Sec. 3, clause 2 of the Constitution.

We might visit the question again: Are you a taxpayer as defined in the Internal Revenue Code?

The antecedent question is obviously this: Are you are a citizen or resident of an internal revenue district? Do you own taxable articles, conduct taxable trade or business, draw royalties, or have any other taxable enterprise in an internal revenue district? If so, the district director located in whatever State of the Union you have abode in should have a complete listing for your information. You might inquire.

This is interesting information, but it leaves out the important part, which is covered in Part IX. Believe this, the people, by and large, who enforce the IRS Code believe they are correct, and the judges who rule for the IRS, understand the terms and conditions under which the Code can be applied. As I have said, there is an answer for everything, and much of the story will be revealed in Part IX.

What should be becoming obvious to you by now is the absolute level of fraud and corruption present in the system. But then, any system is designed so that fraud and corruption is an integral part, or it would not be a system!

This next section reveals the real nonsense being talked about on the national level.

Governor Elect Mr. Jesse Ventura,

I heard your comments on meet the press, Sunday morning. When you gave the example that when you were mayor of Brooklyn Park, and the city council wanted to raise taxes by \$360,000 saying they had a short fall on their "city budget for schools" and you looked into the "revenue structure of the city" and found \$48,000,000 of investment funds in which the \$360,000 could be satisfied from, when I heard you say that, I jumped in the air and stomped my feet on the ground, yelling out "good man, good man".

You are the first individual that I have heard in my lifetime, give a clear example within a show, produced by the syndicated national news media, as to the difference between the "budget" and the investment funds held separate from the budget.

After your comments went out across the country that morning, my phone began ringing five minutes after your comments until 2 in the afternoon from people across the land asking me if you had been speaking to me.

I would hope to have a phone conversation with you this upcoming week. What I proposed to Arkansas from a little radio station in Hot Springs, Arkansas may be the perfect plan at THIS TIME in Minnesota as the model for the rest of the country to follow.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Interesting that I would receive this e-mail tonight. I had a phone call just this evening about this CAFR thing. Can't say that the guy who called explained it very well, and after reading your e-mail, I still don't really understand what this is all about. Any "primer" on the subject available? I feel like I just walked in to a 3rd year Spanish class and I don't speak a lick of Spanish!

I am with the U.S. Taxpayers Party and am working on a number of political campaigns. I would certainly like to be able to pass on useful and pertinent information to the candidates.

Any help you can provide would be greatly appreciated.

Sincerely, Debbie Hopper

Well... The foxes have been writing the laws on how many chickens they can eat from the hen house. At first, out of our 3000 chickens, we gave them 100 per year. They ate them and said they need 200. So we gave them 200. They ate them and then said they needed 400. So we gave them 400 but we started complaining saying enough is enough. So the foxes said they needed 440, justifying 440 with any logic available to them but realizing we were complaining about giving them 100, then 200, then 400, they, in their wisdom, started to put 150 aside each year in their own hen house held by them and undisclosed to us. Well after many a year, in the foxes own hen house they have collected 6500 chickens (total available revenue not tied in directly with the publicly known operating budget) as they continue to collect the now 510 (the disclosed operating Budget) as they cry to us saying they are barely getting by on the 510, but since we are complaining about the 510 they will cut back the annual take to 490 at great sacrifice to themselves, the foxes.

Dear Citizen,

VERY IMPORTANT Read the Notes in your Comprehensive Annual Financial Report.

They should break down the allocations for investments. You may also find investments that are not disclosed and kept separate from the balance sheet on the same report. Make sure to have several other citizens learn with you, making the discovery along with you.

Guess what... Most States are funding their own bond issuances, tagging the taxpayer for repayment of the bonds that are funded with their own state's investment funds.... This being done under irrevocable trusts with the funds being taken off the balance sheets until maturity of the bonds. Look for the bond dividend yield which is mandatory for disclosure within the notes of the CAFR...

Lee Tibler, who hosts a radio program out of Hot Springs, Arkansas, had a guest on 9/18/98, 9AM-11AM, show, Walter Burien, of Citizens Economic Victory Initiative (C.E.V.I.) of Prescott, Arizona.

BACKGROUND IN ARKANSAS

Recently the citizens of Arkansas had developed an initiative calling for the abolishment of property taxes. The power structure of Arkansas government utilizing their leverage, moved through the courts to invalidate and block the initiative stating that they

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

would have to shut down schools if the initiative was effected.

Several weeks ago, comes along Walter Burien on Mr. Tibler's show with disclosure as to the existence of the Comprehensive Annual Financial Report (CAFR) which showed within Arkansas, with a population of 2.5 million people who had a TOTAL assessed Property value of 18.3 Billion (1996), THAT just the state government CAFR report showed of in excess of 16 Billion in combined total liquid investment funds, verging on being equal to the total hard assets and wealth of the citizens of the state of Arkansas as determined by their property value. Teachers pension funds = to 5.7 Billion (how many teachers are there in Arkansas for the children of 2.5 M people ?). State investment funds (Arkansas Development Finance Authority-ADFA, for issuance of bonds back to themselves or the local government = to 1.4 Billion. Total cash intake for the year 1.9 Billion NOTE: these figures are just for the state, not adding on for composite investment totals of Cities and Counties within Arkansas which would bring the total up to 26-28 Billion.

THE SHOT HEARD AROUND THE WORLD

As of September 18th, 1998, on Mr. Tibler's radio show, Walter Burien called for the citizens of Arkansas to determine if the Citizen's owned the government or if the government owned the citizens. What was proposed by Mr. Burien was that the citizens of Arkansas unify and put through for an emergency special initiative that would change the principle of operation of Arkansas government, City, County and State, whereby the initiative would call for and enact by law the following:

1.) For the immediate down sizing by 25% of Arkansas state and local governments "revenue" structure for re-appropriation, annually, into the Citizen's Trust Investment Account. Whereby the citizen after 8-12 years participation in the "system", based on his or her interest and dividend yield from the Citizen's Trust Investment Account, would have no tax liability. After 12 years participation, the citizen, on top of having no tax liability would start receiving a dividend check which would increase throughout the remainder of his or her life. The last year of the citizen's life they would receive the biggest check. Citizen's who have already participated dearly for many a year in the "system" will be first line beneficiaries as of year one for full payment of interest and dividend yield from the Citizen's Trust Investment Account. With this structure in place the Citizen's Trust Investment Account becomes the largest investment fund in the state, of no equal, with the citizen being the "Beneficiary", not the inner circle of the "Boys" from government and their special interests. NOTE: the large investment banking and brokerage conglomerates, after examination of the Citizen's Trust Investment Account, should be all for it. They do not take a loss but in fact are offered by the citizen the largest investment account to manage, which if this becomes the standard across the country, will make the Citizen's Trust Investment Account the largest investment account on the face of this planet.... They now don't have to hide the revenue, but now perform the management in the open for public viewing of performance, growth and return to the citizen.

2.) Under the initiative, The creation of a Citizens Appointed Review Panel (lawyers and politicians shall not be on the panel but only act as consultants, the panel will be made up of: the electrician, the plumber, the school teacher, the police officer, the sheriff, etc.. 250 individual citizens, with none having an income exceeding \$75K / year) being empowered with full international discovery, disclosure and indictment rights with a

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

small team of accountants that they select, for recommendation and direction capabilities for the re-appropriation of the 25% annual revenue into the Citizen's Trust Investment Account. NOTE: When the politicians say; we will have to close down the little old ladies home and shut down the schools, the Citizens Appointed Review Panel will say, no you're not, the revenue will come FROM HERE!!!

3.) Under the initiative, the government employee, City, County, and State will be offered 1/3 of 1% as a finders fee for pointing out and redirecting revenue which is "not directly benefiting the citizens" for re-appropriation into the Citizen's Trust Investment Account. NOTE: If that government employee, finds and recommends re-appropriation of say 150 Million which is not directly benefiting the citizen, 1/3 of 1% as a finders fee is a pretty nice check.. Any employee coming forward with a proposal who is retaliated upon, can report to the Citizens Appointed Review Panel, and the panel will take the appropriate action to protect that employee and hold those accountable for their unjust and criminal retaliation against both that employee and the citizens of the state...

4.) Under the initiative, No Further Debt Enacted, cash and carry. Existing debt will be enhanced for offset, until canceled, from 15% of the interest and dividend allocation from the Citizen's Trust Investment Account.

5.) Under the initiative, criminal prosecution, with effective sharp teeth, towards any organization, governmental agency or department in whereby they intentionally try to, or in effect do circumvent disclosure to the Citizens Appointed Review Panel, of revenues, investment funds or cash controlled or maintained by the governmental bodies of the State, Counties or Cities.

In effect, we are changing the Principle of operation of the government. We are not changing a leaf or a branch or a tree in the forest, we are changing the forest of which will affect every leaf in the forest to make "We The People" the beneficiaries of the wealth of this country, which is truly ours, NOT the politicians who spend millions to get elected into their \$60 K / year jobs to continue the inner circle... of special interests and inflating their own pockets for doing so...

I think the founding fathers of this country would be smiling in their graves right about now.....

The corruption, graft and payoffs disappear overnight. Its a little hard for the "Boys" to continue "Business as Usual" with 280 Million Americans watching over their shoulders as to where every \$1 is spent, invested, moved or has been moved in the past, because "We The People" are now the beneficiaries of the wealth within the greatest country on Earth.....

Well, as I said in the beginning, we are about to find out if the citizen's own this country or if the government "THINKS" they own the citizens...

The chains will be broken, and the citizens will be free and prosperous beyond their expectations. Woe to those who try to re-attach the chains. Call your neighbors, friends and business associates and pass the word.. Focus your eyes on Arkansas, for there is the start of the new beginning for the rest of us.

When the initiative goes for the vote of the citizens, I will be there. It will be a new Woodstock or Boston tea party. People will camp out five days in advance to be the first

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

through the door to cast their vote. Citizens who have never voted before will register to cast their vote for the first time. It will be the largest voter turnout in that states history.

For print coverage of the CAFR, Check out The Spotlight, August 17th(pages 11-14) & 24th, 1998 (pages 22 &23), October 5th, 1998 (page 19) for the CAFR report. The Contact News, American Bulletin, The AntiShyster, Media Bypass and The Free American. In the next 35 days, 30 million citizens will be reached by radio with this information.....

Get a team together and bring in a friend or two that are CPAs. Don't forget to look at other cities, counties and states CAFRs for comparison.

Add up the totals, Cities, County, State and Federal ownership within your State.

You will be learning from scratch one, I have looked at composite totals of government (States, Counties, Cities and Federal) for 10 years now, and here is what I have totaled:

1. Stock ownership, composite totals..... = to: \$32 Trillion +
2. Insurance Company equity participation.... = to: \$8 Trillion +
3. Bond surety investment accounts..... = to: \$5.5 Trillion +
4. Totals from all liquid investment funds..... = to: \$60 Trillion +

The personal income from everyone in the USA (pre tax 1996) is = to 6.5 Trillion. In other words if every person living in this country gave every cent they made to government for 10 years, it would equal what composite government has amassed in their investment accounts, as of TODAY. Have You Gotten Your Wake Up Call...???

The corruption feeds off the revenue. Expose the revenue structure, and the beast dies of starvation. There are only a few thousand of them compared to many millions of us....

Rip the head off the corruption, and the body dies....

The Equivalent of the Comprehensive Annual Financial Report (CAFR) for the composite totals of the majority of Federal Government agencies is called the Federal Government Combined Financial Statement.

To download the US Federal Government Combined Financial Statements for 1997, 96 & 95 go to this site:

<http://www.fms.treas.gov/cfs/index.html>

Read the last page first. It shows what agencies are included in the combined statement and those that are excluded. You will see the ones excluded from the report as being the primary cash and investment agencies. Are they worried that if they were included that the balance sheet would show positive assets in the trillions ?? hmmm...

To see the requirement recommendation submitted by GFOA to the Feds in 1979 of which was enacted in 1982 through transmittal letter 1, requiring local governments (City, County and States) not already having a CAFR to prepare a CAFR report go to this Internet site:

<http://www.financenet.gov/data/welcome/statloc/prof/gfoa/policies/accounting.g>

To get some of the City, County and State CAFR reports available for downloading

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

go to this Internet site:

<<http://financenet.gov/financenet/state/cafr.htm>>
<http://financenet.gov/financenet/state/cafr.htm>

If your State or County is not listed, send an E-Mail to a neighboring State saying that you have their State CAFR report, and you would like to do a comparison study of your State's CAFR report, and would they please E-Mail you back with the department, telephone number and contact name in YOUR State + Counties + large Cities to get their CAFR report. The States all share each other's CAFR reports for comparison.

The foundation of the Corruption is starting to quiver based on the fact that the word is getting out quickly...as to "The biggest game in town".....

Both the News Media and Governments dilemma here, that will clearly expose them, is that the citizens are not looking for the needle in the haystack but the haystack sitting on the needle. Qualify what the forest is, and stop looking at the leaves in the forest. What is important here is understanding the principle of operation that has lead to this financial takeover. When seen you will understand the motives and propaganda that is rammed down your throat by the News Media and Government which keeps you looking in right field as they conduct their criminal business as usual activities in left field.

The "CAFRs" shows the created through restriction by statute revenue structure which allows the wolves to walk among the sheep in obscurity, as they devour the sheep, fulfilling their appetite in a orgy of neo-capitalistic gluttony. With the surviving sheep saying "what happened", "who were they", "is something wrong", "there is a problem here, but we just can't put our finger in it"...

To date, I have been contacted by many from across the Land who now have been unified through disclosure for one common purpose "making the citizen the beneficiary of the wealth" not those "Sharp Little Crackers".

I have received phone calls from across the country and have briefed; 15 running for congress, 7 running for senate, 5 running for governor of their state, 4 running for sheriff. All were not aware of the composite structure. The now have their own Wake Up Call.

As seen in the "CAFR" which show the pension funds is that: State and Federal Judges are guaranteed to be in the millionaire boys retirement club, being guaranteed from 3 to 8 million dollars after serving from 1 to 2 years tenure. (Now you know why the laws are as they are throughout the country)... (Author's Note: What this does not tell you is where the funds in these retirement trusts come from, which is the pay-offs given to each judge. For instance, the IRS pays into this trust 1/3 of every dollar of judgment the judge enters in their favor against taxpayers and 1/3 of every fine the judges issue from their court goes into the funds as well.)

Wake up and smell the roses... or should I say skunk weed... Disclosure of the "CAFR" for viewing and comprehension by the public will end their game Cold in its Tracks... When you see the total moneys, you can backtrack to see where they came from and where they are currently are being used...

I guess the public can't see the trees through the forest, or is it they can't see the forest through the trees. Or is it they can't see the mountain in front of them as the rocks from the mountain fall on them.... Don t feel bad, the Boys controlling this multi trillion

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

dollar syndicated national financial takeover have spent billions to keep you in the dark and to distract your attention elsewhere... They are smart and have accomplished their goal.

The “Budget Report” of which the media and government intentionally focuses the public’s attention on shows and is the expense side of traditional governmental services WHICH THE MAJORITY OF THE PUBLIC IS AWARE OF, while the “CAFR contains the profit side of Government (Author’s Note: Here, ladies and gentlemen, is the crux of the problem: what he is calling government are CORPORATIONS designed to replace the lawful governments of the several states and to operate at a PROFIT, just as Washington, DC, was designed to create a profit for the King. This is what happens when you don’t have all of the information.) owned businesses/Agencies and “Investments” which outside of the “budgetary Agencies” are restricted by statute for no tie or direct revenue accountability to the “Budgetary Basis”.

(WAKE UP)... The revenues I speak of are NOT of budget funds but revenues masterfully controlled and developed by the Boys outside of the public’s awareness and view.

THE INTENTIONAL REFUSAL OF THE GOVERNMENT AND “THEIR PARTNER” THE MEDIA (ABC, CBS, NBC, CNN and national News Papers) TO MAKE SIMPLE AND CONSPICUOUS MENTION OF THIS REPORT AND THE COMBINED REVENUE BEHIND IT COULD BE CLASSIFIED UNDER THE RICO ACT AS PERPETUATING AND ASSISTING A CRIMINAL SYNDICATE.. SOME CASE LAW FROM ARIZONA WHICH SHOWS LAW PERTAINING TO DISCLOSURE AND EVIDENCES SILENCE FOR NONDISCLOSURE AS BEING FRAUDULENT MISCONDUCT IS AS FOLLOWS;

A. “Silence can only be equated with fraud when there is a legal and moral duty to speak or when an inquiry left unanswered would be intentionally misleading.” U.S. vs Prudden, 424 F. 2d 1021, U.S. vs Tweel, 550 F. 2d 297, 299-300.

B. “Fraud may be committed by failure to speak, but a duty to speak must be imposed.” Dunahay v. Struzik, 393 P.2d 930, 96 Ariz. 246 (1964).

C. “Fraud” may be committed by a failure to speak when the duty of speaking is imposed as much as by speaking falsely.” Batty v. Arizona State Dental Board, 112 P.2d 870, 57 Ariz. 239. (1941).

D. “When one conveys a false impression by disclosure of some facts and the concealment of others, such concealment is in effect a false representation that what is disclosed is the whole truth.” State v. Coddington, 662 P.2d 155, 135 Ariz. 480. (Ariz. App. 1983). (Many more law sites not included for brevity.)

NOW, TIME FOR SOME REALITY

It is very frustrating watching people with just a little information work up a lather about something they can not change.

The simple truth of the matter is that as United States citizens (hint: the only ones who can vote in this system), they have no standing to change what is going on. Now, they may manage here and there to put the issue on some ballot, but even if they pass the measure they will see it thrown out. Why—because the treaties behind the Constitution and the Constitution itself will not allow any interference in the collection of debt.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

And, as United States citizen, they are instrumentalities of the United States, thus they have no power to sue themselves, so action in court to change what is—to them—fraud, is not possible. Also, as United States citizens, they are responsible for the national debt, and any attempt to interfere with the collection on that debt brands them as tax protesters. I think you will understand much better when you finish Part IX.

In all, what this information should show you is that everyone wants a piece of the King's debt! That is all we are talking about here. Federal Reserve Notes are obligations of the United States government, and evidence of the debt of the Federal Reserve, which is guaranteed by the United States government. That means, since the United States is a Crown Colony, that they are guaranteed by the King, and now everyone wants to fight over something which has no reality—the trust funds denominated in Federal Reserve Notes. How silly!

But, by participating they do prove they are subject to the King's jurisdiction, and give more weight and authority to the actions of his minions. And as they do so, they still have not caught on—"they" are not the problem! WE are the problem!

We has met the enemy, and HE IS US! Pogo

LAW, OR NOT?

For those wishing to understand the Federal side of what is today known as Cooperative Federalism, download the first two pieces: "United States Code Isn't Law in the Several States" (26 pages), and Institutionalized Tyranny: The Character & Color of Authority" (112pages).

Thanks to Ralph Winterrowd of Anchorage, we presently have the rare 1934 edition of the "Code of Laws of the United States of America", and the Revised Statutes of 1878. The 1878 revision provided the foundation for the United States Code, first published in 1926. These and other books will be on display at the meeting, so those who attend will have the opportunity to see firsthand how key statutes were tracked in both directions from the 1934 Code to prove that what we know as the United States Code is actually the Code of Laws of the United States of America. The Code is municipal law in the District of Columbia and insular possessions of the United States. It is not law in the Union of several States party to the Constitution, and for the most part, isn't even legal evidence of laws of the United States in lawful courts of the several States.

The 26-page treatise on the United States Code is a stand-alone effort which is supplemental to the longer work. Conclusions in Institutionalized Tyranny remain valid. The second, shorter work reinforces and clarifies conclusions in the first.

A few of the documented conclusions are as follows: The "United States of America" designated as principal of interest in Federal civil and criminal prosecution is a political coalition or compact of Federal territories, and as such, is a government foreign to the United States and the several States. This entity, formalized some time after 1909, is defined as an agency of the United States. It does not have constitutional or statutory standing in the several States party to the Constitution, or in Article III district courts of the United States.

United States District Courts situated in the several States are private courts, they

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

are not Article III courts (Author's Note: Actually, there exists today nothing in America which is an Article III court; control of the court system in America by The Inns of the Court [from London] shows that these courts are the private courts of the King.) of the United States or territorial courts created by Act of Congress. In or after 1948, those responsible for this system of private courts, disguised under the name of territorial courts, usurped power of Article III district courts of the United States.

The "Code of Laws of the United States of America" is not law of the United States. No section of the Code can be given legislative construction, so sections of the Code do not vest franchises of authority in any office, department or court of the United States, and do not create liabilities for or impose penalties on anyone. (Author's Note: Try arguing this point as they slap the cuffs on!) I recommend reading "United States Code Isn't Law in the Several States" first. In some respects, it is probably more difficult in that it is replete with cites from various editions of the United States Code, the Statutes at Large, and other reference material, but because of the way the treatise evolved, I had to establish perspective before getting to the meat of matters. After Ralph sent the 1934 edition of "The Code of Laws of the United States of America", I wrote a preliminary piece sent out via my e-mail list on Nov. 5. In response, Lowell H. "Larry" Becraft, Jr. sent a memorandum he wrote on the United States Code. Larry is a well-known attorney who makes significant contributions to the constitutionalist dialogue, so I felt the need to anchor the treatise to the law of the land, the Constitution of the United States. The constitutional perspective is developed through three questions that have obvious answers, what American founders described as "self-evident truth."

Both discourses must be read from this perspective: Government (Author's Note: This is true, IF it were a government.) of the United States exists by virtue of the Constitution of the United States. Government of the United States may exercise only powers enumerated in the Constitution. Exercise of any power not delegated by the Constitution is usurpation of power, and amounts to treason against the Constitution and the sovereign American people.

Addressing law so people who aren't versed in legalese is quite a task. For the two months I was in a Tulsa halfway house prior to release from Bureau of Prisons custody (Oct. 2, 1998), I worked for Dale Pond, doing research under his supervision. The first portions of Institutionalized Tyranny were written with Dale's continuing editorial assistance, so the effort is considerably more "humanized" than many works of the same nature. It can be difficult not to assume readers know principles of law and legal jargon. Others, including Tim McCrory, Bobby Jenkins, Steve Pond, Paul Mitchell, and my wife, made editing corrections and otherwise provided constructive criticism prior to the current version being posted. People from across the country made editing contributions after the original of the current revision was posted.

With posting of "United States Code Isn't Law in the Several States", I've staked out ground: I challenge the nation's leading researchers, whether attorneys, non-attorneys, law professors, or government officials, to attack the work to break it down. Very probably the effort will be enlarged so far as particulars of historical event and the evolution of Cooperative Federalism are concerned, and details of law will probably be refined, but I am convinced that the body of the work and all significant conclusions will stand.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Anyone who wishes is welcome to access these two discourses, post them wherever they want, quote from, paraphrase or otherwise utilize the material in any given forum. However, in order to preserve integrity of the work, editing and critical commentary should be sent to me so I can make necessary revisions and text corrections. We can link files to e-mail transmissions in Word for Windows or Lotus Word Pro, but would prefer that the material be downloaded from the web site. Revisions that incorporate significant correction or expansion will be announced when posted.

Tim has posted several of my memorandums, pleadings, and letters written prior to June 1997, and some constructed while I was in prison. I haven't gone through the material so those who access it should realize that research in nearly all areas addressed in older compositions has been advanced since original documents were written. The constitutionalist research community is making strides at a pace probably more rapid than the advent of new computer technology. Elements and underlying principles of dated material may still be valid, but every effort should be made to access current research on any given subject.

Several people have engaged the dialogue from the perspective of war and emergency powers and implications of martial law rule. I will attempt to briefly explain my current position relative to this subject.

In Institutionalized Tyranny (Part 20), I used the five essential authorities identified in that work to break down Federal drug and tax laws, proper jurisdiction of the United States Marshals Service (Author's Note: The problem here is the Federal Marshall's Service is an incorporated agency dating from 1969.), and jurisdiction of the Federal Law Enforcement Community. In the reasonably near future, I will probably write a section dealing with war and emergency powers, using the five essential authorities to break them down. However, at this juncture, I haven't engaged in debate of how these powers are carried out as my primary objective is to establish a foundation of law and fact as a platform for the research community.

I have specifically identified the umbrella conspiracy that encompasses State and Federal governments: In the 1960's, the Supreme Court coined the term "Cooperative Federalism" to describe its workings. Governments of the several States and their respective political subdivisions, including county and city governments, school districts, offices of district attorneys, etc., operate as instrumentalities of the United States subject to sovereignty of the United States in the same sense the District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, the Virgin Islands, etc., are subject to Congress' plenary power in territory belonging to the United States.

The unique thing about the scheme is this: Not only is Cooperative Federalism unconstitutional, there is no State or Federal law facilitating it. It operates somewhat the way a pregnant woman feeds and vacates waste from the unborn baby in her womb. While the mother's blood system delivers oxygen and nutrition to the baby's blood system, the two blood systems never mix. Therefore, those who cross the line to deprive the sovereign people of life, liberty or property do so at considerable risk. The only protection they respectively have is unified political will, they do not have protection of law. They can be held accountable in civil and criminal forums. (Author's Note: True, IF you can find a competent civil or criminal forum.)

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

In our system, tyranny never stands on one leg. It requires perpetrators by intent and perpetrators by consent. The perpetrator by intent is obvious — he or she is fully aware of the workings and objectives of Cooperative Federalism. The perpetrator by consent is a functionary or uninformed principal. When the functionary and uninformed principal cease accommodating the perpetrator by intent, Cooperative Federalism will fall on its face. I seriously doubt that more than a few thousand people understand the workings, objectives, and effects of Cooperative Federalism, so we must construct a sound platform of law and fact to inform the rest. Only after they are informed can those who accommodate by consent reasonably be held accountable for their respective actions even though the letter of the law says ignorance of the law is no excuse.

My perspective is governed by certain givens. The first is good faith. The Cooperative Federalism scheme is so convoluted that it is nearly impossible for people of ordinary intelligence to figure out. The scheme evolved and matured in the hundred years following the Civil War, so we have no living memory of how and when it began. Most people in active public service are blinded and conditioned by what amounts to ritual magic, and even independent professionals are educationally and practically dysfunctional. Collectively, those who accommodate tyranny by consent are decent people who carry out their respective roles without evil or malicious intent. Only after they are provided good faith notice of law, and they subsequently elect not to comply with law, am I willing to pursue prosecution for evil and malicious intent.

How do we define evil? Ironically, the Federal judge who sentenced me, H. Dale Cook, gave the best definition of evil I've heard: Evil is simply lawlessness (Author's Note: Now, define lawlessness; Whose law? The King has a completely different perspective, which begs the question: Which King?). Given that definition, we can employ a functional definition of maliciousness: Malicious intent is knowing, intentional lawlessness. Once someone is given notice of law, any further act contrary to law is evil, with malicious intent. Malicious intent invariably pursues self-serving ends.

We addressed these matters in the Nuremberg trials following World War II. In the trials, German judges who imposed Nazi law after 1935 were prosecuted, and civil authorities such as prison camp guards were tried, convicted and prosecuted for their respective roles in dismantling the German domestic population, the Holocaust, and war crimes. The reason principals and functionaries were both prosecuted is this: There are certain indispensable principles necessary to maintain free peoples and nations. Any law contrary to these principles, real or imagined, or any law which attacks the basic dignity of man, is by nature evil and of no effect.

This takes us to the motive of the functionary: Why does he act? If and when he knows the law, he can act contrary to the law for only one of two reasons. He either fears reprisal, or he acts for self-serving ends. When prison camp guards and other functionaries in the German system defended themselves with claims they had to carry out orders or risk reprisal, the defense was rejected. We cannot accept claims that one or another might lose his or her job, suffer administrative discipline, was advised that he or she isn't bound by the required oath to uphold and defend applicable constitutions, etc., as to do so would be to accept government by the capricious rule of man rather than law. Those who know but fail to comply with law will have no defense when prosecuted in appropri-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ate forums. (Author's Note: As you can see, he doesn't get the Constitution. They are defending the Constitution and extending the King's rule as is proper. You will understand much better after Part IX.)

The second given is this: We are at the brink of an economic crucible that will drive political events. In retrospect, the coming collapse will make the 1930's great depression seem like little more than a dress rehearsal for the real thing. We will be able to pull the fat from the fire, and salvage the constitutional republic, only if we are soundly secured in law and historical fact and can objectively demonstrate how and why the collapse occurred. Even if lawful remedies aren't immediately available, they will be in the reasonably near future if the constitutionalist community will construct a solid foundation today.

War and emergency powers? Martial law? There is no doubt in my mind, or the mind of anyone else who has studied the subject, that the American people are being subjected to institutionalized tyranny. However, both the perpetrator by intent and the perpetrator by consent act without force of law. Therefore, they act independently and privately even if individual actions are in concert and thereby have the appearance of legitimacy. Beyond the wall of political will, none enjoys the cloak of government immunity. They must and will be prosecuted individually as the choice of lawlessness always incurs personal liability.

A few have difficulty with my attitude toward the subject, but I refuse to dignify tyranny with the illusion of legitimacy. Pirates have no authority other than self-will and personal gain. Those who knowingly and willingly plunder countryman and kin cannot be dignified with even the connotation of character other than that of the reprobate. Emergency powers, martial law ... these terms have the faint ring of legitimacy. They sound formal, official — that which is necessary in the course of some great cause. But those who perpetrate and knowingly accommodate Cooperative Federalism have no great cause other than transient, self-serving ends. They are individually and collectively in rebellion against man, nature and God, and in due course, should be prosecuted as common criminals.

Time to get an account offshore, eh!

Again, "Save The Constitution!!" At all costs, rather than going back to the Law and to the form of government used in America correctly. But, the above does show very well how the minions of the bankers and the King are extending his rule over the States united, as originally intended—and they are doing this with our help and assistance.

Thomas Edison biographers claim that he made 10,000 light bulbs before getting what he wanted. Several of the earlier versions worked, in that they gave light, but Edison's goal was to be able to read newspaper print by the light his light bulb gave at a distance comparable to the width of a normal room.

I don't disagree with versions of the early "Federalism" initiative accounted for in this discussion. In fact, the incursion commenced before the Civil War. Crop failures in 1857 created a food panic — there were flour riots in New York City and Canadian cities. This general broadside set a seven-year economic depression in motion, and the congressional delegations in the North, under influence of the major financial institutions,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

trade interests, and industrial magnates, pushed legislation that did considerable injury to the South, which was primarily agrarian and otherwise relied on natural resource production. If you will read Jefferson Davis' farewell speech delivered as Southern Congressional Delegations departed, you will see that "Federalism" economic incursions were the primary cause of Southern secession — Davis barely made mention of the slave issue.

With this in mind, there is no doubt that research pertaining to West Virginia, etc., is correct. The admission of West Virginia was under convoluted terms. After 1871, Congress began retaining lands set aside for Indian reservations, and unappropriated public lands — national parks and forests. But the Supreme Court continued to hold ground, so was a persisting thorn in the side of those who wanted a general Federal takeover. The key platform was this: Once the Constitution has been extended to any territory, whether a State of the Union, the District of Columbia, a territory of the United States, or whatever, it cannot be withdrawn. In other words, to argue that constitutionally secured rights, privileges and benefits can be derogated or otherwise compromised once Congress has extended authority of the Constitution to a territory is absurd. Either territory is under constitutional rule or it isn't. It's like the pregnancy test — either she is or she isn't.

This changed with cession of the Spanish provinces of Puerto Rico and the Philippines following the Spanish-American war in 1898. The cession treaty did not extend the Constitution to these newly acquired insular possessions, or the people. That's what the insular tax cases were about. In many respects, the Philippines and Puerto Rico, and subsequently the Virgin Islands, Guam, etc., were construed as being "foreign" to the Union of several States as they were "unincorporated" territories of the United States. They were of a completely different class from the several States, territories of the United States where the Constitution was extended, and the District of Columbia.

It is this "unincorporated territory" concept which ultimately prevailed as the foundation of Cooperative Federalism. It was the "light bulb" bright enough to read by. And it is under this auspices that the "United States of America" entity, now defined as an agency of the United States (see notes following 18 U.S.C. 1001 & 18 U.S.C. 6), came into being.

Look on the face of any Federal Reserve Note you have in your pocket: It is legal tender for payment of debt, and is identified as currency of the "United States of America".

If you read Article I, Sec. 10, cl. 1 of the Constitution, you see clearly that governments of the several States are prohibited from making anything a tender for payment of debt other than gold and silver coin. Consequently, it is impossible for the FRN to be legal tender for payment of debt in the original "United States of America" formally established in Article I of the Articles of Confederation, and mentioned in the Preamble of the Constitution of the United States. It is part of the grand Cooperative Federalism deception.

Certainly I don't dispute that admission of all States to the Union since the Civil War has been convoluted, but let's look at the axiom from the opposite end: Do any of the original thirteen States act different, or are they treated different than States admitted to the Union since? No, they are equal — governments of each of the several States, regard-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

less of when they were admitted to the Union, are acting in concert to undermine sovereignty and solvency of the nation. Is IRS less a tyrant in New York? Pennsylvania? Georgia? Maine? Tell me where those folks aren't a pain in the butt.

We might turn to a historical page in the 1790's. It seems that Thomas Jefferson constructed a document styled, "The Kentucky Resolutions" that led the charge to turn back Alien and Sedition Acts passed by Congress. Then we can go to 1803: Thomas Jefferson argued that there must be a constitutional amendment in order to incorporate the Louisiana Purchase into the constitutional scheme. But Congress ignored clear intent of the Constitution, and left it to Chief Justice John Marshall to rationalize in *Am. Ins. Co. vs. 356 Bales of Cotton* in 1828.

We aren't dealing with a new or unique problem — Congress has been corrupt and corruptible from the beginning. (Author's Note: What this ignores is Article I, Section 8, Clause 17; When you give a group of men the privilege to write law under a provision of exclusive jurisdiction, the one thing you can be sure of is unlimited corruption. If you do not understand this, simply go back and study the Bourbon Kings and their brethren in the kingship business. And I assure you, being a king is simply a business, not a government.) Ben Franklin's grandson exposed the Jay Treaty, in which the Senate agreed to pay British expense for the American Revolution. It's been one damned thing after another throughout our history. Andrew Jackson knocked the second national bank in the head in 1836; a U.S. commissioner led Navy forces to overthrow the Hawaiian royal house in 1893... the president, whoever he was, raised thunder, but Congress ignored him, waited for a more accommodating president, then in 1898, incorporated Hawaii as a territory of the United States.

What I am attempting to do here is focus you on things as they are — what current statutes and regulations of the United States portray as facts of law. There is continuum in the Cooperative Federalism scheme dating from about 1898. We can look back to the Revised Statutes of 1878 and see early elements of it, but the constitutional coup de grace was in 1913 with the Federal Reserve Act, in 1933 with the Roosevelt New Deal, in 1938 with *Erie Railroad vs. Tompkins*, and ultimately in 1948 when private United States District Courts were instituted in the several States. These are known, documentable events along a continuing course that doesn't have to be constructively discerned and hypothesized.

Are particulars of war and emergency powers, martial law, etc., relevant? Certainly they are, but only in the sense that we have judicially orchestrated tyranny. (Author's Note: The actual basis of the Constitution and the early Supreme Court decisions about it are much more relevant.)

Jay Rutledge wrote:

It was Hobbes who said, I think, that Force and Fraud are cardinal in War. Fraud is a species of Deception and if the researchers into statute have proved anything unanimously, it is the intent of the lawmakers to deceive. How could the grantors, the states, become instrumentalities of the power created by grant, the federal? (Author's Note: by contract!) The ultimate origin of Cooperative Federalism is in the creation and admission of West Virginia. West Virginia and all states after West Virginia were admitted to representation in Congress on the same basis as West Virginia. The Reconstructed States

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

were likewise admitted to representation in Congress on a footing inferior to the original thirteen. The inferiority is that Congress, not the sovereign power of the people of the State, ultimately defined republican form of government and the State's Constitution. Now, these states are not territories of the United States nor are they constitutional states in the same sense as the original thirteen were constitutional states.

The original thirteen were Free and Independent States before Union. From West Virginia onward, states are made from territories of the United States and do not enter the Union from a Free and Independent status. This New States Union is made upon the military power of the federal government and the states admitted to representation in this Union are provisional instrumentalities. Any explanation of our condition which does not explain the regional organization of the federal and New States Union and the military power or war or emergency power need of a regional venue is partial. Congress has exclusive power to legislate for the District of Columbia and exclusive veto over the legislation of the governing body in the District. It seems to me this is the clause, applied by war power and combined with the clause guaranteeing a republican form of government and supplemented by the new legislative power in the thirteenth and fourteenth amendments and by treaty, by which Congress extended the jurisdiction of its Acts into the States. The United States District Courts are simply Congressional tribunals exercising judicial power under Congressional regulation. Note that Puerto Rico and other insular possessions also have been admitted to representation in Congress.

The Union into which they have been admitted of representation is yet another Union. If the Acts of Congress that have extended jurisdiction are municipal law, then it seems to follow that the United States District Courts are municipal courts, not territorial courts. Municipal courts are created by legislative, not constitutional power, and have only such judicial power as the legislature grants. These legislative tribunal "courts" sit in New States and take jurisdiction and cognizance of matters arising under Acts of Congress. They do so in a venue called to order under a war flag. They do so under rules which are distinguished from the rules for territorial courts such as that for the Virgin Islands. In Cooperative Federalism the federal and New States federal instrumentalities are in a state of war with the other sovereign on this continent, the people. Their statutes have the effect of alienating the people from the land. A resident is an alien who is allowed to domicile in a place for commerce that inures to the benefit of the permitting Sovereign. An alien has not the right to title of land. Their statutes also have the effect of alienating the people from their natural rights and constituted rights. Any explanation of our condition which does not explain the role of artificial persons in the Cooperative Federalist scheme of statutory governance is partial. Dan Meador

Subject: Re: ComLaw LOPEZ decision and IRS/FDA/Motor Vehicles

I've watched this discussion with interest, and would like to make a small contribution: Under the Cooperative Federalism scheme, formerly known as Corporatism, Congress moved virtually all Federal government under the territorial clause. Definitions of interstate and foreign commerce in Title 18 of the U.S.C. are among the keys to verification of this. See the definition of "United States" in Title 18, and the definition of "State" and "Act of Congress" in Rule 54(c) of the Federal Rules of Criminal Procedure.

Where taxes are concerned, the Supreme Court tacitly told us this in a case where

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

the Sixteenth Amendment was brought into question, and the justice who wrote the opinion said that the Sixteenth Amendment is a moot issue (Author's Note: I suggest you read this part very carefully.). In other words, in territory of the United States, Congress can tax anything in any fashion. Likewise, under the territorial clause, Congress can regulate commerce pretty well as they want. Read the Insular Tax Cases (1901-1904), and *Downes v. Bidwell* (1901) in particular. Via the act of Nov. 23, 1921, Congress repealed virtually all taxes issued under Article I & Sixteenth Amendment taxing authority, retaining only the "normal tax" against officers and employees of the United States, what most people know as income tax. When the various excise taxes were reinstated, they were enacted under the territorial clause, not general powers under Article I authority. Quite an interesting batch of legislation in 1921, then another bevy after enactment of the Social Security Act of 1935. That set up the Public Salary Tax Act of 1939, which was rolled into the Internal Revenue Code of 1939, replaced by the Internal Revenue Code of 1954 (Vol. 68A, Statutes at Large), amended in 1986.

Jay Rutledge wrote:

The power granted in the interstate commerce clause was a power over the state power of regulation. To prevent state power from interfering with commerce. Not to regulate commerce itself with positive law. How we have come to our apparent present condition is beyond my understanding except that the states using emergency power did in the 1935 Declaration of Governmental Interdependence make grants of power beyond those in the original grant of 1787. This Declaration and all pendent legislation is all extra constitutional (Author's Note: I beg to differ—not if the people contract into the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress. And, of course, this is what the lawyers are doing—making the contracts available.), however, having no other foundation than martial or emergency powers rule by necessity. In other words, law martial rule.

Subject: Re: ComLaw> LOPEZ decision and IRS/FDA/Motor Vehicles

There is some misunderstanding in this message. In Art. I Sec. 8 Congress is delegated power to regulate only interstate commerce, but it was also delegated power to tax all commerce, both interstate and intrastate. There is some error in this statement. First a seemingly minor, but possibly significant point. The Power to regulate was precisely to regulate commerce with foreign nations, and among the several states, and with the Indian tribes; The point I wish to make here is difficult to grasp if the point is valid. It seems regulating interstate commerce would include setting load limits, hours of work without sleep, etc., while regulating commerce among the several States would be more limited to the interchange of merchandise. Proper regulation of commerce would result in fair trade. Other provisions add to understanding the function and purpose of the power delegated. Article I. Section 9, Clause 5: No tax or duty shall be laid on articles exported from any state. No preference shall be given for any regulation of commerce or revenue to the ports of one state over those of another: nor shall vessels bound to, or from, one state, be obliged to enter, clear, or pay duties in another. The power to tax all commerce was not delegated. Taxing exports from a State was forbidden. I would like to hear some other opinions but It seems the only way to tax without taxing exports from a State would be to tax only foreign imports.

A key distinction that needs to be understood is that in the original Constitution (be-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

fore the dubious income tax amendment), excise taxes, duties, tariffs, etc, could only be indirect taxes. That is, only taxes on a business which can pass on the tax to a customer as a higher price. A tax which cannot be passed on, but which is borne by an individual taxpayer, is a direct tax, and it must be apportioned by the population of a state. I cannot say authoritatively that a direct tax is not what is alleged here, but I believe it is not. Before I get into this question I would like to know of an example of a direct tax that was by apportionment. If there has never in the history of the United States been an apportioned direct tax, I will insist the Constitution was not followed, and the meaning of direct tax subverted. Can any one give me a historic example? The original concept of a direct tax only contemplated an ad valorem property tax and a head tax, that is, a flat tax of so much per person. Of course, a tax on the value of property could be on land not used to produce a product for sale, but a tax on the product sold of land used as a business would be taxable. Not constitutionally if the product was an export from a State.

By this distinction, there can be excise taxes on the income of a sole proprietary business, such as on its rents, dividends, interest, or capital gains (which is the decision in the Brushaber case), but not on wages for labor, because the former is indirect and the latter direct. Of course, the prohibition of a direct tax not apportioned by population seems meaningless as no power to impose a direct tax was delegated. It seems to be a way of saying that excise taxes, duties, tariffs, etc, could only be on the sales or income of businesses, and not on the value of things or on persons or their wages.

There are two other issues related to the commerce clause. One is whether the power to regulate something implies, under the necessary and proper clause, the power to prohibit something, or the power to impose criminal penalties (disablement of life or liberty) or only civil penalties (disablement of property). One of the Principles of '98, set forth in the Kentucky Resolutions of 1798, was that it did not include criminal penalties. Other sources show that the power to regulate is not the power to completely prohibit something in some form, under some conditions. In other words, to regulate means being able to legitimately prescribe the form, manner, route, timing, condition, measure, labeling, etc., but anything has to eventually be allowed in some form, in some manner, along some route, on some schedule, in some condition, in some measure, with some labeling, etc. Fair trade among individual States being the purpose of the power granted I would think proper regulations would give those who suffered loss due to violations of the regulations, grounds for suits in law and equity, against the violators. It is not reasonable to believe the United States was delegated authority to create new crimes that were not crimes before, when the United States was not even delegated authority to try criminal cases. Only cases in law and equity extending to specified parties. Constitution Society

More than anything, the preceding and following sections were included here to show you the real work being done to correct America. The political process has nothing to do with the real Americans involved in this work. I have also included much of this to show you that there are different opinions around about the problem, and I do not want you to think my opinion, and the opinion of the men I work with, is the only one around.

There are a great many men who are still convinced that the Constitution is the great-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

est document ever written by man, and it is nearly impossible to change most of those minds. But even those who do not accept the work on the Constitution showing the direct connection to Britain (the archival work by a number of men shows this conclusively), do accept the exclusive jurisdiction information. The problem with many of them is they do not grasp the absolute criminal aspect of such power being given to men.

Much of the work shown in this paper was developed during the third quarter of 1998, so you should understand that information like this is a work in progress, not something complete. Understand; this is the real work, not some rally for the republicans or democrats, and the libertarians have nothing to do with the real America either. You can not vote—you can not exercise the franchise issued from Washington, DC—without becoming subject to the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress, and without losing all Rights. You should find the following very interesting—especially those of you who believe that the problem starts with the FEDS!!!

SUBJECT: COMPACT OF STATES UNDERLYING COOPERATIVE FEDERALISM

Greetings to another excellent researcher who is among the many coming on line in the effort to put a historical and factual base under the constitutionalist movement: John R. Prukof, who bills himself as a legal researcher and serves as Executive Director of the Citizens For A Constitutional Washington, Puyallup, Washington. I need to acknowledge John in particular as he has done research by way of “The Book of the States” and connection of the National Governor’s Conference and other such organizations that participate on the State side of Cooperative Federalism. “The Book of the States” is published every other year by The Council of State Governments, which has headquarters at Lexington, Kentucky.

To demonstrate the import of this research, I will reproduce a paragraph John quoted in a November 17, 1998 composition on the subject he transmitted to people in his communications circle. This paragraph comes from Volume 2, Book 2 of “The Book of the States”, as reported from the Third General Assembly, the Thursday evening session held January 21, 1937:

“The call of our day is for a union of the States more perfect than the formal Union we have inherited. That Union must and shall be achieved through the further enhancement of federal power... We meet to further this [process] across State lines through the extension of voluntary cooperation. Efficiency of centralized power (Author’s Note: Now, tell me this does not sound exactly like the centralized planning done in the Soviet Union!) must itself depend upon this spirit in the states for any full measure of success... The balance of power may swing from time to time between Nation and State. That swing we may abide cheerfully, however it goes, if only we can give it the cooperative setting furnished by the Council of State Governments. To furnish the form of Federalism, then, with the spirit of State cooperation is our fate and fortune. As “Royalty” said to “Romance”: “This is the way we can ‘abdicake’ and eat it too”... The noble spirit necessary to our present cause — the spirit of intrepidity working its wonders in creating opportunity for cooperation.”

In his research, John tracks the basic alliance as being the “Declaration of Interdependence” signed January 22, 1937, with a second such instrument issuing January 30, 1976. My research suggests that there was a predecessor signed in Denver in 1935.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

The statement in the first line of the paragraph above conveys what should be self-evident: Those who participated in the compact, most of whom were elected and appointed officers of Federal, State, county, and local government units, mutually pledged to displace and subvert the Constitution of the United States in order to substitute what in their respective and collective minds is a more perfect union. To see the flavor of objectives this message conveys, read President Franklin Roosevelt's 1934 State of the Union Address — he openly championed the Socialist agenda, and warned “partisans” who might insist on preserving the constitutional republic.

In this particular submission, we might examine how this compact came to pass. The control provision is at Article I, Sec. 10, clause 3 of the Constitution: “No State shall, without the Consent of Congress, lay any Duty on Tonnage, keep Troops, or Ships of War in time of Peace, enter into any Agreement or Compact with another State, or with a foreign Power, or engage in War, unless actually invaded, or in such imminent Danger as will not admit to delay.”

The original enactment which authorized compacts relating to criminal enforcement was the Act of June 6, 1934, ch. 406, 48 Stat. 909. The section was originally classified as Sec. 420 of Title 18 of the United States Code, 1940 ed., but was moved to Title 4 of the United States Code by Act of May 24, 1949. The little darling, as amended several times since, is now at 4 U.S.C. _ 112:

“Sec. 112. Compacts between States for cooperation in prevention of crime; consent of Congress

“(a) The consent of Congress is hereby given to any two or more States to enter into agreements or compacts for cooperative effort and mutual assistance in the prevention of crime and in the enforcement of their respective criminal laws and policies, and to establish such agencies, joint or otherwise, as they may deem desirable for making effective such agreements and compacts.

“(b) For the purpose of this section, the term “States” means the several States and Alaska, Hawaii, the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, the Virgin Islands, Guam, and the District of Columbia.”

The original statute did not include insular possessions of the United States, but by the 1940's, as governments of the several States increasingly moved under Congress' plenary power in territory of the United States, the amendment to what is now 4 U.S.C. _ 112(b) was expanded to include virtually all insular possessions of the United States. Alaska and Hawaii were admitted as States of the Union in 1959, of course. According to the 1991-92 edition of “The Book of the States”, the following Federal possessions participate in the various compacts: District of Columbia, American Samoa, Federated States of Micronesia, Guam, Marshall Islands, Northern Mariana Islands, Puerto Rico, Republic of Belau, and the U. S. Virgin Islands. (Author's Note: I'll bet this is news to most of you!)

Also in the 1991-92 edition, in an article titled “Interstate Compacts and Agreements”, by Benjamin J. Jones and Deborah Reuter, the following is said about compacts established under the above authority:

“A compact has both the effect of a statute in each state and the features of a binding, legal contract. Therefore, when a state adopts a compact, the state may not renounce or

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

leave the compact except as may be provided for by compact provisions providing for withdrawal. As contracts, interstate compacts take precedence over laws that conflict with their provisions. When these characteristics are taken into consideration, it is apparent that interstate compacts are the most binding legal instruments establishing formal cooperation among states.”

John cited another section from the 1991-92 edition, and it so happens that Gail, my wife, purchased that particular edition for half a dollar when the local municipal library was clearing out old books. The Federal Depository Library at Oklahoma State University, Stillwater, has all editions of the “Book of the States” beginning with the 1935 edition, and other Federal Depository Libraries across the country should keep them, too. As research into Cooperative Federalism, the newly created Federal “United States of America”, and other relevant subjects gets into the meat of things, this particular series of books will be invaluable for tracking sources and the corpus of social-economic engineering that has compromised sovereignty and solvency of the nation.

Over the last couple of years, my focus has been primarily on the Federal side of Cooperative Federalism, but here are a couple of threads people researching the State side might follow up: In Oklahoma, elected and appointed officers take an oath prescribed in the Oklahoma constitution, then a second statutory oath that is to the “Constitution of the United States of America” (Constitution of the United States is the law of the land in Oklahoma). Additionally, our original cession laws which authorize cession of land for purposes set out at Article I, Sec. 8, clause 17 of the Constitution, provide for ceding land to the “United States”, where later laws in this category provide for lands owned by the “United States of America”. State, county, and municipal employees other than elected and appointed officers take only the statutory oath.

The obvious flaw in this scheme is that Congress may not amend the Constitution of the United States by treaty, and governments of the several States may not exceed authority delegated by or amend constitutions of the several States by compact or contract. In the constitutional system, government officials may exercise only powers delegated by their respective and applicable constitutions.

One of the more obvious examples of unlawful enactments is the Uniform Commercial Code, which was adopted by legislatures of each of the several States by 1966: The UCC is to the best of my knowledge the only “law” on the face of the earth that acknowledges the Federal Reserve Note as a legitimate medium of exchange — the “money or money’s worth” notion. Article I, Sec. 10, clause 1 of the Constitution of the United States prohibits governments of the several States from making any thing but gold and silver coin a legal tender for payment of debt. Therefore, the UCC stands contrary to the “law of the land” and can have no lawful effect. Legislatures of the several States clearly usurped power in the face of a strict constitutional prohibition, so the capacity in which they respectively acted can legitimately be described as “outlaw”. The compact, contract, statute, or whatever which exceeds constitutionally enumerated powers has the same legitimacy as me signing President Clinton’s name to something would. An elected or appointed public servant in our system has no authority other than authority vested in him by the sovereign people he serves. If and when he usurps power by exceeding constitutionally enumerated powers, he is in breach of the public trust, and has forfeited the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

cloak of governmental immunity.

In the closing paragraphs of his discourse, John states another obvious conclusion: All trails lead to the International Bank for Reconstruction and Development (World Bank or simply Bank) and the International Monetary Fund (IMF or Fund). By way of their respective charters, the Bank and Fund are autonomous — they are not subject to direction of any State or Nation. These entities were established under auspices of the United Nations in the wake of World War II, and in my opinion, they are the hinge pins to the gates of modern Babylon. /s/ Dan Meador.

Author's Note: The last paragraph is very true. And in that vein, the next report is very important, because what is being talked about can not be done without the direct approval of the [private] banks named above. David

This mornings news announced a plan for ALL banks to make accounts available to American's receiving ANY/ALL forms of money from the FEDERAL government (SOCIAL SECURITY, RETIREMENT ETC. ETC.), and currently do not have a bank account. They claim 10 million Americans are without bank accounts, and the FDIC is suggesting those new accounts be set up with a 3.00 monthly fee with no minimum balance for all Americans who cannot afford and do not currently to do business with a bank! They also mentioned that REGULATIONS will be available in the spring! This bit of news will REALLY strike home after you read the following article.

URGENT * URGENT * URGENT * URGENT * URGENT

I have just finished analyzing a 29 page document obtained from a U. S. Congressman who, for the moment and at his request must remain anonymous.

The document is a Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation (FDIC) document and is entitled Minimum Security Devices and Procedures and Bank Secrecy Act Compliance.

To set the tone for the following discussion let me remind you that since January 1992, the Federal Government has set its sights on establishing federal controls over EVERY ASPECT of every individual American's personal life and liberties. For example; 1. The federal government has established PROFILES for various so-called criminally inclined personalities. Now as one travels about the country, especially in air ports, the government spies look you over and if you happen to resemble one of those criminally inclined personality profiles, in appearance, conduct or mannerisms, YOU are taken into police custody and then you are required to prove that you are indeed not a criminal or even a potential criminal.

2. Even our school children are now being profiled so that the federal government can identify those children who, in the opinion of certain government agents, require psychological evaluation and subsequent psychological treatment (reprogramming) in order to instill in that child government standards of behavior to prevent that child from committing criminal acts later in life (so they think).

3. NOW the Federal Government, working through the FDIC, plans to PROFILE YOUR PERSONAL FINANCIAL ACTIVITIES.

The following is direct quote from the first page of FDIC document (6174-01) (12 CFR Part 326) Notice of proposed rule making.

SUMMARY: The FDIC is proposing to issue a regulation requiring insured nonmem-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ber banks to adopt and maintain Know Your Customer programs. As proposed, the regulation would require each nonmember bank to develop a program designed to determine the identity of its customers; determine its customers' sources of funds; determine the normal and expected transactions of its customers; monitor account activity for transactions that are inconsistent with those normal and expected transactions; and report any transactions of its customers that are determined to be suspicious, in accordance with the FDIC's existing suspicious activity reporting regulation.

The things to be very concerned about in this case are the PROFILE PARAMETERS that in turn define the various limits that when exceeded, qualify as an exception to the norm and thus must be reported to another federal agency, as a suspicious transaction. There is virtually no limit to the number or type of profile parameters that can be established. For example, is the customer an 8 foot tall white male weighing in excess of 400 pounds or is the customer a four foot tall black female weighing less than 90 pounds. The question or questions (and there are many questions) then becomes, who will be responsible for establishing, defining and controlling the limitless number of possible profile parameters? Who will be responsible for adding, changing and deleting established profile parameters? Who will be responsible for insuring that this awesome and massive capability will not be misused and abused by the various departments of the Federal Government. In other words, is the 8 foot tall white male an exception to the norm or is the 4 foot tall black female the exception or, are both the upper limit and the lower limit considered as an exception to the norm. How about all those in between?

As noted in the quoted SUMMARY of the document identified above, the key operative statements are as follows;

1. Identify its customers.
2. Determine its customers' source of funds.
3. Determine the normal and expected transactions of its customers.
4. Monitor account activity for transactions that are inconsistent with those normal and expected transactions.
5. Report any transactions of its customers that are determined to be suspicious.

Before we briefly examine the five individual requirements noted above, and so that you will understand where I am coming from, please be aware of the fact that, in addition to being a Baptist Preacher, I have been a Data Processing Systems Analyst for some 48+ years. At least half of that time was spent working for the Federal Government, designing and installing total Data Processing Facilities, from the Presidents Battle Staff, to the Congress, to the Department of defense, to the local Church name and address data base. I have written and taught several college courses; (a) Management of Data Processing Facilities and (b) Systems Analysis. One of the first things that I always tell the new students in my Systems Analysis class is in the field of electronic data processing, your only limitation is your own imagination. If you can rationalize it in your mind, 'electronic' data processing can do it.

Now, given that background and qualifications let me tell you, in no uncertain terms, — I know exactly what the Federal Government is up to. I know exactly what information they are looking for; I know exactly how to get that information and I know exactly how

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

they plan to eventually use that information.

Requirement # 1: Identify its customers. I have no problem with this requirement so long as that identifying information is limited to name, mailing address and an account number generated by the local financial institution and assigned to a particular account to provide unique identification, but absolutely nothing more. (Author's Note: Yeah, and if you believe this will happen, you have no connection to reality!)

Requirement # 2: Determine its customers' source of funds. This I have a BIG problem with. Even though the government would like for you to believe that this requirement is related to identifying possible illegal money laundering by drug traffickers, that is not the only reason they want to know the source of your finances. Remember now, the ultimate objective of the vast majority of government regulations and programs are directed at controlling the individual. This item required that you advise the bank of all the sources that you will be receiving money from that you will be depositing in this particular account. We will expand this item in more detail below.

Requirement # 3. Determine the normal and expected transactions of its customers. For purposed of this discussion we will consider only four primary parameters related to deposits and withdrawals against this particular account.

First: When you established a new checking account you will be required to identify the number of deposits you expect to make each month and the average amount of each deposit. For example (a) military retirement pay = \$2,000.00, (b) Social Security Income = \$400.00, (c) Rent from income property = \$750.00, (d) Interest from stocks & bonds = \$300.00, and so on.

Second: You will be required to identify the number of withdrawals you expect to make each month from this account and the estimated amount of each withdrawal. For example; (a) Mortgage payment = \$800.00, (b) Car Payment = \$250.00, (c) College tuition = \$1,000.00).

Once the average number of deposits and the average amount of each deposit has been determined and the average number of withdrawals and the average amount of each withdrawal has been established, it will be very easy to identify all transactions, in and out, that exceed the established norms for this particular account. For example should you find a paper bag on the side of the highway containing 10,000 well used one dollar bills, or Aunt Sue passed away and left you 10,000 well used one dollar bills and you deposited that windfall in your checking or savings account, that would immediately be detected as exceeding the established norms for your account.

Requirement # 4. Monitor account activity for transactions that are inconsistent with those normal and expected transactions. This requirement establishes the requirement that each financial institution establish a procedure to monitor your financial accounts on a regular basis for any transactions that exceed the established norms as illustrated above.

Requirement # 5. Report any transactions of its customers that are determined to be suspicious —. This requirement requires that all financial institutions immediately report any and all suspicious transactions detected as a result of deposits or withdrawals that exceed the established norms for your account.

As I was reviewing the aforementioned FDIC document, as quoted above, I called a

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

long time friend of mine who is vice president of a local bank that I do business with. I ask my vice president friend to identify the government agency(s) to which he would report such a suspicious transaction. His response was, the IRS and the FBI, at the national level.

My friends, as a long time ADP/EDP Systems Analyst I want you to pay particular attention to the following.

Whenever a good and successful Information (Data) Processing Systems Analyst designs a large scale information processing system, such as what we have been talking about above, he will ALWAYS allow for future expansion of existing applications and processing capabilities and his design work will also allow for additional applications and processing capabilities to be added with a minimum of additional effort and cost.

Based on my 48+ plus years in the business, let me tell you what you can expect in the very near future if the proposed rule making provisions as defined in the FDIC document identified above are allowed to be implemented. Please, read the following very carefully because it lays out the route our government is taking toward a cashless society as required by the design of a one world government under the United Nations.

1. PRESENTLY ALL recipients of military retirement pay MUST have a bank account into which their monthly retirement pay is electronically transferred. The government will no longer pay individual retirees directly, or send their retirement pay to a home address. This is part of an over all plan to extend more absolute control over the individual. It has absolutely nothing to do with economy as the government would have you to believe.

2. In the very near future look for legislation that will require ALL government employees, federal, state and local, to have a bank account into which their salary will also be electronically transferred, just like the retired military. In as much as most government employees already have the direct deposit option available, it requires only vary simple legislation to complete this phase of the plan.

3. Next you will see legislation that will outlaw the direct payment of all wages or salaries to any individual, by an employer. All employees who work for a wage or salary, will also be required to have a bank account into which the employer will be required to direct deposit their salary. And once again the legislation necessary to accomplish this phase of the plan is very simple and easy to implement, simply because most businesses would welcome the reduced payroll cost.

The government's objective here is to eventually make the local financial institution the only source of legal tender for the individual. At this point and for the purpose of this paper, legal tender is defined as dollars, debit cards or other credit cards. When objectives 2 & 3 above have been fully accomplished, it will then be a very simple matter to implement the rest of the plan. Let me explain it this way. The total plan equates to \$1.00 (One dollar) When steps 2 & 3 have been fully implemented, as step 1 has already been accomplished, that will equate to \$.95 cents of that \$1.00. The rest of the plan equates to only 5 cents out of that one dollar.

And just what is the rest of the plan? It's very simple.

After steps 1, 2 and 3 as noted above have been fully implemented, the only thing left to do then would be to outlaw all cash transactions and require all transactions now in-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

volving cash, be accomplished through the use of checks or smart cards followed by the eventual elimination of the checks.

At that point the federal government can then trace, track AND CONTROL ALL TRANSACTIONS, simply because all transactions will then be processed by massive computer systems controlled by the federal government. Given the above accomplishments and current electronic capabilities, the ability to exercise absolute control over individuals provided by the additional five cents noted above are absolutely mind boggling.

There are many, many more reasons that all Americans should and must oppose implementation of the five (5) requirements identified above. There are TWO things that every American should do, immediately.

First: All Americans should send a letter to the FDIC expressing their STRONG objection and opposition to the plan to PROFILE individual bank accounts for what ever purpose. The FDIC will be accepting public comments until December 27. Send your comments to:

Robert E. Feldman, Executive Secretary

Attention: Comments/OES, FDIC

550 17th Street, NW

Washington, DC 20429

Be sure to include the following information at the top of your letter:

6374-01

FDIC 12 CFR 326

Minimum Security Devices and Procedures and Bank Secrecy Act

Compliance

Notice of proposed rule making

Second: All Americans should immediately destroy ALL debit cards and credit cards and revert to using cash (dollars) in all business transactions instead of checks, debit cards and credit cards.

I hope you can see the future unfolding in these reports. I strongly recommend that you move to eliminate all debt, leave the city (I really don't care how much money you think you are making there) and establish some type of vehicle, preferably partly off-shore, to protect your assets—perhaps an Oversoul foundation based on the Catholic Church model in the states, or a Costa Rican Corporation off-shore, with a banking debit card connection.

I also hope, as you read this, other things are becoming clearer. The next time you attend a wedding, and you hear the words “By the power vested in me by the State of _____, I now pronounce you man and wife, I you hear the absolute blasphemy in the statement. In all the history of the world, the vast majority of the people who have lived did not consider themselves to be pagan idolaters. They were simply doing whatever the vast majority of their fellow men were doing, and obeying the common laws of the day. But you reveal which god you follow by the laws you study and keep. Does your 501 (c)3 church offer you a tax deduction for a tax you do not owe, and for what reason? Is your 501 (c)3 church prevented—by the same state which ‘invests the “licensed” min-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ister with the power to perform marriages, to discuss anything you are reading in these reports? Then, since you spend time “worshipping” with that minister, in that 501 (c)3 church, what god’s laws are you following? And why is America being cursed, I wonder?

WHAT DIFFERENCE?

The Republicrats are no different from the Demopublicans, except they might increase the size of the WELFARE state only 95 percent as quickly as the other half of the “Incumbent Party,” while beefing up the POLICE state about 120 percent as fast.

It’s the “freedom-loving, lower-tax, smaller government” Republican Congress which has given us the new National ID cards, the so-called national “deadbeat dad” and “child immunization” tracking centers to track ALL Americans, national gun registration (coming Dec. 1), limits on how much cash you can withdraw from your own bank account without explanation to the government, new laws which will soon allow armed soldiers to patrol our airports with M-16s, looking for “drug smugglers and terrorists” (the former harmless, the latter non-existent ... so far), armed ATF agents murdering California gun store owners in their shops, armed U.S. Marines murdering little shepherd boys in Texas... and which in its spare time has passed the Clinton-Feinstein “gun-free school zone” bill... twice.

I have never “touted a conservative line.” I’m a Libertarian, and proud of it. Libertarians are not conservatives; we seek radical change... back to the pre-1912 free society of the Constitution. (Author’s Note: But, by all means, THE CONSTITUTION!)

I did not support the socialist Democrat. I voted for the Libertarian. If a plurality of Nevadans voted socialist, it’s not my responsibility. I keep shouting as loud as I can, every week. If given the choice between feeding your children to a bear or a tiger, are you telling me you would dutifully make that choice as ordered — that it would never even occur to you to shoot the bear, the tiger, AND the guy who told you only had two choices?

It’s “Democrat Lite” Republicans like you, with your “lesser of two evils” rationalizations for giving our seal of approval to tyranny, who have brought this nation to the brink of armed dictatorship, and/or violent secession. (Author’s Note: Sorry, I disagree. I believe the reason is because the people of America are worshipping the false god of the state, and not god’s laws.)

Which are the proud successes of four years of GOP congressional control — in terms of restoring our lost liberties — to which you would proudly point? Name any.

As for “trashing the Republican candidate in Nevada,” my newspaper endorsed both Republican Senate candidate John Ensign, and Republican congressional candidate Don Chairez... and I personally wrote repeatedly in favor of Don Chairez, a decent and thoughtful judge (Author’s Note: It makes sense to me—a judge is a lawyer first... ummmm, I wonder where the problem is here?) who took on the political powers of this town to overrule an illegal eminent-domain property seizure from a widowed Greek grandmother (among others.)

In fact, I recently wrote a column on the “six brightest new faces” in Nevada politics in election 98, and not one was a Libertarian; every one was a Republican.

On Nov. 3, all but one of those six lost — and that one got elected to the entirely

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ceremonial post of lieutenant governor.

It's not my fault these Republicans decided not to run on the kind of libertarian issues (however modest and watered-down) that worked so well for them in 1994. Many of us URGED John Ensign and Don Chairez to run on issues like property rights and restoring the Second and 10th amendments. But they (or their assigned handlers from the Republican National Committee) were afraaaaaid. They didn't want to be called "far-right wackos." So they ran by claiming they wanted to "protect Social Security" and "make public education better." In other words, they ran on the platform of the WRONG PARTY.

At which point, having declined to identify themselves with any popular libertarian issues (these guys weren't even willing to openly embrace medical marijuana, a "controversial" measure which Nevada voters approved by a whopping 59-to-41 percent margin), they opened themselves to being defined by their opponents as nothing but "Democrats who hate homosexuals and want to ban abortion." Oh, there's a winning formula!

As another commentator said last week, "When you hold an election between a Democrat and a Democrat, you can pretty much assume it'll be won by a Democrat."

Usually, the real one.

The evils of tyranny are rarely seen but by him who resists it. — John Hay, 1872

Before you investigate the following site, you should be aware of the 'bill' passed by that great republican Congress several years ago called the "land for debt swap". In this bill, the authority for the following was established, and actual ownership of much of the natural wonders and natural resources of America is to be turned over to the IMF through the UN. So when you see something like the creation of a new "federal protection" area, like recently happened in Utah over the largest known deposit of high grade, low sulfur coal in the world, you can understand what is really going on. Now, the possibility of coal production in Utah does not exist, but... In twenty of thirty years, after America has been properly reduced to third world status, in the national interest and "for the economic interest" of the now destitute American worker, these areas will be re-opened by the "correct" multi-national corporations owned by the "correct" elite.

I also wish to once again point out the research work being done by a group of men who have identified the UN as the present day existence of the old British East Indies Company.

Biosphere maps can be found on this web site. I think this is what you were asking about with the biodiversity map. UN Heritage Sites and UN Biospheres are under United Nations ownership. Any way I can help I will be happy to. Try Yahoo search engine. Kathy <http://www.nwi.org/Maps/Wilderness.html>

Author's Note: The following is extremely timely for America at this time. Pay close attention to it. Nothing of the sort being talked of the Y2K 'bug' is possible unless somewhere the decision was made to "permit" it to happen. By "permit", I mean that someone, somewhere, made the active decision to "help" the bug along. Is it going to be as bad as portrayed? I do not know, but I would hate to bet the lives of my family on it not being this bad.

Senator Bennett Speaks Frankly to a Local Mormon Group

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

I received this as an e-mail. I regard it as authentic and important. Senator Bennett is the Chairman of the Special Senate Committee on the Year 2000 Technology Problem. This document indicates that Senator Bennett takes y2k very seriously, and that the senior officers of the LDS take it seriously. The day that 20% of the LDS members take it this seriously, you can forget about ordering a year's supply of stored food from a specialist retailer. The supply lines will be permanently jammed. I think his question about what the LDS will do when a member has been unemployed for three months is a good one. What will churches do for their members when this happens, which will surely happen in 2000? Note: a "stake" is the local meeting place of the LDS.

Here are some interesting comments that Senator Bennett said about the year 2,000 computer problem. He spoke at a McLean Stake Fireside in October. The following are notes taken at the fireside: Notes taken by Steve Nichols, a member of the Arlington Ward, McLean, Virginia Stake in October 1998.

On Sunday, our state had a family preparedness fireside on the year 2000 (Y2K). The speaker was Senator Bennett of Utah who is the chairman of the Senate Committee on Y2K. I went to the fireside thinking that it would be interesting, but also thinking that Y2K was not a big deal. Senator Bennett convinced me otherwise.

The Y2K problem will be an unbelievably widespread problem that we each need to start preparing for right now. Anything that is controlled by a computer or a computer chip may malfunction in dangerous and unpredictable ways at the beginning of the year 2000. Unfortunately, everything is controlled by a computer these days. To illustrate the problem, Senator Bennett told the following stories:

To test a water treatment plant, the plant management rolled the clocks ahead to 2000 to see how the computer systems of the plant would react. The computer responded by immediately dumping all the chemicals it had into the water supply instead of slowly dispensing the chemicals as it was supposed to do. The water was then poison and unusable. (Author's Note: Public drinking water is basically unusable now, due to the same chemicals mentioned above. It is just that the slow poisoning is not noticed by the people.)

At a General Motors factory, the management also rolled the clocks ahead to see what would happen. The result was that none of the robots on the assembly line would work. The factory was useless. Moreover, when the inspectors tried to leave, the security system refused to let them out of the building.

Elevators have to be inspected regularly by law. When the year 2000 hits, elevators may think they have not been inspected for 99 years. When an inspection is missed, most elevators are programmed to go immediately to the basement and close their doors until the inspector comes. Don't get in an elevator New Year's Eve 1999.

In January 2000, Senator Bennett does not think that the national power grid will fail, but thinks that some areas will inevitably experience extended brown and black-outs. Supplies of natural gas and telephone communications could also be interrupted. Long distance telephone communications will almost certainly be interrupted.

The FAA has been unable to guarantee that its air-traffic control system will not fail in January 2000. This may reduce domestic flight by 40% and make it necessary to ration air

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

travel. International travel will be worse. The Federal Reserve thinks that it will be able to continue to clear checks and other bank transactions for the country, but each individual bank or brokerage may be unable to continue to do business. Chairman Greenspan informed Senator Bennett that the Fed is printing an extra ten billion in paper money to handle the run on the banks that is expected as people convert their money into cash before Y2K.

Senator Bennett told of warning one of his daughters about these problems. His daughter asked if he has spoken to the Church. He thought that was good idea, so he contacted an employee at Church headquarters responsible for worrying about these kinds of problems. That employee assured Senator Bennett that the Church has, or is, upgrading all of its computer systems to deal with the problem.

Senator Bennett then asked if he could question this Church employee. The senator wanted to know how the Church is going to contact missions, temples and members around the world when the international and national phone systems won't work; how the Church is going to transfer funds around the world with the banking systems not working; how the Church will respond to members who are out of work for three months or more because the equipment at the factory or office where they are employed is malfunctioning. The Church employee had to admit that while the Church has fixed its own systems, they had never considered how they would be affected by other systems that had not been fixed. Senator Bennett was then invited to a meeting with the First Presidency, Council of the Twelve, Presiding Bishopric, etc. to brief them on the Y2K problem. Senator Bennett told the Brethren that he had been asked by someone in government when the Mormons were going to start warning their people to get ready for the year 2000. President Faust immediately responded, "We've been warning them for thirty years."

A major complication of the Y2K problem is that it will be a problem world-wide. While all the problems I have described above will happen in the U.S., we will be relatively well off. Senator Bennett said only five countries in the world including the U.S. are doing anything significant to address the Y2K problem (Japan is NOT one of the five. The five are the U.S., Canada, Great Britain, Singapore and one other).

This will cause huge economic upheaval in many countries. Senator Bennett was informed that the New York Stock Exchange has been refitting and testing its computers and thinks it will be able to continue trading in the year 2000. However, the Senator expects most exchanges in foreign countries to be shut down. For this reason, he cautioned us about investing in foreign stocks. It is anticipated that the economies of some countries will be devastated for decades by the Y2K problem. This anticipated turmoil around the globe will inevitably cause a deep recession, at least, in the United States.

You may wonder why we don't just fix this problem before it's too late. The answer is, it isn't possible. Senator Bennett has been informed that there are 160 billion lines of computer code around the world that have the Y2K problem. For every four lines that are fixed another error in the program is created. Therefore, everything has to be fixed, tested and then re-fixed. There simply are not enough skilled people or time left to do the job. Moreover, that does not include checking all the embedded computer chips that run everything from your car's transmission to your thermostat to your elevators to your

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

children's toys.

Senator Bennett illustrated the cause of the Y2K problem with the following Allegory. A new wife was making a ham for her new husband. She cut off both ends. When the husband asked why, she replied that it makes the ham taste better. "Who told you that?" he asked. "My mother," she replied. The husband went to his mother-in-law and asked if she cut off the ends of ham. She replied that she did. When he asked why, she replied that it made the ham taste better. When asked who had told her that, she indicated that she had learned it from her mother. The husband then went to his wife's grandmother and asked if she cut the ends off a ham before cooking it. She said she did. When he asked why, she replied that it was just habit, when she was young, the family oven was too small for a whole ham, so they cut the ends off to make it fit.

When computers were first being developed, they were not powerful enough to easily process dates with a four digit year. Early programmers used a two-digit year and saved millions of dollars. The early programmers, working in the '60s assumed that their programs would be obsolete by the year 2000 and that later programmers would use four digit years. The new programmers learned from copying the old programmers, and nobody ever started using four-digit years.

Anyway, that's the problem, the question is what should you do about it. Here are Senator Bennett's suggestions:

(1) Check with all your banks, brokerages, and other financial institutions as to their preparedness for the year 2000. If they can't assure you that they will be able to continue to do business as usual, move your assets to a place that can.

(2) Keep hard copies of your financial records and get up-to-date hard copies near the end of December 1999.

(3) Have everything you need on hand for at least three months by December 1999 (food, water and fuel — January is cold).

(4) Expect a recession in 2000 and plan your finances accordingly. Keep some cash on hand. Needless to say, after listening to Senator Bennett we are very concerned and are trying to get better prepared for this crisis. We hope this warning may help you do the same. Cathi Darrington, Administrative Officer, School of Business Administration, The University of Montana, (406) 243-6195.

The point that should be made here is how this ties into the desire of some to eliminate the transfer of information between people, particularly over the Internet. To understand what is coming in America, simply look at China. There, access to the Internet is strictly controlled, and violators are picked up and put into prison. I am quite sure that the wide use of computers will be blamed for the coming problems and those who use them demonized eventually. Only the state has the ability and the necessity to use computers wisely.

Also, the firm we use off-shore has the above problem in mind, and is taking steps to avoid it.

Research page for State Law, Gov't, Legislative:

<http://lawlib.wuacc.edu/washlaw/uslaw/statelaw.html>

This URL has links to all states State Law - gov't - legislative.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

It has a search option and I think it one that you may find helpful.

Author's Note: This last part is just for your potential research projects. Anything that you find which is of interest, please verify and share.

Back at the end of Part IV, I asked you to please help two others start on this work. Now, I hope you are understanding why. We need many to study and understand. Is this the only way to bring others to understanding? No, it is not. I am hoping to short-circuit the time needed for many to really start learning, and helping America. I know how long it took me, and many others, to understand. I do not believe we have that much time anymore. The fact is, for many of the people on Free Republic and other forums, if you gave them this paper, Part VIII, or PART IX or X first, they would simply dismiss it as those radicals again. This is also why I asked to not share this information with others, but please let them start with me at the beginning and ask questions as they go along. Now, please start answering posts about this information and, if you feel strongly enough about it, asking others to start what you are so close to finishing. All my best, David

Part IX will show you how we got trapped in this mess to begin with, and why the Constitution does not apply to you or any other United States citizen, and why it never has.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART IX

EVERYTHING IS A CONTRACT

Part IX is designed as a near-final message, and as a reaffirmation of the information you have already received. At the end of this paper is a list of sources that will keep you busy for some time if you really want to learn. The following letter and the Invisible Contracts it leads into shows exactly how we have been trapped into the United States. It is amazing, and I was as guilty as anyone else when I was younger, but if you ask an American to sign something, all you typically hear is where? In the rest of the world, mostly, you hear what the h— for?! I suppose we have a lot to learn about life.

THE ARMEN CONDO LETTER

George Mercier [A Letter Written In August, 1984]

In August, 1984, Armen Condo, Founder of Your Heritage Protection Agency (“YHPA”) was being prosecuted by the Federal Government under numerous tax-related statutes, as well as other collateral charges such as mail fraud.

The YHPA is still (the record holds to this day), the largest organized tax protester group to ever have existed in the United States (with respectful deference to our Founding Fathers and innumerable fellow unsung “tax protester” patriots living and laying their lives on the line in the 1700s for our benefit today). In its heyday in the 1970s/1980s, the YHPA’s dues-paying membership reached well into the 20,000 to 30,000 range, before it was ultimately brought into a state of non-existence through the intervention of strongly persuasive federal influences.

The YHPA published a fairly thick newspaper, and continued on in their efforts for several years, with their primary focus based upon the illegitimacy of Federal Reserve Notes, contending thereon that receipt of said Federal Reserve Notes did not constitute “income,” therefore, no one receiving said notes was liable under federal income tax statutes. Although additional proprietary “tax protester” positions were routinely addressed, the YHPA’s primary focus remained centered around Federal Reserve Notes.

Curiously, as a side note, individuals choosing to join the YHPA (usually in the context of a dinner/seminar setting), were guided through a “joining process” at the conclusion of the seminar, where dual ID photos were taken (the YHPA kept one photo, and you received the other, using a dual-photo camera similar to the dual-photo cameras used at your local Department of Motor Vehicles or local passport photo vendor) and slick, professional looking “ID cards” were processed on the spot and given to each new member

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

at that time. In hindsight, the stated reasons given at these dinner/seminars with respect to the “necessity” of having/creating a photo ID card were rather specious at best, and in fact, there was some additional hindsight talk that perhaps the YHPA was a Federal “Tax Protester” Sting Operation all along,, designed to attract and then identify. [For example, in the U.S.S.R., the KGB is known to have secretly “created” (sponsored is more like it) — various protester groups for the sole purpose of throwing out some attractive philosophy designed to attract a certain type of individual, and then having “extracted” those individuals from society, and having thus identified them — then shutting down the organization and arresting the members. This practice is a utilization of the principle known as the “Doctrine of False Opposition.”]

After all, it is rather suspicious, if not ironic, that an organization purporting to be highly critical of “government,” and taking a relatively “radical” approach to same (non-filing tax protesters “sign up here...”), and having an orientation favoring the individual over government in general, would in fact so closely emulate “Big Brother” tactics such as requiring a photo ID card for all of its new members, and for reasons that would not normally hold up to intellectual scrutiny or inspection except for the fact that within the context of the actual joining process, those people were not concerning themselves at the time with such incongruities, but were instead swept up in the excitement and impetus of the “I’m Mad As Hell and I’m Not Going To Take Anymore” sentiment generated at typical YHPA recruitment seminars.

Against this backdrop, George Mercier wrote a thoughtful advisory letter to Armen Condo in August of 1984, seeking to correctively alter the course Condo was then pursuing vis-a-vis his federal case, with the objective of the letter being oriented towards keeping Armen Condo out of a federal cage. And with respect to Armen Condo, the letter was a wash, as Armen Condo was highly unreceptive to its contents (being in an unteachable state of mind, and so he rejected it “in toto”); however, the letter did not stop there with Armen Condo. In fact, it somehow “exploded” into the general patriot pipeline/network, and was widely copied and circulated all across the country. (Although Armen Condo reacted adversely to the letter, it found a very receptive and appreciative audience amongst patriots across the nation).

One such copy of the letter found its way into the hands of Frank May, who subsequently wrote an intelligent and thoughtful letter to George Mercier, seeking an expansion of the enticing data contained in the Armen Condo Letter. Expansion he wanted — expansion he got, because George Mercier in turn wrote a reply letter to Frank May — a 745-page letter, which then became a privately published book entitled “Invisible Contracts - The Frank May Letter” (dated December 31, 1985).

So, without further commentary, what follows is the original letter to Armen Condo, the letter which started it all...

August, 1984

Dear Mr. Condo:

I just received your periodical “YHPA” for March, 1984, which I had requested from your organization for the purpose of contemplating subscribing to it.

In analyzing the contents of your magazine, I found that the United States is appar-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ently trying to:

1. Get a restraining order to shut down your operation;
2. Trying to get some incarceration out of you as well.

In trying to get a feel for your sentiments towards the United States for doing these things to you, I detected underlying feelings of anxiety and some resentment on your part. Therefore, what I have to say will only be of value to you to the extent that you are in a teachable attitude. I know that I am taking a shot in the dark by telling you things which follow, but I think it is important that someone inform you why you are on the “left side” of the issues and why and how the United States is on the “right side” of the issues — and that the Federal Judge is merely enforcing private agreements that you continue to maintain in effect with the U.S. Secretary of the Treasury.

By the time you receive this letter in August, the Judge may already have taken some action on the government’s petition for a restraining order against you — I do not know the present status of that action, but the information you need to know will be important to you either way the Judge rules. If the restraining order has been granted, I can show you how to get it reversed next January.

Before I identify the private agreement you continue to maintain with the Secretary of the Treasury (which agreement places you into a written, equity relationship with the United States), there is a fundamental principle underlying American jurisprudence you must be aware of as background material to understand what follows. This principle is a hybrid corollary and consistent extension of the evidentiary doctrine that specificity in evidence will always overrule generalities in evidence, even when they are in direct conflict with each other. For example, the statement by one witness to a crime that...

I saw a woman run around the corner, it wasn’t a man...” (and therefore the defendant, who is a man, isn’t the criminal).

That statement would be overruled by this statement from another witness...

“The person I saw run around the corner had long hair, a beard, and something like a tattoo on his neck...”

Hence, conflicts in testimony are always resolved by giving the greater weight to the most specific statements. This is also the way equity grievances in contract disputes are settled — the most specific, detailed clause governing the disputed circumstance is construed to be the statement meant to govern the disputed circumstances — even though broader, more general statements can be found in the contract and may favor the other party.

The principle that applies to your relationship with the King (the King being the United States — the Constitution being essentially a renamed enactment of English Common Law as it was at that time, with only additional restraints being placed on the King) is the principle that private agreements will always overrule the Constitution and the Bill of Rights. Thus, specific agreements governing individual circumstances will always overrule broad general clauses found in the Constitution. Or expressed in other words, it is irrational to allow someone to enter into a private agreement with someone, and then allow him to take a clause out of the Constitution — off point and out of context — and allow him to take that clause and use it to weasel, twist and squirm his way out of the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

agreement, all while retaining the financial gain the agreement gave him in the first place. This is irrational, and judges won't allow it.

For example, let's say that I hired you to come work for me as a computer design engineer for my computer company. When you started work for me you signed an agreement agreeing that all company information that you were exposed to while employed here, and all knowledge you acquired regarding impending new products and technologies being worked on here — you had agreed not to disclose, release or disseminate any such confidential information to any other person for a five year period after you left my employ for any reason. So let's say that you have now left my company, and you start publishing and disseminating information you learned while here to my competitors. Your excuse for violating the agreement you signed earlier with me is that...

“Well, the First Amendment says I got freedom of speech and press...”

So now I take you in front of a judge and ask for a restraining order. Question: Does the First Amendment apply? The answer is no, it doesn't. Restraining order granted. Reason: Private agreements overrule the Bill of Rights. In other words, one does not get to use the Bill of Rights to weasel out of private agreements, while retaining the gain that the agreement gave him in the first place. In the back of the judge's mind is the following logic:

“Well, Mr. Condo... you entered into an agreement with Mr. Mercier to be an engineer for him, and under which you experienced financial gain or profit. Now that you don't feel like honoring the agreement any longer, you want to take a clause out of the Bill of Rights to work your way out of your agreement with Mr. Mercier, all while keeping the money he gave you under the agreement by working for him. This is irrational. Restraining order will have to be granted.”

Another example is this: Say that you are a convict sitting in a prison. The warden calls you upstairs and offers to let you go free if you sign an agreement. That agreement calls for parole checking, warrantless entry of your residence at any time, and you agree not to carry any guns. You sign the agreement and clear out of prison. A month later your car is stopped for speeding and a gun is seen half covered in the back seat. The officer charges you with possession of a concealed weapon. You argue Second Amendment rights during pretrial motions. The trial judge ignores your motions and sets a trial date. Question: Is the judge a fifth column commie pinko? No, he isn't; he is merely enforcing private agreements. Here you signed an agreement and you experienced a gain (premature freedom). Now you want to take the Second Amendment, and use that to weasel and twist your way out of an agreement, all while retaining the gain (freedom) that the agreement gave you. This is irrational, and judges will not allow it, properly so.

You probably have heard it said that Federal Judges will tell defendants and counsel in Section 7203 — Willful Failure To File criminal trials that...

“...the Constitution does not apply here.”

That statement shocks most people up a wall — but it is an accurate and correct statement. The Judge will never tell you why, though. Of all of the different Judges that I know who have blurted out that statement, none of the criminal defendants have ever pressed the Judge for an explanation as to why the Constitution does not apply. The rea-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

son why the Constitution does not apply is because the Judge is merely enforcing private agreements the defendant signed with the Secretary of the Treasury. The Judge is not a fifth column commie pinko. The agreement the Judge has in front of him is not the defendant's 1040 or the defendant's W-2/4; those are merely declarations of facts and no profit or gain is experienced by them. The real reason is as follows:

When new Federal Judges are hired (nominated by the President and later confirmed by the Senate after hearings by the Senate Judiciary Committee — after they go through that hiring procedure in Washington — they are taken back to Washington and are taken into private seminars that are sponsored by the United States Department of Justice. It is in these seminars that new Federal Judges are taught and trained “how to” manage their criminal proceedings so as to avoid reversible error, i.e., absence of counsel and trial procedure, etc. They are taught and trained what the Supreme Court of the United States wants for perfecting due process. They are given Supreme Court cases to study — and sitting next to that new Judge in these seminars is their Appeals Court Justice (who will be auditing appeals coming out of their trial court), confirming that the information being taught and presented by Justice Department lawyers is true and correct and that “Things will be done this way.”

They are given a “Bench Book” to take with them, giving the new Judge guidance on handling problems as they arise on the bench. Finally, the interesting part comes: They are taught how to manage “Tax Protester” trials — violations of Title 26. Federal Judges have been instructed that the Supreme Court ruled in 1896 in a case called *Davis vs. Elmira Savings*, 161 U.S. 275 that banks are instrumentalities of the Congress. In other words, the interstate system of banks is the private property of the King. This means that any profit or gain anyone experienced by a bank/thrift and loan/employee credit union — any regulated financial institution carries with it — as an operation of law — the identical same full force and effect as if the King himself created the gain. So as an operation of law, anyone who has a depository relationship, or a credit relationship, with a bank, such as checking, savings, CD's, charge cards, car loans, real estate mortgages, etc., are experiencing profit and gain created by the King — so says the Supreme Court.

At the present time, Mr. Condo, you have bank accounts (because you accept checks as payment for books and subscriptions), and you are very much in an EQUITY RELATIONSHIP with the King.

In the words of Supreme Court Justice Felix Frankfurter:

“Equity is brutal, but we are merely enforcing agreements.”

Or in other words, Judges don't like the idea of being thought upon as being mean gestapo agents — doing the dirty work for the King. They consider themselves as being struck between a rock and a hard spot — being asked to enforce agreements and without being given any valid reason as to why you should be let out of it — other than you just don't feel like being incarcerated.

So what happens during these Willful Failure to File trials is that:

1. The Intelligence Division of the IRS surveys the local banks in the vicinity of the tax protester, and obtains copies of the protester's signature card and financial transactions statements from the bank.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

2. At the time the U.S. Attorney requests the Judge to sign the Summons, the Judge has been presented with your bank account information. So now during the prosecution the Federal Judge is sitting up there on the bench with your agreement with the King in front of him while the tax protester argues:

“Well, Judge, the Fourth Amendment says...”

“Judge, the Fifth Amendment says I don’t gotta...”

Are you beginning to see why the Judge is prone to experience frustration and blurt out “the Constitution does not apply here!”?

Meanwhile, the Judge is ignoring all Constitutionally related arguments and denying all motions.

If you would go back to your bank and ask the manager to show you your signature card again, in small print you will see the words:

“The undersigned hereby agrees to abide by all of the Rules of this Bank.”

Have you ever asked to see a copy of the bank rules? If you have, you will read and find out that you agreed to abide by all of the administrative rulings of the Secretary of the Treasury, among many other things.

What is really happening in these Willful Failure to File prosecutions is that the Judge is operating on the penal clause to a civil contract. And since you have agreed to be bound by Title 26, what difference does it make whether or not Title 26 was ever enacted by the Congress? A contract does not have to be enacted by Congress — in whole or in part — in order to make it enforceable.

As for the actual taxation itself, what happens is that the King creates a “juristic personality” at the time you open your bank account. And it is that juristic personality (its income and assets) that the King’s Agents are “excising” back to the King. But in any event, the taxing power of the Congress attaches by contract or use of the King’s property. The Congress does not have the jurisdiction to use the police powers to raise revenue.

That is the proper way (the ideal Alice in Wonderland way actually) to collect taxes, and that is the procedure by which Federal Judges are enforcing the law — not by ruling over gestapo Star Chambers.

(I have some reservations on the modus operandi of Federal Judges to the extent that the Supreme Court mentions over and over again that:

“Justice must satisfy the appearance of justice.” [Offutt vs. U.S., 348 U.S. 11] and that when a man is thoroughly convinced that he is on the right side of an issue — a man like Irwin Schiff — that justice has not satisfied the appearance of justice unless the criminal defendant is aware that he did wrong. And on these tax protester trials, that requires a sentencing hearing lecture by the judge to the defendant on why and where the defendant did err. So I disagree with the modus operandi of Federal Judges to this extent).

I am not going to spend any more time on this subject just right now — other than you should be cognizant by this point in the letter that you are on the left side of the issue — and that the King’s Agents are not working a great evil by going around the countryside asking people to stop defiling themselves by dishonoring their own agreements with the King.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

So, in conclusion on this issue, if the 16th Amendment were somehow repealed tomorrow morning at 9:00am — it would not change a single thing (other than the IRS would have to start giving people a correct presentation of the law to justify the taxes). The IRS and the excise tax on juristic persons would continue on as usual.

As it pertains to the proposed restraining order the King's Agents are trying to get against you and your alter ego, please get a copy of the Complaint filed by U.S. Attorney Charles Magnuson dated January 31, 1984 — and turn to page 9. Examine the last five words in paragraph "b":

"...under the Court's equity powers."

This petition by the United States for a restraining order against you is legitimate to the extent that you are in written contractual equity with the King.

When you trace back the genealogy of your signature on your bank card, you will find that you agreed to be bound by Title 26, and under Section 7202 you agreed not to disseminate any fraudulent tax advice. And the concept that Federal Reserve Notes are not taxable instruments of commerce — for any reason — when the person has a written agreement with the King saying that FRN's are taxable — this concept is in fact fraudulent.

I would encourage you, Mr. Condo, to prove me wrong. You can prove me wrong by asking the Judge:

"Please identify the instrument I signed, Judge, which creates an attachment of equity jurisdiction between the United States and me."

The Federal Judge probably is not going to want to disclose what document it is that you executed which created the attachment of equity jurisdiction. They have been asked not to let the cat out of the bag. The IRS handles this "bank account = equity relationship" on a military style "need-to-know" only type basis. You can file a Mandamus in the Circuit Court of Appeals or petition for a Subpoena Duces Tecum returnable against the U.S. Attorney to compel discovery of what it is that you signed that created the attachment of equity jurisdiction the King's Agents are now acting under in trying to get a restraining order against you. This type of equity jurisdiction always attaches by written consent.

If this restraining order has already been granted by now — then get rid of your bank accounts and file a petition for reversal next January — your arguments being then that you are not in an equity relationship with the King anymore. Then the First Amendment would apply then, but it does not apply to you now since you are in an equity relationship with the King — and private agreements overrule the Bill of Rights.

END OF LETTER

Everything you sign is a Contract. But more importantly, everything is a contract, including your relationship with your wife, your children, your neighbors, and, most important of all, with your Creator—The One True God. The following files contain numerous sources/case law for verification and expansion of the above letter.

To better understand contracts, the rest of George Mercier's Invisible Contracts can be found at: http://www.discovery.net.com/initiative/march98_article.htm Ed. note: This URL appears to be inactive as of 01-26-00

The Contents of Invisible Contracts:

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Help file 14,849 Bytes

0. Letter to Armen Condo 22,732 Bytes

1. Introduction [p. 1-88] 291,960 Bytes

2. Third Party Interference with a Contract [p. 89-130] 134,115 Bytes

3. Bank Accounts [p. 131-193] 195,644 Bytes

4. The Story of Banking [p. 194-228] 93,609 Bytes

5. The Employment Contract [p. 229-299] 189,497 Bytes

6. Admiralty Jurisdiction [p. 300-385] 240,238 Bytes

7. The Citizenship Contract [p. 386-434] 165,822 Bytes

8. Federal Reserve Notes [p. 435-477] 103,170 Bytes

9. Insurance Programs [p. 478-479] 3,199 Bytes

10. Federal Licensing Programs [p. 480-481] 5,067 Bytes

11. State Created Juristic Benefits [p. 482-531] 146,603 Bytes

12. Government Enforcement of Commercial Interests [p. 532-553] 51,119 Bytes

13. The Residency Contract [p. 553-565] 36,241 Bytes

14. An Endless List [p. 566-661] (TEXT UNAVAILABLE)

15. Epilogue [p. 662-745] (TEXT UNAVAILABLE)

This next section is in the way of a reminder of what it means to expect that someone else is going to fix America... for you.

CONGRESS' RED ARMY CAUCUS

The Internet has been buzzing for the last week or two with discussions and frantic e-mails of concern about Congress' so-called "Progressive Caucus."

I'm a little surprised, since I first wrote about this group of socialist subversives back in July — warning that its approximately 60 members, including Maxine Waters, Barney Frank and John Conyers, represent a large, unyielding voting and lobbying bloc pushing the government inevitably toward the goals of its Democratic Socialists of America sponsors. I referred to the group then and again now as Congress' Red Army Caucus. No other shorthand description could possibly do them justice.

Think about it. There are at least five Bolsheviks on the House Judiciary Committee. Do you think anything — any evidence — could ever persuade them to break with their party line against impeachment of William Jefferson Clinton. Imagine the outcry if there were five members belonging to some other extremist hate group — American Nazi Party, Ku Klux Klan, etc.

Yet, there's no moral difference. The Democratic Socialists' goal is clear from their own literature. The goal is Communism. Never mind that the history of that system is littered with more death, oppression and destruction than any other "ism." Never mind that it has been discredited everywhere it has been tried. The DSA believes the right people just haven't been in charge. They want to try it here — in the United States of America.

The Progressive Caucus and congressional members are a big part of their game

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

plan. The Democratic Socialists actively seek out “celebrities” for outreach purposes. They use them to recruit — to achieve mainstream credibility.

“While it’s certainly true that one can’t build a mass socialist movement simply by recruiting celebrities, they are very important in legitimizing both the organization and the concept of socialism,” explains an organizational document geared toward its youth program. “When you tell someone that Ron Dellums, Barbara Eisenreich, Gloria Steinem, Wimpy Winpisinger and Ed Asner are members,” it helps take the horns off of socialism.

Furthermore, the Democratic Socialists’ chief organizing goal is to work within the Democratic Party.

“Stress our Democratic Party strategy and electoral work,” the same document explains. “The Democratic Party is something the public understands, and association with it takes the edge off. Stressing our Democratic Party work will establish some distance from the radical subculture and help integrate you to the milieu of the young liberals.”

Yet, that radical subculture is alive and well within the Democratic Socialists of America and its affiliate group, the Progressive Caucus of Congress.

Take the song list at the DSA Website. It features, first and foremost, “The Internationale,” the worldwide anthem of Communism and socialism. Another classic is “Red Revolution” sung to the tune of “Red Robin.” Here are the lyrics for that little ditty: “When the Red Revolution brings its solution along, along, there’ll be no more looting’ when we start shooting’ that Wall Street throng. ...” Then there’s that memorable old ballad, “Are You Sleeping, Bourgeoisie?” Never heard that one? You haven’t been in the congressional Progressive Caucus, lately, I guess: “Are you sleeping? Are you sleeping? Bourgeoisie, Bourgeoisie. And when the revolution comes, We’ll kill you all with knives and guns, Bourgeoisie, Bourgeoisie.”

Gee, imagine what the totalitarians in the Progressive Caucus would do if they found that kind of extremist “hate speech” on the Website of a right-wing congressional caucus.

Make no mistake. These folks are revolutionaries. They may dress in suit and tie. They may not carry guns and bandoleers. But the Red Army Caucus in Congress is at the vanguard of a Communist movement that has no respect for the U.S. Constitution, individual rights and the freedoms America takes for granted today.

Their rhetoric is a little more sophisticated at times than Stalin’s, but the goals are the same — a dictatorship of the proletariat, that oh, so elusive worker’s paradise, reeducation camps, you get the picture.

In one article on the DSA site, a “fundamental restructuring of our socioeconomic order” is demanded.

“While the freedoms of democratic capitalism are gains of popular struggle to be cherished, democratic socialists argue that the values of liberal democracy can only be fulfilled when the economy as well as the state is democratically controlled.”

Gee, I can hardly wait. (Author’s Note: As can I, but to understand this, you must first understand democracy. I doubt the writer of this piece does. David)

And, from another source:

“The Democratic Socialists of America (DSA) is the largest socialist organization in

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

the United States, and the principal U.S. affiliate of the Socialist International (also in Francais and Espanol). DSA's members are building progressive movements for social change while establishing an openly socialist presence in American communities and politics. ..." Please note the phrase "openly socialist presence in American communities AND politics." They go on to write: "We invite you to support the campaign by adding your name to the list of signers of the Pledge for Economic Justice.

In conjunction with the Campaign DSA is working with the Congressional Progressive Caucus, a network of more than 50 progressive members of the U.S. House of Representatives...

"The Progressive Caucus of the U.S. House of Representatives is made up of 58 members of the House. The Caucus works to advance economic and social justice through sponsoring legislation that reflects its purpose. The Caucus also works with a coalition of organizations, called the Progressive Challenge, to bring new life to the progressive voice in U.S. politics."... and it is assumed, to undermine, abrogate and destroy the Constitution of the United States to which those 58 congressional members have sworn a sacred oath.

Who are these socialist co-conspirators? You'll recognize many of them as the "usual suspects" as purveyors of petulance. Bernard Sanders from Vermont is the chairman, and Maxine Waters of California is on the Executive Committee. I'll include the full list at the end, but this should be a wake up call for all Americans, and all who still cherish freedom and liberty.

Socialism comes in a wide variety of flavors ... all bad. Communism has jokingly been called "socialism in a hurry." Mussolini tried out fascism, a variation on the same theme. The Nationalist Socialist Workers Party was the Nazism effort. Now John Conyers, Barney Frank, Maxine Waters and their co-conspirators rabid to defend the indefensible are working to introduce and legitimize an American abomination. The Democratic Socialists of America.

Here is the list (provided by The Democratic Socialists of America) of Socialists in Congress. You are strongly encouraged to call, fax, email, and raise hell. While you are still allowed to do so.

Membership:

Rep Eni Faleomavaega, AL

Rep Earl Hilliard, AL

Rep Ed Pastor, AZ

Rep Xavier Becerra, CA

Rep George Brown, CA

Rep Julian Dixon, CA

Rep Bob Filner, CA

Rep George Miller, CA

Rep Nancy Pelosi, CA

Rep Pete Stark, CA

Rep Esteban Torres, CA

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Rep Maxine Waters, CA
Rep Henry Waxman, CA
Rep Lynn Woolsey, CA
Rep Diane DeGette, CO
Rep Eleanor Norton, DC
Rep Corrien Brown, FL
Rep Alcee Hastings, FL
Rep Carrie Meek, FL
Rep John Lewis, GA
Rep Cynthia McKinney, GA
Rep Neil Abercrombie, HI
Rep Patsy Mink, HI
Rep Danny Davis, IL
Rep Lane Evans, IL
Rep Luis Guterrez, IL
Rep Jesse Jackson, IL
Rep Julia Carson, IN
Rep Barney Frank, MA
Rep Jim McGovern, MA
Rep John Olver, MA
Rep John Tierney, MA
Rep David Bonior, MI
Rep John Conyers, MI
Rep Lynn Rivers, MI
Rep Bernie Thompson, MS
Rep Melvin Watts, NC
Rep Donald Payne, NJ
Rep Maurice Hinchey, NY
Rep John LaFalace, NY
Rep Jerold Nadler, NY
Rep Major Owens, NY
Rep Charles Rangel, NY
Rep Jose Serrano, NY
Rep Nydia Velazquez, NY
Rep Sherrod Brown, OH
Rep Marcy Kaptur, OH
Rep Louis Stokes, OH
Rep Peter DeFazio, OR
Rep Elizabeth Furse, OR

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Rep William Coyne, PA

Rep Chaka Fattah, PA

Rep Carlos Romero-Barcelo, PR

Rep Robert Scott, VA

Rep Berard Sanders, VT

Rep James McDermott, WA

The secret to understanding the above is the fact that none of those members listed faced a reelection or election in which their membership in this organization was an issue. All of those listed are so-called democrats, but neither their so-called republican nor any other candidate made a campaign issue out of this. Why?

The only way that this many candidates can survive such an issue is because the decision has been made that the republican party will not make an issue of this—by the head of the republican party. Or are we to assume that WE know about this, but the republican leadership does not? Oh, and the republican leadership in America means, among other things, George Bush, so if you really think that the next president of the United States, Mr. George Bush, Jr., will make a difference, you might want to think again.

Any competent campaign that used the fact of this membership against any of the above listed members of Congress would lead to their defeat in America. Probably by a very wide margin, with the possible exception being in New York City. That they were not defeated, simply means that those in power in the republican party did not want them defeated. Think about this the next time you are tempted to enter back into the old mindset that Washington, DC, is somehow fixable or that “Constitutional rule” is best for America. Or that your voting can make a difference.

Resources for those serious about learning:

1. STATE CITIZEN SERVICE CENTER: <http://www.state-citizen.org/link.html/>

This is Richard McDonald’s State Citizen information center. there are many files in this database that are vital for full understanding of the World Bankster’s plans. There is a directory of files by George Mercier as well. Visit this site and fill your memory with information. The documents on British Colony works by Lysander Spooner and many other subjects are available at this site

The file called Is America Still a British Colony contains the Treaty of Paris, the Treaty of Ghent, Cornwallis Capitulation at Yorktown, the Virginia Colony Charter and an in-depth analysis of how these treaties have been interpreted under Article VI, Paragraph II of the Constitution. There is also a listing of ratification dates for the original Thirteenth Amendment to the Constitution. The Titles of Nobility Amendment revoked the American Citizenship of all attorneys and judges who took the foreign titles of Esquire and Your Honour. Please remember, when the Constitution held all contracts to be valid, the charters which were issued by the King of England in the establishment of the colonies are contracts, wherein the King receives certain benefits (returns on investment) for having granted a charter (to lands he did not own, but who is quibbling) to one or more of his subjects. Were we ever taught in school that these charters are still valid? We did not need to be, because the language of the Constitution is plain on the face of it, once you begin to read it instead of listening to others explain what it means.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

There is a wealth of information in this web site. I suggest you use it.

2. FOREST GLEN DURAND: <http://www.uhuh.com>

Mr. Forest Glen Durand has an electronically reproduced copy of a Certified copy of the Thirteenth Amendment, as published by the State of Maine in 1825. There is more information on the Thirteenth Amendment on this website than on any other that I have visited.

3. AMERICAN PATRIOT FRIENDS NETWORK:

<http://www.esotericworldnews.com/apfncont.htm>

4. KEN ALDER'S FILES: <http://www.loop.com/~kenadler/sov/files.htm>

Hundreds of files for the Sovereign. There are court cases and much more. Many of the files on Sovereignty are useful to the readers of Strategic Withdrawal, once you understand the basics. Without the understanding of your relationship with the government through bankruptcy, many of these files would only bring more grief.

5. THE PISSED OFF AMERICAN PAGE: <http://home.earthlink.net/~castler/usa/>

Dave is a 100% normal American that began his website as an expression of disgust at some of the things that the government was doing. He felt that it was his right and obligation as an American to correct the wrongs. Dave had thought that the government was just a little off base but the problems were still fixable. The more that Dave learned, the angrier he got, until he read Strategic Withdrawal. Now, Dave knows that there is a remedy, a personal, peaceful remedy, even though the problems with the government are so deep seated that they are not fixable.

6. CONSTITUTION & APPLICATION, LANDMARK COURT CASES AND MORE:

<http://www.nidlink.com/~bobhard/constit1.html>

7. OKLAHOMA CITY BOMBING INFORMATION CENTER:

<http://www.future.net/~thetruth/okc.html>

8. SECRETS OF THE FEDERAL RESERVE: <ftp://ftp.irdg.com/pc93/secfed.secfed.zip>

This is a book by Eustace Mullins, and it is a good book. I suggest everyone read it, and most every other book Eustace Mullins has written, including Murder By Injection.

9. SERVING THE HOME SCHOOL COMMUNITY - for and by home-schoolers:

HYPERLINK <http://www.hslda.org> <http://www.hslda.org>

If you are a Christian, you need this site, if not for you and your children, supposing you may have none, then for your friends and relatives.

10. SUPREME LAW LIBRARY: <http://supremelaw.com>

11. MOUNT CARMEL CENTER: <http://www.flash.net/~wyla/>

Copies of the alleged Warrant that was not served on the Branch Davidians. Virtually complete trial conscripts, etc. Of course, there is a lot more to this story than we were ever told.

12. FEDERAL AND STATE LAWS AND COURT DECISIONS:

<http://www.law.house.gov/>

13. CARL KLANG MINISTRIES: <http://www.klang.com>

Excellent music for those who understand what is going on.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

14. TAX CODE: <http://www.fourmilab.ch/ustax/ustax.html>

A specialist website. Title 26 US Code is also available in other places.

15. VISA INFORMATION: http://www.travel.state.gov/visa_services.html

Planning on taking a trip? Leaving a paper trail? Getting lost?

16. ZIPCODE LOOK UP & ADDRESS INFORMATION: <http://www.usps.gov/ncsc>

17. BIO DIVERSITY MAPS: <http://www.america-collins.com/biomaps.htm>

These maps show where the European Aristocracy wants us to live. The European Aristocracy has determined that the population of the earth must be reduced and moved into these pre-defined areas. In order to understand the jargon of people like Lord Albert Gore, this information is essential. All of the environmental terrorism of Greenpeace, the Sierra Club, and like environmental activists serves the agenda of the global elitists (or they would not be funded). I know some people who are involved in what I call the save the whales activities. Most of these people are sincerely concerned about the world in which we live, but they have focused upon the result of the greed of the European Aristocracy and not upon the guiding force of that same aristocracy, Baron Rothschild. To Rothschild and his minions we are but boisterous and hungry playthings that eat too much food and take up too much energy. In other words, there are too many of us to be easily controlled. Most of us are dispensable and must be eliminated. This Website shows part of their plan for accomplishing their goal.

18. BORDER 21 (AKA AGENDA 21): <http://www.libertymatters.org/border21.htm>

This is the area near America's southern border that has been deeded over to the United Nations. If you doubt that Congress knows exactly what they are doing, read these files. Who does he really represent, be he republican or democratic? And what is a representative? Is there a reason why this name was used for those in Congress? Could it have anything to do with establishing your standing, or lack thereof, because these men are not your agents? You might want to think about this, and we will discuss it more later.

I also hope you are at least beginning to accept that the above, and everything in these reports which is evil, is a result of the Constitution—and not in spite of it. We, the People, keep forgetting the over-riding principal of the Constitution; it is the law of the land, correct? But in what regard?

Only in the regard that it is a restriction on the actions of the King. The Constitution is a modern day Magna Carta—nothing else. It has nothing to do with the people of America! It was for the collection of the tax that many in the colonies believed the King had a right to, and for keeping some connection with him, that people could have voluntarily. Remember that famous line from the IRS—the one about voluntary compliance? And it does not even matter if you accept the evidence of the connection to the King of England, because if some entity makes your law, it is your King! And perhaps that explains Christ and His Law a little, and why He is Named King. And why the so-called churches work so hard to convince you that His Law no longer applies, so they can extract a benefit from you through acting as an agent for the state, which makes their law. Just as the state issues their marriage licenses.

Our problems begin when we go to them and accept something from these minions of the King. It does not matter if that something we accept was designed to entice us into

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

the request, because the instant we sign anything bearing the King's name, we agree to accept his law—in its entirety. That's the purpose of the signature required on every form, and why there are such vague terms on all of the forms about acceptance and terms, always leading back to other legislation which leads to other legislation which leads to other legislation... Think about that the next time you sign the registration for your children in the public school, or register to vote, or... Well, the list is rather endless, isn't it.

19. FEDERAL RESERVE ORIGIN, HISTORY, PURPOSES:

<ftp://ftp.irdg.com/pc93/secfed1.gif>

20. PATRIOT KNOWLEDGE BASE: <http://www.micro.com/~pkb/index.html>

21. VIRTUAL LAW LIBRARY: <http://www.law.indiana.edu/lawindex.html>

22. THE LEAGUE OF THE SOUTH WEB SITE: <http://www.dixienet.org>

23. <http://www.uhuh.com> A great source for most Executive Orders, from 1945 forward, and more to come. Other information in addition.

24. <http://www.devvy.com/taxcourt/tcindex.html> Some of the most comprehensive information on tax issues:

The future you...

The person you are to become, is always watching the person you are right now. The image you have of yourself tomorrow, depends on the actions you watch yourself take today. The confidence with which you live next month, will be based on the integrity of your actions this week.

You can hide and conceal things from just about anyone, but the person you are to become is always watching. And that person's opinion of you will play a major role in your life.

Will you be proud tomorrow of what you did today? Will your future self find strength in your present actions and attitudes? Will you learn from your mistakes and from your successes? The you of tomorrow is watching, waiting, hoping and depending upon the you of today.

Live each moment like someone is watching. Because someone is watching, someone who can make you or break you. Live so that the person you become in the future can look back with gratitude and admiration at the person you are right now. — Ralph Marston

Now that you have finished Part IX (not that Part IX can ever be finished with the sources listed!), please E-mail <coffee@infotech.net.mx> and request Part X. Part X is the final paper of the first section, and it is a gateway. You will see what I mean.

We have staked the whole future of American civilization, not upon the power of government, far from it. We have staked the future... upon the capacity of each and all of us to govern ourselves, to sustain, according to the ten commandments of God.

-James Madison, 1778

In Part II, I mentioned that there was a solution. It is necessary for everyone to understand Invisible Contracts for the solution to become visible—for the solution is neither a group nor a national solution; it is for individuals only. And this is how we will change

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

America: one man and one woman at a time.

Earlier, I mentioned that I work with Gamaliel Ministries, and with their book, Strategic Withdrawal, the Peaceful Solutions Manual. The title of this book tells you what it is about, as it contains the forms, case law sites and statutory authority for canceling all contracts with the state and withdrawing with all of your assets intact.

What this accomplishes is to make you invisible to the bureaucrats, and it works. There are many people all across America who have used this book and similar works to obtain the freedom from fear that so many seek. Is this book the only, or the best, solution? No, to both questions. But, it is the best that I know of by a wide margin, and I looked for a very long time before I found the answers I was seeking in this book. And I mean I looked in case law and in many patriot sites trying to find the information available—to the best of my knowledge—nowhere else in a comparable or in as easily understood and used package.

Do I recommend the book—yes. And not just to use the forms; it is an excellent source for more learning, and you will find, as you read it, that much of the fear you have now will melt away. I had no fear to begin with, as I had solved that problem long ago, but I certainly can recognize that value in this work. And this information is different from mine; the book works well with my information, but is not a duplication.

If you wish to know more about this book, please request Strategic Withdrawal in a Nutshell, and I will send it right out to you. If you do decide to purchase it, I would appreciate it if you would purchase it through me. The cost is \$303.20, and the cost includes personal consultation time with the author. This is necessary for the correction of forms and research into the application of law in the various states.

As I briefly went over in Part IV, I work with a number of other groups who offer offshore banking, offshore trusts and foreign corporations as well as pure trusts and Corporation Soles (Oversoul) for asset protection in America. I think you are now beginning to see why this is necessary. This is what such things provide:

Become lien proof, levy proof, and judgement proof.

Protect your assets through the use of offshore financial tools.

Keep all of the \$\$\$\$\$\$\$ you earn.

Dramatically reduce or eliminate tax liabilities (and this includes the property tax on your home).

Totally eliminate probate expenses. Mostly, however, these tools provide you with what is necessary to become a sovereign in America, and stop acting as a disobedient slave to the state.

There are other benefits as well, not the least of which is peace of mind and a reconnection with the Law of our forefathers. If you want more information, please E-mail me and I would be happy to help you in any way possible.

One other note; the last hurricane which hit Mexico eliminated the village where I bought my organic coffee. Literally, it no longer exists. As of April of 1999, I no longer sell coffee wholesale, as I simply do not have a large, reliable source. This means I now depend, in large part since most of my coffee business was wholesale, on sales of Strategic Withdrawal, donations, and the work I do for Gamaliel Ministries on their Seminars

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

and the Symposiums in Mexico. I want you to understand that in these instances, I now have a financial stake, and being human, this will change how I approach these things. Not much, I hope, but such is reality.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

PART X

THE LAW, DIET & HEALTH

I hope, when you are done with this last part, that you understand why I do what I do. And why I have chosen the life I have. I am happy. Can you say the same thing? If not, why not? I am content. Can you say the same thing? If not, why not? I have found patience. Can you say the same thing? If not, why not? The flip side to this is that I have not found perfection, but that is a gift that must come from God; it is not available to me or to you as the tree of life is blocked from us because of our natures. And perfection is Eternity. It is the only way you may reach Eternity. Perfection in His Law, and not in your perception of law. This is THE reason for understanding The Truth; His Law. Nothing else exists in the Universe, for His Word, which is The Law, is the foundation for everything. Without that Word, we cease to be, but He does not. That is what makes Him God, and us man...

Read on, dear friend, and perhaps together we can find some answers for the future. Our future, and the future of our children and of America. The America that once was, and will one day be again.

THE LAW, DIET & HEALTH

Deuteronomy 14: You are the sons to the Eternal your God: you must not gash yourselves nor shave your foreheads for the dead; for you are a people sacred to the Eternal your God, and the Eternal has chosen you to be his prized possession, out of all nations on the face of the earth.

You must not eat any detestable food. Here are the animals you may eat: the ox, the sheep, the goat, the hart, the gazelle, the roebuck, the ibex, the antelope, and the mountain sheep. Also, you may eat any animal with a parted hoof, that has each hoof divided through, and that chews the cud. But of those that either chew the cud or have the hoof divided through, you must not eat the following: the camel, the hare, and hyrax, which are unclean for you, since they chew the cud but have no divided hoof; also the pig, which is unclean for you because he has a divided hoof but does not chew the cud; of their meat you must not eat, their carcasses you must not touch.

As for fish, you may eat anything in the waters that has fins and scales, but you must not eat anything that has not fins and scales; that is unclean for you.

You may eat any clean bird, but the following you must not eat: the griffon, the vulture, the eagle, the glee, the buzzard, the kite of any species, the raven of any species,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

the ostrich, the nightjar, the sea-mew, the hawk of any species, the barn-owl and the eagle-owl, the water-hen, the pelican, the carrion-vulture, the cormorant, the stork, the heron of any species, the bittern, and the bat.

Also all winged insects are unclean for you; they must not be eaten. Any winged thing that is clean, you may eat.

Some time ago, I read an interesting letter to the editor in a major newspaper. Which paper, I have no recollection. But I expect that I will remember the essence of the letter to the last days of my life here on this earth! The man who wrote the letter was so glad that the thinking of the dark ages is a thing of the past. You know, back when they believed that disease was visited upon man by God! How much better to be living in this enlightened age when we know and understand the true causes of disease!

If the letter had not been so pathetic, I would have laughed myself sick at the blatant ignorance of the individual who penned it! But the more I thought about it, the sorrier I felt for the man. And my People are lost for a lack of knowledge. And the sorrier I felt for the young me, who, in his own ignorance, fed on the filth of the earth, trusting in those about me to tell me if something was bad for me (I had an unfortunate upbringing; I was raised as a Catholic). The young me, trusting man for the truth, when His Word existed to show what was bad, and what was good.

To be honest, I thought this essay would be simple to write. How wrong I was! I have started this several times, and I keep getting lost. This subject is so vast, and most people know so little on the subject, that a little information is almost as damaging as no information. Frankly, this subject would be better covered in a book. However, that is not the purpose of this essay; this essay is intended to provide you with the reason to look farther, and, perhaps, the sources you should look to for the answers I will be unable to supply in this short work. And the answers that I have not as yet found, as well.

First, a warning. I have read extensively on this subject. But I have never found a book that had more than an inkling of all of the facts that are needed in order to make informed decisions (and every author of every one of those books would argue with me about this!). Every book covered one, or at most, two or three different aspects of diet and health. Most of the books warned the reader about different aspects of what was causing many of their problems, but not one of the books contained a complete picture. And none of the books I have read bear upon the facts about the foods forbidden in the Bible, and why. If you depend upon just one source for your information, you will end up confused, even if you do not realize the confusion. You will be making decisions, decisions affecting your life, and the health of your family, without all of the facts. Do not follow any one man, for none have within them all of the answers.

And more importantly to my own understanding, I have talked to a lot of individuals who have used what I am going to share with you to cure themselves, many times when the so-called medical profession was unable to help them. All of this information has led me to a number of conclusions, conclusions regarding diet and health, and the Law. His Law. So please, read on, and draw your own conclusions, just as I have done, and then begin your own research and discovery.

First, let us define disease, which is two words; dis & ease, meaning that your body is

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

at dis-ease. The opposite of this is that your body is at ease. This is important to know if you are to understand what is happening to a body which is dis at ease.

There are two types of dis-ease. The first is called infectious dis-ease. This is caused by a foreign organism which has invaded your body, and the body is fighting to throw the invader off. Colds, flu, polio, pneumonia, the Black Plague, etc. This problem is usually accompanied by fever as the body rushes to kill off the invading organisms. If your immune system is healthy, and operating at peak efficiency, you will seldom know when one of these problems is present in your body. (I might add here that pumping the derivatives of coal tar, commonly called drugs, into your system does not help your body. Instead, it generally slows down your body's attempts to throw off the invading organism while poisoning your body in other ways.)

The second dis-ease, and the primary subject of this essay, is called chronic dis-ease. This dis-ease is not caused by a foreign invasion of your body which puts the body at dis-ease. A chronic dis-ease, by definition, must originate in your own body. It is chronic to your body. And since it is chronic to your body, there will seldom be a fever to indicate that the body is fighting some invader, because there is no invader. (There may be some indication of a fever on occasion in this set of circumstances, but it will be because your weakened body is fighting some other organism trying to take advantage of the weakness in you.)

chronic; 1. Continuing for a long period. 2. Inveterate; habitual: a chronic complainer. 3. Prolonged; lingering: said of a disease: opposed to acute. Webster's Dictionary

Think about this for a minute; if nothing has invaded your body, and if the source of the dis-ease can not be found, yet the dis-ease is not acute, and there is no admitted or known cure for the dis-ease, might the problem be within your body? Now, the medical establishment will argue that they simply have not discovered the cause of the various chronic dis-eases of your body. And, of course, they will call lunatics such as myself everything but right.

But they have been doing the same thing for hundreds of years! For instance, the chronic dis-ease known as scurvy. Between 1600 and 1800, the casualty list of the British navy alone was over one million sailors, dead of scurvy. Yet, the cure for scurvy, vitamin C, was known since at least 1535. A surgeon's mate in the British navy re-discovered the cure for scurvy in 1747, yet it took another 48 years before the British medical establishment accepted the knowledge and acted on it. And in the meantime, more hundreds of thousands of sailors died from chronic scurvy. And can you call vitamin C a cure? When it is simply a lack of vitamin C causing the problem?

Pellagra is another example of a deadly chronic dis-ease. The cure for Pellagra was discovered in 1914. Yet the knowledge of it being a vitamin B deficiency was not accepted until the 1940s.

Rickets is another example. This is a chronic dis-ease caused by a vitamin D deficiency.

The medical establishment literally rakes in billions of dollars every year looking for the causes of die-eases just like those listed above (You have to know the cause before you can find the cure). Much of this comes from gullible or frightened people in the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

form of donations, but most of it comes from the government which self-serving men have learned to turn to their own uses.

The medical record of failure to acknowledge most of the discoveries concerning health, and in particular, diet, is well chronicled for anyone who really wants to know the truth. All you have to do is stop listening to the major press and tune in the alternative sources, and read the alternative books. History is replete with the tales of anguish and extreme suffering of millions of people who trusted the medical experts of their day. There is no reason to expect that a future age examining the records of our time will see any thing different. The record will still show that millions have suffered and died for little or no reason, except that they trusted and believed the wrong, self-serving men (Please refer to Part III).

It is a logical (don't talk logic to people who believe) conclusion to expect that if a dis-ease can not be identified as being caused by some source outside of the body, then it may be caused by the lack of something being put into the body (you are what you eat). However, this conclusion is rejected out of hand by most in the field of medicine. After studying the record, I am forced to conclude that the primary cause of the rejection stems from fear of the actual discovery of a cause/cure, and fear of the loss of the lucrative treatment of chronic dis-eases and of the loss of the billions in research grants being doled out.

That being said, what are the chronic dis-eases that I am revering to: diabetes, high blood pressure, chronic fatigue syndrome, migraines, Alzheimer's Parkinson's, multiple sclerosis, aging, cancer, obesity, lupus, and many more, far to numerous to list here.

The body needs approximately 90 vitamins, minerals and various enzymes and related natural substances on a daily basis in order to operate and remain at peak efficiency. The medical establishment generally acknowledges this. That is to say, what few in the medical establishment have any knowledge or understanding of diet and health generally recognize this. If we can identify scurvy, pellagra and rickets as vitamin C, B and D deficiency caused dis-eases, it should not be any stretch of the imagination to think about a minimum of another 87 (see 90 listed above less three named) dis-eases caused by the lack of specific nutrients reaching our bodies. And the nutrients needed may not all be vitamins. We are told in Scripture that we are made of the dust of the earth; is dust made up of vitamins? Or do minerals play a part in the make-up of dust?

In fact, since not all nutrients that we utilize have been discovered, and since a number of them work together and separately as single or multiple factors within our bodies, the possible dis-eases caused by the lack of the proper nutrition probably can be numbered in the hundreds, if not in the thousands.

Scripture tells us that the love of money is the root of all evil. ALL evil! Not most, not 99%, ALL evil! Think about that. Now, knowing this, just how much sense does it make to trust those who depend upon our illnesses, our dis-ease, to live a life of relative luxury and ease?

THE BEGINNING OF UNDERSTANDING

It's not as if the subjects that we are discussing are unknown, or that the facts needed for health are strange and unobtainable to the common man. The problem is that most

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

people believe in their doctor and in drugs. You can not bring the truth to those who believe. Logic and knowledge mean nothing to those who have no ears and no eyes.

So if you believe in your doctor, there is no use going any further, because some of this is going to be entirely too logical for you.

First, let's discuss some experiments that have been done on rats. The first experiment was a common one in the labs of our high schools across the country in the 1950s and into the 1960s. However, I can find no record of any such experiments being done in the public schools for the last 30 years. I would surmise from this that someone put out the word, and the experiments were deleted from the public school teaching. Isn't central control of education great?

In this experiment, the children in the class would take full grown rats and feed them a diet of white bread, and water, of course. Nothing else. The rats always were difficult to control, unsociable, cannibalistic, and every rat died of malnutrition. Well before the school semester was over. Every rat. No exceptions to this. So if you are feeding your children white, enriched bread, and they are exhibiting anti-social behavior and are difficult to be around, perhaps drugs are not the answer.

But then, perhaps it is not just white bread, either. The main point of the above experiment was that white bread has little, if any, nutritional benefit (there is a lot more to this story, and I encourage you to study the effects of white flour on your body. It is extremely damaging). The enriched part of white flour comes from inorganic, mirror-image vitamins added to the flour. All of the good, organic material natural to the wheat is removed during the processing of the wheat into flour. More on inorganic vs. organic later. For now, think of it this way; to add iron to the flour, they use a form of iron filings, basically the same as rust. But one thing can be said for this type of iron; it's cheap.

The other experiment on rats involved three groups of the rats.

In the first group, they feed the rats only raw fruits and vegetables. Most of these rats lived to the ripe old rat age in equivalent human terms of eighty years. These rats led very peaceful lives, and played with each other well, with little if any fighting or biting. At the end of this time, they killed the rats that survived (any that died did not die of disease, but from other causes normal to any group of animals), and autopsied them. There was no evidence of any sort of dis-ease associated with old age in humans or rats! None!

The second group of rats was fed a standard American diet. This group of rats exhibited strong anger, anti-social behavior, and cannibalistic behavior. Many of these rats died, some well before the end of the experiment, and the few remaining survivors at the equivalent age of eighty years were killed and autopsied. All of these rats exhibited every possible dis-ease common to the people in America eating the standard diet bought in our supermarkets! There were no well rats at the end of the experiment. They were all sick, and for the most part, in great pain as the chronic dis-eases slowly killed them!

The third group of rats were perhaps the most interesting. This group was fed the standard American diet for the first forty years of their life, then a number of them were killed and autopsied. Up to this time, this group exhibited the same behavior as the second group of rats, and a number of the rats had already died of various dis-eases. During the examinations, every one of the rat's bodies autopsied showed evidence of many

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

different dis-eases, all common to Americans.

The surviving members of this group were then placed on the same diet as the first group, nothing but clean water, and fresh vegetables and fruits. Most of these rats lived to the equivalent age of eighty years, with a few dying because their dis-eases were already too far advanced for them to cure themselves. After they were placed on this diet, the attitude of these rats changed dramatically, and they became very social, played well together and acted just as the first group was acting.

When the age of eighty was reached, these rats were also killed and their bodies autopsied. The findings were identical to the first group of rats who were fed only the fresh fruits and vegetables from the beginning! There was no evidence of the dis-eases of aging. No cancer; no eye problems; no diabetes; no senility; nothing!

Perhaps, as you think of the ramifications of these experiments, I should mention just a couple of important points.

First, I recently saw, in a major daily newspaper, the results of a study in New York which detailed the most commonly purchased food items in the major super markets of the New York area. The number one purchased food item was Pepsi! The number three purchased food item was Coke, and the fourth was Diet Pepsi! Call me an idiot, but I never realized that pop was a food item! I think that if a group of rats was fed only pop as an experiment, that you'd get the same result as was gotten by feeding them white bread and water! They would all die of malnutrition!

But the subject is even more interesting than that, because if you will make the effort to find and read the book titled *The Cure For All Diseases*, ISBN 1-890035-01-7, by Hulda Regehr Clark, you will find out that pop, ALL POP, is loaded with benzene, which is very damaging to your body, as well as numerous other chemicals. There is much more great information in this book, particularly about parasitic infestations of our bodies and other damaging processed foods contaminated by solvents and other chemicals. The real problem with the book is the author does not tell us where the parasites come from. More on this a little later.

To continue with pop, let me tell you about a little conversation I had with a good friend of mine who was managing the trucking segment of a Pepsi distributing company. It was a very interesting talk! It seems that when there are two semis parked in the lot, he has to be very aware of how they are loaded. If one truck has only Pepsi in it, and the other is loaded with Diet Pepsi, the Pepsi loaded truck will weigh up to seven tons more than the Diet Pepsi loaded truck!

Remember, a can of pop is 12 fluid ounces, not 12 ounces. So it is a measurement of volume, not weight, and the extra weight in the truck loaded with regular Pepsi is suspended white, processed sugar. And if your children are exhibiting anti-social behavior and are difficult to be around, perhaps drugs are not the answer!

But it could be worse! You could be drinking the Diet Pepsi, which is loaded with Nutrasweet, a plastic sweet derived from coal tar. Literally, Nutrasweet is a form of plastic, folks. And this plastic, when it enters our blood stream, turns into formaldehyde, also a derivative of plastic, which helps to harden our arteries. But most of this information is not in Clark's book, you have to find it elsewhere. All she really tells us is what is in the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

food, not the source of most of the problems.

A serious Note: Organic versus inorganic: Organic is natural; inorganic is artificial. An inorganic mineral is made from some carbon form to resemble the organic mineral. The only source I know of for carbon is oil (yes, I know, coal is carbon, but before they could use coal for this, they would need to process it into oil first. Why bother, and would that change the basic premise anyway? Coal is a form of oil, or vice versa.), so you can say that all inorganic vitamins are a form of plastic. Since they are a mirror image of the organic version, they are very damaging to the body. If you study this subject, you will learn what I mean. In the meantime, look at the labels on the vitamins you are thinking of buying; if they say according to the pharmacopia code or words to that effect, they are artificial. And all major brands of vitamins are artificial (why not? The profit is immense!). (I know, there are exceptions to this, like iron. They don't use plastic to make minerals; I said vitamins!)

But this is not all of the story either. We are just learning that when we separate natural vitamins from their natural state that we are probably losing some major benefits of the vitamins because of the relationships of the different elements within the plant where the vitamins originate. In other words, natural foods work much better within our bodies than a separate part of the same food, given as a supplement, PROVIDED, however, that the food is organic and natural (see genetic engineering and chemical pesticides/fertilizer).

There is another aspect of this same story that is... interesting. It concerns fidelity. As in marriage. I have no proof of the following, but as my understanding of health and the relationships in plants has increased, the following has come to make a lot of sense to me. (This was explained to me by a man who did not tell me where his knowledge and/or understanding came from, and I was too overwhelmed by the facts to ask.) The operative part of understanding this is to take what God says literally. He means it when He says that when a woman marries a man or when a man marries a woman that you become one. My understanding is that the physical act of union between a man and a woman transfers fluids from one to the other and from the other back to the first. I think we can all agree upon that part. The part that is interesting is that these fluids build a connection between the man and the woman, a connection that is reinforced over time and creates a physical bond between them. A real, physical, existing bond, at the cellular level. They become One.

I know this bond is real, because I have experienced it, and found myself unable to sleep when away from my wife, just as she had the same problem. This bond is weakened, and in some cases destroyed, by sexual relationships with a second man or woman. The problem, of course, is that if one half of the marriage is true to their vows, and the other half violates that trust, the one is bound and the other is not. This creates a very damaging relationship for the true one, and can destroy them just as the marriage is being destroyed.

Without this type of relationship, true happiness can only be an illusion. Have you ever seen a couple that has been married for fifty years, and true to each other? It is a truly wonderful and moving sight. And I expect that one day we will learn that having only one partner in the physical sense will lead to a much deeper level of commitment

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

and, ultimately, happiness. We are told in scripture that man is incomplete without woman. The same is true of woman, and the physical fact is that marriage is the physical consummation creating the bond, not the words spoken by man, and not the license issued by the state. You might think about this the next time you are tempted.

SECOND

The second point I need to make after our talk about the rats is the state of the food, in general, as found in the multi-national food chain super markets today in America. You really need to subscribe to Acres USA, P. O. Box 8800, Metairie, Louisiana, 70011. Subscriptions are \$24.00 dollars a year, and sample copies are \$3.00 each. I know I have mentioned this before, but after you get your first copy of the paper you'll see what I mean.

This paper is invaluable when you really want to begin to understand what is happening to Americans in general, and to our diet and health in particular. It is as well written and researched as anything I have ever had the pleasure of reading. Perhaps pleasure is the wrong word, because the message in the paper is not comforting or pleasant. But it is information that you must have if you are going to increase your resistance not only to the old dis-eases, but to the many new ones beginning to crop up today. Frankly, eating out of the super markets is a slow, painful way to die, but it is profitable for the corporations which own the stores! You can be sure of that! Is it healthy? No, it is not. There is no other conclusion to be reached once you begin to look at the facts.

In this regard, there is another book which is very necessary. In all of the information that I have read about cancer, this book explains things better, and makes so much clearer what must be done in order to avoid the pain and slow, agonizing death from cancer, than anything else I have ever seen. The book is titled World Without Cancer, ISBN 0-912986-09-3, by G. Edward Griffen. I suggest that you check with old book stores and the like, because this book is as good as banned! The information contained in it is simply too explosive for it to be allowed in general circulation! (I may have a source for several copies of this book. E-mail me if you have trouble.)

This book will leave no doubt in your mind that cancer is a dietary deficiency disease, and not an invasion of our bodies by some outside villain. The book is specifically about vitamin B-17, otherwise known as Laetrile, which is a water-soluble, non-toxic nitriloside. On page 52 of this incredible book is an interesting quote:

Can the water-soluble non-toxic nitrilosides properly be described as food? Probably not in the strict sense of the word. They are certainly not drugs per se... Since the nitrilosides are neither food nor drug, they may be considered as accessory food factors. Another term for water-soluble, non-toxic accessory food factors is vitamins.

It is incredible the lengths that have been gone to by the establishment to vilify vitamin B-17, and to demonize it in the minds of the people. All in the name of profit. The list of dis-eases which have been proven to be simply a dietary deficiency includes: scurvy, pellagra, rickets (which three I have already mentioned), beriberi, night blindness, pernicious anemia and others, and many of these are still misdiagnosed by the establishment pushers of drugs! Why, then, should we be surprised by the complete lack of honesty concerning cancer? Or any other dis-ease?

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

YOU ARE WHAT YOU EAT!

Isn't it amazing how much sense there is in the sayings we bandy around? You are what you eat. What a strange concept! You mean, if I put benzene into my body, the benzene becomes a part of me?

If I put a plastic sweetener into my body, it becomes a part of me?

You mean, if I put drugs into my body, they become a part of ME?

Wow! If only I'd known! Well, now you do. And it is all well and good to speak of the ninety or so vitamins and minerals that our bodies need on a daily basis for proper nutrition, but the damaging things we put into our mouths are just as important to avoid as it is necessary to include the good things!

If you overload your body with filth, your body is no longer capable of cleansing itself, nor of keeping your immune system strong enough to fight off the many viruses and germs floating around, no matter how many vitamins and minerals you take, waiting for a weak moment to invade your body. As you load your body with filth, your need for doctors and drugs, to protect you from your own actions, becomes much greater. (Aren't drugs great? And drug pushers? And I am specifically referring to the sign down on the local drug store, and to the doctors who push them. They're drugs, people!)

But where does most of this filth come from? From the processing of the foods?

Yes, a large part of it comes from that, but not the most damaging of all the filth comes from that source! Most of the filth we put into our bodies comes from our disobedience to His Law!

What!? Are you trying to tell me that we're subject to the old dietary Laws!

Yes.

And that's not all, because I can prove it beyond any shadow of a doubt!

First, what is Law, and who is subject to Law?

Law is the prerogative of the Sovereign Authority. Law may only be written by the King to which one is subject. This is called the King's Privilege; the privilege to make law. Only, for the Creator, it is not a privilege, but a Right, which should explain the extreme difference between His Law and the laws of any man. To understand this best, think about stepping off the top of the Empire State Building in New York City. This is not a good idea because of something called the Law of Gravity, established by the King Who has Sovereignty over the Universe, which says that only birds may fly in their natural state. Therefore, if a man tries to do as the birds do, he will have a very short time to live.

The only difference between the Law of Gravity and the other Laws' effects on man is that most of the rest of His Laws do not work in as rapid a manner as does the Law of Gravity. But... they do work every bit as thoroughly and as efficiently. Ignoring them will kill you, only the process will take a lot more time, and generally, involve much more pain.

Scripture tells us that Man is intended to live for about 120 years, possibly a little more. Evidence from around the world indicates that this is true. There are a number of areas of the world where the people live to an average age of 120 to 140 years, and some

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

well past this. There must be some reason for this difference between them, and us, who can expect to live at most to about 75 years of age. Generally, considerably less.

Generally speaking, there is a reason for this, and the lack of nutrition is only a part of the story. Although many parts of Scripture deal directly with the principals of feeding ourselves and not trusting others who deal with food strictly for profit (Remember; the LOVE of money is the root of all evil; think about this when you buy food), the real message concerning diet and health in the Bible is contained in the dietary Laws.

As an example, let's look at pork; you know, the other white meat. If I am not mistaken, I believe that 28 times in Scripture we are admonished not to eat the pig. We are commanded not to even touch his dead carcass. Why? Anything in Scripture which is repeated 28 times is something worth considering! So there must be some reason for this admonition, and, from what I have learned in Scripture, I seriously doubt that this Law, as is the same with all of God's Laws, is meant to be arbitrary and capricious.

A brief word about The Law. The One True God is Perfection which is His Nature. He does not change His Law, because He can not, by the very Nature of Himself. To change His Law would be to act in some interest, most likely His own, but no matter. To act in any interest is to be subject to that interest, and God can not be. He is the Sovereign of the Universe, so His Laws, which made the Universe and which make the Universe operate as it does, in Perfect Harmony, are unchangeable. His only release for us is mercy, which He has shown to us on numerous occasions, and which I pray for when I stand before His Implacable Presence at Judgment.

I say this because I have heard the nonsense about those Laws are nailed on the cross so many times that I have little patience with the comment any more. To make this comment is to say that God, on repealing His dietary Laws, changed the nature of Man and of the pig. God did not because God can not. The dietary Laws are simply His way of telling us how to live healthy lives, to use the food He has placed here for us, and to avoid what He has placed here for other purposes, so that we may live to the fullness of the time that He has allotted to us on this earth, that we may continue to learn and, at some point, become as close to Righteous Men as possible. Does this mean that we will lose salvation if we dis-obey the dietary Laws? Yes and no.

We will not be condemned by dis-obedience to the dietary Laws. At least, I don't believe so, because the Laws are for our own well being. And our salvation comes from another source; Christ. However, that being said, when you break the Law, and it leads to a very young and untimely death, how prepared are you going to be to meet your Creator? And if you are pushing the dietary filth onto God's People, and limiting their time on this earth through their ignorance and your culpability, are you affecting your standing before Him at Judgment? So there are some other aspects to this that are certainly worth considering. Particularly when it comes to feeding and teaching your own children.

And to consider His Laws, we must look at them through science. The dietary Laws are based on science. Strange concept, isn't it? God would use science, which He Created, for His Own Purposes? How so?

As I was saying, let's consider pork. The pig does not sweat. Therefore the waste

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

products that would normally be excreted through the pig's skin is instead recycled back into its meat. These waste products are called urea, as in urine, which is the other area where they are emptied from the body. This is where the odor and flavor of pork comes from. Doesn't pork smell great while it is cooking?

The pig has only one stomach. This is a very important area of knowledge and understanding for us. All animals mentioned in the dietary Laws as permissible for us to eat are chewers of the cud. This means that they have a number of stomachs, and they reprocess their food a number of times. It also means that they can not eat meat, but must eat only plant food which they can reprocess through their mouth. Because of this reprocessing of their food, these animals create a meat from a single enzyme, which is specifically created for the digestion used in our stomach and intestines.

The pig's meat is what is called a complex meat, and we are incapable of digesting it. Sorry if you don't like this information, but it is a fact. There are a number of books which describe cleansing of the colon. This becomes necessary because, as we age and ingest numerous chemicals and unclean foods, excess waste matter which our bodies are unable to rid itself of, fast enough, becomes impacted into our intestines. Pork is undoubtedly a large part of this impaction in our colons. This impaction of waste matter in our intestines affects our ability to absorb nutrients, and increases our bodies demand for more food, so we eat more and benefit less. Also, as the intestines swells from the waste matter, our bodies become first, fat in appearance (swollen around the waist), and second, incapable of properly cleansing itself because the paths into the intestine for riding the body of waste from the liver and other organs becomes blocked.

Then the body must store this waste in other areas. The most common area to store waste which the body can not throw off is in fat, which the body will create if there is no other way to store the deadly toxins it is trying to rid itself of. It is a very vicious cycle. (A point about fat: We are not the only ones who store toxins and other waste matter our bodies can not throw off in fat. Every animal which inhabits the earth has a body which works in the same manner. You might want to think about that the next time you cut a nice, dripping piece of fat to go with that tender piece of fat-marbled, grain fed beef. You also might take notice of the fact that prior to the 30s, most of the beef eaten in this country was grass fed. It was not until the 20s, and again in the 30s, when the Fed broke so many of the ranchers and farmers and the government got involved in subsidizing the production of food and millions of dollars was poured into grain subsidies that some use for the excess grain had to be found. Hence, the feed lot and the grain fed cattle. As you study, you are going to see a lot more to this story!)

This impaction of our intestines has another, much more visible aspect. Ever seen anyone with a very swollen abdomen? Hanging over their belt? I'm sure you have, because there are millions of such people walking around in the states. But don't forget, it's the other white meat.

But is this the whole story of pork? Sorry, this is just the beginning. Now, the information gets worse, much worse.

I mentioned the book titled *The Cure For All Diseases*, and that the book really does a good job of covering the parasites which infest us. I also mentioned that the book does not cover where these parasites, like liver flukes, come from. Well, the primary source

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

for these parasites is from the pork you feed to your children. And don't even think about cooking pork enough to kill everything that is in it. The studies have been done, and it is not possible. They have cooked pork at 400 degrees, burning it black all the way through, and, under a microscope, could still see parasites crawling in the meat. And under a microscope, you can see these parasites crawling in pork. We're not talking about theory here; this is established, scientific fact. Fact which can and has been duplicated many times.

The other important point here concerns viruses. Pork flesh contains over 900 different viruses. Cooking does not kill these either. Your children been sick lately, had runny noses, and no one knows where the illness comes from? Did you enjoy that wonderful pork roast, or the pork chops, you fed to them a week ago? Gonna have bacon and eggs in the morning for them? I'll tell you, some of the sorriest stories I ever see in the paper concerns children dying from lack of medical care because the parents believe that prayer is the answer to dis-ease. These same parents gladly feed their children hot dogs made from pork, shell fish, white bread, and pop, and then pray to God to overcome their dis-obedience to his scientific Laws. Makes no sense to me, Ill tell you that! But then, the letter to the editor that I mentioned in beginning this paper comes to my mind every time I think about the dis-eases children suffer. And the children shall suffer the sins of the father even unto the fourth generation. I wonder what that means?

Oh, and do you sweat? Ever suffer from the dreaded body odor problem? What is sweat? It has a double use by your body. One, it is a cooling device, and two, it is a cleansing agent as well. Your body works the same as the pigs body, but where the pig can not sweat and thus recycles the waste back into his meat, your body uses the sweat as another disposal system, flushing waste matter out through the sweat glands and the pores of the skin. This may be a normal process, or it may serve as an emergency system when your body is, as most American bodies are, overloaded with filth. Depending on the rancid state of the waste your body is trying to throw off, the odor your sweat gives off will vary from non-existent to highly offensive. The one thing I can assure you of, is that if you want a powerful odor, eat more pork. (The same is true of bad breath.)

Of course, to control the odor, and stop the cleansing action of the sweat, the multinational corporations will offer you all the deodorants you could possibly want. Is there a cost associated with using these, and similar products, besides what they cost in money? I made a little trip down to the store and examined about twelve different brands of deodorant. The first ingredient in nearly every one of them was a compound of aluminum. Now, everyone is pretty well aware that aluminum cook-ware is bad for your health, and is probably part of the reason for the upsurge in dementia and related mental dis-eases, like Alzheimer's, in America.

The aluminum in deodorants is every bit as bad, if not worse, and is designed to penetrate directly into the body for the purpose of stopping sweat. You didn't think it stayed on the surface, did you? And the deodorants which did not use aluminum used instead propylene glycol, which is anti-freeze, basically. Ever hear how a puddle of anti-freeze lying on the garage floor will kill a pet who licks it up because it is so sweet tasting? It will kill them because it is poison! Yet we use it under our arms to control the odor of what we eat. Interesting, isn't it, as God takes His vengeance.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

One of the largest pork eating people in the world are the Germans. You should go out of your way to talk to someone who has been in Germany. I have. I remember one woman in particular talking about being in a crowded elevator full of Germans. She almost gagged! You are what you eat. Another interesting discussion you may try is with anyone who works in a meat packing facility. They will tell you that pig meat is handled completely different from any other meat. It has to be, because it is already half rotten while the pig is still alive! And once the pig is slaughtered, the meat has to be processed quickly and in certain ways or it is spoiled. As if something this rotten to begin with could ever be called more spoiled!

Here's another interesting subject; How about blood? Why, in the Bible, are WE told to drain the carcass of an animal thoroughly before eating of the flesh? (I know! That's just that silly stuff the Jews do!) What is blood? Yes, blood is the life-giver of the body. It carries the oxygen without which we can not live, as well as all the nutrients which are needed by each cell of our bodies.

But blood is also much more than this, as it acts as the cleansing agent for the body as well. The joint purpose of blood is to nourish our body while it simultaneously carries every particle of waste the body generates to the kidneys or the liver. Every particle of waste. So blood may be a rich medium, but it certainly is not food. We are told to drain the carcass of every animal of blood so we can remove as much as possible of the carcasses' waste before we eat it. To make the carcass as clean as possible. Cleanliness is next to Godliness. The more filth you invite into your body, the less health you enjoy, and the more it affects every aspect of the workings of your body, not the least of which is how it affects your ability to think.

As a corollary to this, we are told not to eat of the innards of the animal. Such things as the liver, heart and kidneys. Why? Where does the body deposit all of the waste it carries out of the body? And we want to eat of this deposited filth? Why?

Shell fish are another forbidden food. Why? Because shell fish are what are called bi-valves. They process sea water through their bodies, using two valves, in order to eat, and, I may add, in order to clean the environment. That is their job! To clean up the environment. So they remove the filth from the water, and we pay extra to eat the filth that they have removed and which is still stored in their flesh while they wait to process it into their shells. I think a study of their shells would probably reveal where the toxins and other wastes they process out are stored, but I have not seen any such study done. I just know what their purpose is, and I want nothing to do with eating such unclean food.

I also wonder at our sense when we have all kinds of environmental damage, and we continue to remove from the environment the very animals created by God to clean it up! Of course, if you give this information to any good environmentalist, I am sure he will explain to you that he is concerned with the environment, not with some nonsense about God! And as we all know, health has nothing to do with God, and, anyway, His Law has been set aside.

As long as we are on this subject, let's discuss birds for just a moment. We are told that we may eat certain birds, but not others. Why?

Every bird that we are told we may eat has what is called a crop. For you city folk,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

that is a pouch under the bird's beak where they store all of the seeds and other plant matter that they collect. They will then swallow small rocks, which collect in the crop and grind the seeds and other matter into digestible bits. The point is, there is a definite difference in how they process their food in order to create a meat which is digestible by Man. So when someone tells you that the dietary Laws no longer apply, ask him when God changed the nature of Man and repealed the scientific basis of His Laws in order to do this.

The next time you discuss anything with your pastor, you might bring up a couple of these subjects. Just for the experience, in most cases, of seeing someone's eyes glaze over. In nearly every so-called church in America today, the so-called pastor/minister is licensed by the state and works for a 501 (c)3 corporation, which they call a church (for their own benefit). The state also has very specific rules limiting what the pastor may talk about, and I assure you, the material contained herein is not on the approved list! Failure to obey these rules will lead to the corporation losing its tax exempt status, and that would have a direct bearing on the pastor's income! No thanks. I'll pass on such a church.

ONE MORE POINT

Before we continue, perhaps we should discuss the quote at the beginning of this essay. Most people have a King James Bible, and if you did look up the said quote, you found that there were a number of major differences. The most important difference in the quote and the King James Bible version is in the use of the word shall. In the King James, it says: "These are the beasts which ye shall eat:" In the Bible I use, which is the James Moffatt Translation of the Holy Bible, it says: Here are the animals you may eat:

There is a world of difference between the use of the words shall and may. One, shall, can be construed to be a command. The other is permission. Perhaps the forgiving nature of a Loving God, who, knowing the nature of Man, let us have our way, even knowing the damage such conduct would do to us by eating meat. As I grow older, and, I hope, wiser, my intake of meat shrinks. I eat no unclean food, but I eat very little meat now (some fish, chicken, and turkey), and I am coming closer to understanding a vegetarian diet. I think back to the information about the rats...

I don't think, given the short term of our sojourn on this earth, even if we live to the full term of 120 to 140 years, that some meat will damage most people. But some people, who have no tolerance, and still insist on eating such food, will suffer harm from it. And I am becoming more sure as I research, that if we spent the early part of our lives, as I did, eating unclean foods such as shell fish and pork, that our bodies have less margin for error if we truly desire to extend our time on this earth.

This is a decision that each of us must make. I am making mine, and it is difficult, but I see my future, and I am quite sure that not very far into that future I will forego all meat. But that will be my decision, because I understand that we were given permission to eat certain meats designed by God for our digestion systems. As for the unclean foods, none of us have a choice. Oh, you may eat them, but you will suffer the dis-ease of your body if you do. Science, and not I, say so. And vengeance is mine, sayeth the Lord. But this does not mean that He reaches down and destroys the unbeliever. It simply means that His Law is absolute, and the way His Law works exacts vengeance without any action by God other than the original establishment of His Law. And the same is true concerning all

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

the different aspects of how His Law works, not just as far as diet is concerned. (Boy, how much I could write on this!)

This is the operative part of His Law. The active part. Praying to Him for relief while ignoring His Law is self-defeating. Just as praying to Him for relief from His Law makes no sense. He can not change His Law! He can grant Mercy, but it is not the same thing, and does it make any sense to ask for Mercy while flaunting His Law?

And does this mean that prayer does not work? No, this does not mean that. What this does mean is that, as our understanding of the chemical composition of our bodies increases, we are probably going to find that somewhere there is a key that we unlock by prayer. A chemical key. Possibly one which enhances our immune system, or which works in some way that we, at this present time, have no way of understanding, and quite possibly, no way of even recognizing. But I can assure you that it operates on faith, because it takes faith to ask Him for mercy! You can call it what you will. I think it is probably a direct connection to Him, which He, in His Wisdom, established in the beginning. But, depending upon this while ignoring the science behind His Law is not only nonsense, it is dangerous.

It took me a long time to understand this. What we see happening to America is occurring because of US! Not the U.S.; US! Because we put other gods in front of the One True God. Because we let the so-called ministers tell us that His Law was set aside, and no longer counted, and we believed! We had faith in THEM! Not in God, and in His Loving Nature. We actually thought we could ignore the Law and do as we please, with no understanding that the only purpose of the Law is to protect our nation and us! From ourselves!!! And, and... This is important, so listen up; And to protect us from the godless! Without His Protection we have no chance! We are too few! Just as without His Mercy and the Salvation offered by Christ we will never enter into His Kingdom.

And if I can show that one aspect of His Law is valid under scientific understanding, doesn't that show that the rest of His Law must be valid as well? Or, at the very least, that it must be given careful study and consideration? Go back and read Parts VI and VII if you doubt this.

I want to share with you something one of the first readers of these papers wrote to me. I think it is important: "...reading your papers has changed me. They have changed the way I look at the world around me."

"I was thinking about Part three and the things you said about "truth," and I was thinking about the Scripture that we all know that says, "and you shall know the truth and it will set you free." I have realized that in everything, it isn't enough to just hear the truth, or to know that something is the truth—you must embrace the truth and allow it to change you—just as knowing that Jesus died to free us from the bondage of sin will not set any person free. It is only when we embrace that truth and allow ourselves to be changed by that truth that we are set free from the bondage of sin."

That is what the Truth does. It changes you. Why? Because all Truth comes from Him, The One True God. There is no other source for The Truth.

To be frank, I had thought to make this a much longer, much more detailed paper, but that would defeat the purpose of the paper. This is supposed to be a gateway, for

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

you. To be a gateway, it must act as an entrance, and not as an answer in and of itself. As I said earlier, this should be a book! But it can not be a book and serve the purpose for which it was written. The gateway is to show you Who is The Truth, and let you find your own way to Him, and to health, to happiness, and to wealth.

Only you can do it. I can not do it for you, and the only help you have along the way is Him. All I can do is crack the gate to the pathway open, just a little.

That being said, there are a couple of things I need to address before signing off.

First, you must understand the Truth, and the purpose thereof. Truth will change you. I have said this before, but not in the sense of the power of Truth. You see, you will understand the Truth because it changes you. Not because it has the ability to change you, but because it does change you. You have no choice in the matter. It will happen. That is why, at the very beginning, I warned you that reading these papers would change you. It does not matter if you, at this moment, accept the Truth of this or the preceding papers as Truth, because now you know facts which you had not dreamed of before, and you will change. Right now you may even think no way! But it will happen, I guarantee to you. You have no choice, just as I had no choice once I started to learn. You are on the pathway. The only thing that can stop you now is you; by deliberately turning your back on Him.

And I also warn you; from this point on, you will see that you are leaving most everyone else. They are on a different path, and that path diverges sharply from your own. You will be different, and no longer a part of the world of man. You will look at things differently. You will understand things in a different light, and you will make decisions which make no sense to many of your friends and family. I know. I have been there and done this. But as I said at the beginning, I am happy, are you? And if not, why not? Most of my family is not happy, and they are not content, and the same is true of my friends. But I am.

This is the power of Truth, and unless what you are hearing is changing you in some manner, then you are not hearing Truth. Going back to Part III, this is why lies are told so often and so forcefully, because they have no power and can only work as programming. They can not change you, but they can indoctrinate you, and it is this principle which makes TV so very damaging for children. And you, I might add. At one point in time, when I was a very successful contractor, I owned seven TVs. Amazing, when I look back at it.

The second is the nature of churches in the world today. But before I get into this part, I want you to think about what I wrote above. Is your church changing you? Now, let's be honest, shall we? Are you perfect? If not, then does it not stand to reason that you must change in order to become closer to Him Who is Perfection? And if your church is not changing you, is there any Truth being revealed to you there? Or is it a social function, and good for business to attend church? Do you like the tax deduction given by the government to the church as an incorporated agent of the government?

And does this have anything to do with you and with salvation? Or with health, and happiness? Perhaps. Let me tell you a tale, actually, two tales, the first a tale of a celebration that has been going on every year all across this earth for over 6000 years. A celebration of a birth.

The man whose birth is still being celebrated today was named Nimrod. You can

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

read about him in the Bible. When you do, look closely at the Tower of Babel. He was the first in a long line of men who wanted to rule the earth. Today, his mental brothers call it the New World Order. Sorry, Order. Nimrod was also the man who brought to the earth such practices as cannibalism and the sacrifice of children. All in all, not a very nice man.

His birthday was celebrated throughout the centuries as the High Feast of Babylon, or the High Mass of Babylon. But people became tired of the sacrifice of their children, and other perversions practiced in the various names of Nimrod, and they began to rebel, so the names were changed, many times, to Baal, to Mardoc, and to others so that those devoted to him could worship him in secret, while convincing the people that something entirely different was going on. He had been elevated to the status of a god, a god known as X in the secret communication of his adherents down through the years.

Over time, the celebration of his birth came to be known as the High Mass of X. Finally, this was shortened to Xmas. Always, his adherents followed the same rituals in their celebration of his birth. His mother (he married his mother and fathered his wife on her), after his death, claimed that a pine tree had sprang full grown from a rock, and that X had appeared to her and commanded her and all others to bring gifts for him and to leave them under the tree. He would come in the night, the night before his birth, and examine the gifts. Those that he found particularly pleasing he would take, and all others they would be free to distribute among themselves.

X was celebrated as the Sun god, and much was made of the day each week upon which he was worshipped. In fact, the day was named after him; the day of the Sun, or Sun day; Sunday.

Around the year 200 AD, in Rome, a religion struggling against Christianity, to control Christianity for its own ends, adapted this celebration of X as the day to be celebrated in the name of Christ. That day is December 25. Christmas, or the Mass of Christ. Christmas; Christmas. That same religion also decreed that all worship of Christ in their churches would henceforth take place on the day of the Sun. Such blasphemy! And today, in the writings of the hierarchy of that church, we find the claim that all churches which follow their command to worship on the day of the Sun are subjects of that church.

We were never told of the day of Christ's birth for a very good reason. Birth is not the beginning of life. And to celebrate birth as the beginning is to acknowledge that the killing of a fetus is nothing special. This is particularly true when it comes to children, who have been indoctrinated from the year 1 by their mothers about birthdays. How do you convince such a child that birth does not begin life, when he/she celebrates that very thing every year of his/her life? How do you argue the facts about abortion with someone indoctrinated from birth with this kind of belief? If Christ wanted us to celebrate his birth, there would have been a very clear statement made in Scripture as to this. There isn't, and I hope you begin to understand why not.

On Xmas (the correct spelling), the same thing applies today that has for over 6000 years. We, the adherents of Baal, put out the presents under the pine tree, he comes to inspect them, in the fairy tale guise of Santa Claus (in his red suit; if you do not understand the use of red in history, begin your study with the redcoats and the reds of communist fame), and the gifts that he leaves behind are then distributed in the Xmas morn-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ing celebration. As an aside to this, perhaps you should read Jeremiah, Chapter 10, where we are admonished not to go into the forest as the heathen do, not to cut a tree and bring it into the house, and not to set it up as a god, bedecking it with gold and silver. And we wonder why we have so many problems, and why God has turned His back on us? And, just as a little extra something to think about; I know of no children who come into this world loving Xmas. I do know of thousands, nay, of millions of children indoctrinated by their parents into the pagan rituals of Xmas. But I know of no one in which this system of rituals is natural.

The second story involves the capital. You know, Washington, DC, Paris, Helena, Montana, Berlin, etc. But where did the term come from? The use of the word capital started, in modern times, at least, with the name of Jupiter's Temple on the highest hill of the seven hills of Rome in the days of the Roman Empire. This was the center of the Empire, from which all power flowed, and through which the Emperor ruled by Divine Right as an agent and brother of Jupiter. The Emperor was a god in his own right, and ruled from the capital. Today, the seat of all man's government is known as the capital. Coincidence? Or something more? Judge for yourself.

There are, today, two sovereign entities on the face of the earth. One is the City; the London financial district known as the Crown of England. The other is the Vatican, which claims sovereignty over the earth because of a bequest from the last Holy Roman Emperor who supposedly gave ownership of the earth into the church's care. Whether this is a spurious claim, as many writers convincingly argue, is a moot point, considering the power and force of the Roman church. It claims a world wide membership of about 950,000,000, and I see no reason to doubt this. It is simply the best organized and richest government on the face of the earth. Did I say government? Of course I did. They claim to rule and own the earth, so what would you call them? And all of the royalty of Europe paid/pay allegiance to the Roman church and receive, in return, their divine right to rule legitimacy. And, in return, they occupy the capitals of their respective nations, receiving, still, from the capital in Rome, the authority to do so (there are plenty of books on these and related subjects if you wish to pursue them).

But how about capitalism? What is that, then? Isn't it the same thing? What is capital for a business? The credit the business runs on? Where does the capital for the United States originate? Isn't it from the credit of the United States, issued through the Federal Reserve as credit of the King, and collected by all those businesses as capital? Then define capitalism for me, and go back and read Part VI and PART VII again. Then, after you have done this, please explain all the benefits of capitalism to me again, because I just don't get it, I guess.

I read all of the posts and other information about asset forfeiture and taxes and wonder at our gullibility. Then men I know go into court and argue Rights and the judge snarls at them about don't bring those arguments in here and they think he is off his rocker! Who, exactly, is crazy? Them, or us? In capitalism, things have standing, as things are what these people worship! Why shouldn't the government bring charges against \$3,789.56 or against a house? Their god is blessing them! They get the things and we wonder what is going on!?! You are known by whose law you study and keep, and when you participate in their system, you wonder that you are subject to their god?! Or their

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

rules!? And we cry out for justice with no understanding of what we ask for.

In the Roman Empire, under the Capital of Jupiter, there were three minor gods. Two of these were justice which stood for judgment under man's law according to the King's privilege and the other was liberty which simply meant a release from the strictures of Gods Laws for the rule of man. You can find both of these prominently in the preamble to the Constitution, but you will not find them in the Declaration of Independence (So do not think that god is not mentioned in the Constitution. You simply have to understand the terms!). This information is just in case you don't think that there was a difference in the intent behind both documents. Or in case you still think that the writers of the Constitution did not know what they were doing. (And yes, liberty is mentioned in the Declaration of Independence, but if you read all of the Declaration of Independence, you will see that it is talking of Liberty from the King's [man's] law, and the justice named is the Kings justice. I think they understood, much better than we.)

The third minor god in Rome was licencia from which comes license under man's law. A license is simply permission from the king to do something which would otherwise be illegal.

At this point, it should be quite clear to the reader that our nation's leadership changed radically between the Declaration of Independence and the ratification of the Constitution for the United States. The Declaration of Independence removed the curse placed upon mankind in First Samuel 8:18. Further evidence that this was the publicly accepted intent and purpose of the Declaration of Independence is this 1778 quote from James Madison:

We have staked the whole future of American civilization, not upon the power of government, far from it. We have staked the future... upon the capacity of each and all of us to govern ourselves, to sustain, according to the ten commandments of God.

How much we have forgotten. We have forgotten His Law, and opted instead for the curse of man's law, and we wonder why we are unhappy and persecuted. We have individually re-created our own slavery by entering into contracts with a government founded upon man's law. We may individually remove the slavery (curse) by reverting to the natural condition of one in America. Because there is only one True Law, and One True Law Giver, The One True God. Because of this, the government is compelled by its own statutes into accepting our expatriation into our natural state and condition of freedom under His Law.

Extensive changes in our lifestyles may be required in order to accomplish this. Trust me, I know about this! And they are worth the effort. Really, you have no choice, for there are changes coming to America that anyone can see, and your lifestyle WILL change. More than you can possibly believe, particularly if you presently live in a city.

UNCONDITIONAL HAPPINESS

Happiness is not the result of favorable conditions. That's backwards. Favorable conditions result from happiness. So what does it take to be happy? Nothing more than a willingness to be happy.

Happiness comes from the way you respond to life. There are people who have every reason to be miserable, but who still live with happiness and joy. In every life, there

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

is room for happiness.

Everyone has challenges. Everyone has disappointments. Yet they do not have to get you down. True happiness comes not from the absence of problems. True, enduring happiness comes in spite of the problems.

Happiness is not a reaction, it is a choice. Let it be yours. — Ralph Marston

There is one more book I am going to plug here. The title is Eat Right For Your Health by Dr. Peter J. D'Adamo, ISBN 0-399-14255-X. And I'll tell you right up front not to bother reading the first chapter. He presents information about blood types developing 60,000 years ago that no one can possibly have any idea or knowledge of, and he presents his opinions on this as fact. And I realize how this puts the rest of his work in a bad light to begin with. That being said, the book makes more sense than most anything else I have read on the subject of health and the individual's diet. With this warning; the man has no knowledge or understanding of the Biblical principals of diet, so he approves of eating snails, shellfish and other foods I won't touch.

But... He is also the only one I have seen that makes the definite statement that pork is not good for anyone. And he says the same thing about all pop. So he is on the right track; he just needs to learn a little more! He also hits the nail right on the head: We have to quit accepting toxins and other poisons in bright colored packages sold to us as food!

Other books of interest:

The Medical Mafia, ISBN 0-9644126-0-8, by Guylaine Lanctot, M.D. I doubt you will ever look at your doctor with the same eyes again.

Fluoride: The Aging Factor ISBN 0-913571.03-2, by Dr. John Yiamouylannis. Absolutely essential reading, before you buy another tube of tooth paste for your children, or for yourself. And to understand the real depth of corruption in the united States.

Oxygen Therapies ISBN 0-9620527-0-1, by Ed McCabe. Actually, any of the books by Ed McCabe on oxygen. After you read one of his books, you will understand why Ed is now in the federal prison system. He has not been convicted of anything, but is being given, and has been for some time, diesel therapy (being moved around in the system) to break him spiritually and financially. Ed is the prefect example of someone who thinks you can be in and use the system, keep your SSN, do your banking, and, because you are right, fight the good fight to correct the wrongs. Incredible information in his books. There will be no more of them, and the ones available will probably be the last ever printed. Be warned.

DMSO Nature's Healer ISBN 0-89529-548-2, by Dr. Morton Walker. Pretty interesting.

Natural Remedies for a Healthy Heart ISBN 0-89529-808-2, by David Heber, M.D. Again, pretty interesting, but, as usual, the information has to be filtered. He does show you do not have to be tied to drugs.

Prescription for Nutritional Healing ISBN 0-89529-727-2, by James F. Balch M.D. and Phyllis A. Balch. I use this as a reference for quick knowledge of natural products for specific problems. A wealth of information.

There are a lot more, but you can find as many as you want on your own. The thing is, you must start.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Thank you for being with me through all ten parts. Now that you have reached here, I want you to know how different you are. Very few have the drive and the determination to do as you have done. Read all ten parts. In a way, this is part of the reason that there are ten parts; the information in Part X is not for the average man or woman. They can not utilize it, and because of their natures, they must find a different path.

This is the real reason why Parts I & II are the first two parts. No one in America can read them and go about their lives without looking around them in a different way. They may not even realize what is going on inside themselves, but the time will come when they must make decisions and the part of the information they did look at will make a difference in their decision. And most probably they will not understand why they made the decision they did, but that does not matter. What matters is that they have a better understanding as a basis for their future, the future of their children, and the future of America.

Now for the warning. Is everything you have read in these essays absolutely correct? Of course not. First, I am a man, and far from perfect. The only place to find perfection is God; it's what makes Him God. Second, every time I think I have something completely figured out, new information comes to light and it turns out that my vision was out of focus. Third, I can only give you my version. I am not a part of the so-called elite and have no knowledge of their motives or actions behind the scenes. I can only speculate and draw conclusions from the evidence existing in the public record. So there are many things, and many people, involved that I have no knowledge of, and of whom I wish no knowledge. I have chosen my life, just as they have chosen theirs. Fourth, my reality is different from yours. I know that sounds like a silly statement, but it is what makes us man instead of God. And this is why the decisions I make for my life are not proper for your life. We must each find our own path, and follow it the best we can.

This is very important to understand. We are responsible! Not some preacher, or politician. WE are! When you come into this life, your mother is there to help you, to cuddle you, to feed you, and to protect you. That's her job. But if you want to understand what comes after, simply look at the end of life; you go that road alone, just as you will face judgment alone. The men who misled you will answer for their sins, but you will stand alone before Him. All I can do is point you in the right direction, encourage you, and help in any way I can.. That is all any man can do.

This is why depending on any man will get you in trouble. Man acts for his own interest. Not yours. What is important to your minister is his pay check and his license from the state. The same is true of your doctor. The root of all evil is the love of money. Really rather simple, when you come right down to it. The jack booted thug working for the state is not different; he just expects a lot less than the doctor does! I no longer worry about them; vengeance is mine sayeth the Lord. When you fully grasp the significance of what I have written, you will understand what that means. I do not have to punish them; their punishment is ongoing, now! They can not read these papers! They are blind, and they are deaf! They are no concern of mine, and Satan destroys his own first. Why? Because it is the easiest thing to do! Shortly, in America, you will see men destroying each other. One side fighting for the Constitution, and the other side fighting to save the Constitution! Have pity for them, for vengeance is come...

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

I have a favor to ask of you. Now that you have finished, please sit down, and with your new understanding and insight, read the Declaration of Independence again. Then, tell me what you think... now.

And, lest we forget, remember; you now have knowledge. With knowledge comes obligation.

Now, for the next part... As I said above, I have an ongoing obligation to each of you who wish to continue. How much more I will prepare I have no way of knowing. Just as I had no way of knowing, when I started, that there would be ten parts to this work. Nor did I know what those parts would consist of. Some of these papers were written years ago, and I have refined them over the years, correcting and expanding, using the feed back from those good enough to tell me how they were affected. This work is what it is because of you, and it became what it is because of the ongoing questions and reactions, and, I hope, guidance from Him.

And that being said, please, I ask you, do not copy Part X and run out and give away a bunch of copies of it. You can damage people as well as help them by doing so. Yes, a few may be ready. But look back at what you went through in getting to this point. People have been programmed. There must be a certain amount of de-programming or exposure to this information can blind them worse than before. I know. I have seen it.

The information to follow will be somewhat different, and will probably concentrate on aspects of sovereignty. That means law. Before you continue, I want you to wait at least one week and think about what all you have learned.

From the December issue of ACRES USA:

PIGS AND THE EVOLUTION OF THE VIRUS WHY DO YOU THINK THEY CALL IT "SWINE FLU?"

It has been long suspected by scientists that pigs play a role in aiding influenza viruses to evolve into new forms, enabling them to re-infect people who have developed resistance to them.

The Journal of Virology recently presented new evidence supporting this theory. An international team of researchers report finding that the lining of pig throats contains receptors for both human and avian influenza viruses, providing an environment in which viruses that attack birds, and those that prey on humans, can mix and reformulate themselves.

"The evidence we present supports the role of pigs as a source of potentially hazardous influenza A viruses, arising through classical genetic re-assortment or a novel adaptation to human virus receptors or perhaps through both mechanisms," the researchers report. "Thus the continued intensive monitoring of swine populations for avian-like influenza viruses should be an integral part of global health planning."

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

OTHER STUFF THAT HAPPENED WHILE YOU WERE BUSY WATCHING HOLLYWOOD'S COMMUNIST PROPAGANDA

In this Chapter, we are explaining another popular conspiracy theory named "Project Blue Beam", an alleged ongoing experiment which is being conducted by NASA to establish the new world order on the planet.

This theory was initially put forward by Serge Monast in 1994, where he claimed that NASA is attempting to implement a new age global religion in the world with the Antichrist as its head, using a technologically simulated second coming of Christ.

Now, let us learn more about this popular conspiracy theory put forward by Serge Monast alleging NASA and United Nations as the puppets in the hands of a New World Order.

WHAT IS PROJECT BLUE BEAM?

The basic purpose of "Project Blue Beam" is to establish a new age religion in the world. According to conspiracy theorists, without the Universal belief in a new age religion, the success of new world order will be impossible. According to Monast, NASA, the United States space agency, and the United Nations have worked hand-in-glove to propagate the new age religion.

Conspiracy theorists divide this project into four steps. In the first step, the Government will fake earthquakes at precise locations all around the planet. The widespread occurrence of natural disasters will sow fears in the minds of the general public and pave the way for step two of the project.

Step two of this project marks the real beginning of Project Blue Beam. This step involves a gigantic space show where three-dimensional laser projections will be used to project holograms in the skies all around the globe. As per theorists, the projections will be made in the shape of particular deities which are dominant in particular regions. At the end of this gigantic cosmic show, all the projected gods will all merge into one sole entity, "The Antichrist".

Conspiracy theorists claim that UFO sightings above the skies are actually part of Project Blue Beam. As per these theorists, the sightings of UFO in the skies are actually tests conducted by elite forces in the world to check the efficiency of Project Blue Beam. Around a year back, the Internet was taken to storm as images of an advanced city appeared in Chinese skies. Proponents of Project Blue Beam strongly believe that this is a part of this secret experiment aimed to create a new world order.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Step three is the most complicated phase of the "Blue Beam Project". In this phase, using Telepathic Electronic Two-Way Communication, authorities will make people think that God is talking to them directly. As per conspiracy theorists, extremely low-frequency waves will be used to manipulate the thoughts of the general public. However, the feasibility of the successful completion of this phase still remains a dilemma.

In step four, people will begin thinking that alien invasion will happen in all the major cities of the globe. Soon Christians will begin thinking that rapture is going to happen soon, and at this juncture, their only way of escape is accepting the new world order.

Unsolved mysteries continue

Exclusive details about Project Blue Beam are very limited, as Serge Monast, the person who put forward this theory died within two years after introducing this concept. In 1995 and 1996, Monast was hunted down by legal authorities as he leaked messages which come under the network of prohibited information.

Monast claimed that he is being targeted by police working undercover, and due to fear, he homeschooled his children. Several stories also popped up during this time stating that Monast's daughter was kidnapped by the Canadian Government to dissuade him from investigating Project Blue Beam.

An unnamed journalist, too, helped Monast to proclaim the theories associated with Project Blue Beam, but unfortunately, both of them died of heart attacks in 1996.

Believers of Project Blue Beam claim that Monast and the journalist were killed by the vicious hands of new world order with the help of psychotronic weapons. Supporters of Monast also added that the conspiracy theorist was very healthy. He was in his middle ages during his death which added up to the mystery quotient.

THE RAPTURE

SATELLITES WILL PROJECT AN IMAGE OF 'GOD'

COMPUTER HOLOGRAPHS WILL MAKE THE HEAVENS EXPLODE WITH LIES!

BLUE BEAM PROJECT

It involves two things. A technologically simulated "second coming" and the reemergence of new "MONTAUK" type projects that have the ability to take up a whole bunch of people as in a "rapture" type of situation and whisk the whole bunch into never-never land. Ironically, portions of the holographic projections have the potential for changing the planet into oneness with God. Unfortunately, this operates on the premise that Man shall somehow become God in human form and control other Men and dictate all actions and thoughts.

The calculated resistance to the new religion, the New World Order and the new "Messiah" will entail human loss on a massive scale in the ensuing "holy wars".

The "BLUE BEAM PROJECT" will pretend to be the universal fulfillment of the prophecies of old; as major an event as that which took place 2000 years ago. In principle, it will make use of the sky as a holographic projection screen for space-based laser-generating satellites (star wars). These projectors will project simultaneous images to the four comers of the planet, in every language by region. It deals with the religious aspect of the New World Order.

The "system" has already been tested. Holographic projections of the "Christ Image"

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

have already been seen in some remote desert areas. These have only been reported in tabloid papers, so they are instantly rendered moot. They can also project images of alien craft, aliens, monsters, angels - you name it. Computers will coordinate the satellites and software will run the show-and-tell.

Holography is based on very nearly identical signals combining to produce an image, or hologram, with depth perception. This is equally applicable to acoustic (ELF, VLF, LF) waves as it is to optical phenomena. Specifically, the "show" will consist of laser projections of multiple holographic images to different parts of the planet, each receiving different images according to the predominating regional religious faith. Not a single area will be excluded. With computer animation and sound effects appearing to come from the depths of space, astonished followers of the various creeds will witness their own returned Messiah in spectacularly convincing lifelike realness.

The various images of Christ, Mohammed, Buddha, Krishna, etc., will merge into ONE after "correct explanation" of the mysteries, prophecies and revelations are disclosed. This "One God" will, in fact, function as the "Anti-Christ", who will "explain" that the various scriptures "have been misunderstood"- that the religions of old are responsible for turning brother against brother, nation against nation - that the religions of the world must be abolished to make way for the Golden Age (New Age) of the One World Religion, representing the One God they see before them. Naturally, this superbly staged, full-scale production will result in social and religious disorder on a massive scale. Wonder what the television transmitters of religious networks will be doing on that day? But before all this, they have to go through four different steps in order to get to Project Blue Beam.

1: The first step concerns the breakdown of all archeological knowledge. It deals with staging earthquakes at certain precise locations around the planet where supposed new "discoveries" will finally explain (for them) that the meanings of the basic doctrines of all the world's major religions are "wrong." This falsification will be used to make the population believe that all religious doctrine has been misunderstood and misinterpreted. The falsification started with the film 2001: A Space Odyssey, the TV-series STAR TREK, the STAR WARS films, E.T., all of which deal with space "invasion" and "protection". JURASSIC PARK, was to push the theory of evolution.

2: The second step deals with the gigantic space show: 3D optical holograms and sounds, laser projections of multiple holographic images in different parts of the world, each receiving a different image, according to its predetermined original national religious faith. This new "god" image will talk in all languages. As an example, the Soviets have manufactured advanced computers and have programmed them with the minute psychological particles based upon their studies of the anatomy and biology of the human body, as well as their studies on the anatomy, chemistry and electricity of the human brain. These computers have also been fed with the different languages of the world.

3: The third step deals with telepathic electronic two-way communication, where ELF (Extra Low Frequency), VLF (Very Low Frequency), and LF (Low Frequency) waves will reach the people of the earth through the insides of their brains, making each person believe that his own God is speaking to him from within his own soul. Such rays, from satellites, are fed from the memory of computers that store much data about the human

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

being and his languages. These rays will then interlace and interweave with the natural thinking processes to form what we call the Artificial Talk.

4: The fourth step involves universal supernatural manifestations using electronic means. This step contains three different orientations: The first one is to make mankind believe that an alien invasion is about to occur upon every major city on the earth. This is to push each major nation into using its nuclear capability to strike back. In this manner, it would put each of these nations in a state of full disarmament before the United Nations after the false attack. The second is to make the "Christian" believe that a major rapture is occurring, with a simple "played" divine intervention of an alleged "good" alien force coming to save the good people from a brutal satanic attack. Its goal is to get rid of all significant opposition to the New World Order.

The third orientation is a mixture of electronic and supernatural forces. The waves (frequencies) used at that time will allow supernatural forces to travel through fiber optics cable, coaxial cable, electric and telephone lines in order to penetrate all electronic equipment and appliances that will by then all have a special microchip installed. The goal of this step deals with the materialization of satanic ghosts, specters, and poltergeists all across the globe in order to push all populations to the edge of a wave of suicide, killing and permanent psychological disorder.

After that night of the thousand stars, humanity is believed to be ready for them to enter in a new "messiah" to reestablish peace everywhere at any cost, even at the cost of freedom.

THAT AIN" T ME!

WHEN SEEING AND HEARING ISN" T BELIEVING!

'Gentlemen! We have called you together to inform you that we are going to overthrow the United States government.' So begins a statement being delivered by Gen. Carl W. Steiner, former Commander-in-chief, U.S. Special Operations Command.

At least the voice sounds amazingly like him.

But it is not Steiner. It is the result of voice 'morphing' technology developed at the Los Alamos National Laboratory in New Mexico.

By taking just a 10-minute digital recording of Steiner's voice, scientist George Papcun is able, in near real time, to clone speech patterns and develop an accurate facsimile. Steiner was so impressed, he asked for a copy of the tape. Steiner was hardly the first or last victim to be spoofed by Papcun's team members. To refine their method, they took various high quality recordings of generals and experimented with creating fake statements. One of the most memorable is Colin Powell stating 'I am being treated well by my captors.'

'They chose to have him say something he would never otherwise have said,' chuckled one of Papcun's colleagues.

A Box of Chocolates is Like War

Most Americans were introduced to the tricks of the digital age in the movie Forrest Gump, when the character played by Tom Hanks appeared to shake hands with President Kennedy.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

TX1400L PASSIVE TRANSPONDER

No larger than a grain of rice, the injectable transponder is a passive radio-frequency identification tag. Every human slave of the New World Order will have one of these, or similar, injected at birth. The NWO agencies will know who you are, what you eat, where you go and how many times a month you have sex so you can be tracked, taxed and fined.

For Hollywood, it is special effects. For covert operators in the U.S. military and intelligence agencies, it is a weapon of the future.

'Once you can take any kind of information and reduce it into ones and zeros, you can do some pretty interesting things,' says Daniel T. Kuehl, chairman of the Information Operations department of the National Defense University in Washington, the military's school for information warfare.

PSYOPS SEEKS TO EXPLOIT HUMAN VULNERABILITIES IN ENEMY GOVERNMENTS, MILITARIES AND POPULATIONS

Digital morphing, voice, video, and photo has come of age, available for use in psychological operations. PSYOPS, as the military calls it, seek to exploit human vulnerabilities in enemy governments, militaries and populations to pursue national and battlefield objectives.

To some, PSYOPS is a backwater military discipline of leaflet dropping and radio propaganda. To a growing group of information war technologists, it is the nexus of fantasy and reality. Being able to manufacture convincing audio or video, they say, might be the difference in a successful military operation or coup.

ALLAH ON THE HOLODECK

Pentagon planners began discussing digital morphing after Iraq's invasion of Kuwait in 1990. Covert operators kicked around the idea of creating a computer-faked videotape of Saddam Hussein crying or showing other such manly weaknesses, or in some sexually compromising situation. The nascent plan was for the tapes to be flooded into Iraq and the Arab world.

The tape war never proceeded, killed, participants say, by bureaucratic fights over jurisdiction, skepticism over the technology, and concerns raised by Arab coalition partners.

WHAT IF THE U. S. PROJECTED A HOLOGRAPH IMAGE OF ALLAH FLOATING OVER BAGHDAD?

But the 'strategic' PSYOPS scheming didn't die. What if the U.S. projected a holographic image of Allah floating over Baghdad urging the Iraqi people and Army to rise up against Saddam? a senior Air Force officer asked in 1990. According to a military physicist given the task of looking into the hologram idea, the feasibility had been established of projecting large, three-dimensional objects that appeared to float in the air.

But doing so over the skies of Iraq? To project such a hologram over Baghdad on the order of several hundred feet, they calculated, would take a mirror more than a mile square in space, as well as huge projectors and power sources. And besides, investigators came back, what does Allah look like?

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

The Gulf War hologram story might be dismissed were it not the case that washingtonpost.com has learned that a super secret program was established in 1994 to pursue the very technology for PSYOPS application. The 'Holographic Projector' is described in a classified Air Force document as a system to 'project information power from space ... for special operations deception missions.'

Voice-morphing? Fake video? Holographic projection?

They sound more like Mission Impossible and Star Trek gimmicks than weapons. Yet for each, there are corresponding and growing research efforts as the technologies improve and offensive information warfare expands.

Whereas early voice morphing required cutting and pasting speech to put letters or words together to make a composite, Papcun's software developed at Los Alamos can far more accurately replicate the way one actually speaks. Eliminated are the robotic intonations.

The irony is that after Papcun finished his speech cloning research, there were no takers in the military. Luckily for him, Hollywood is interested: The promise of creating a virtual Clark Gable is mightier than the sword.

Video and photo manipulation has already raised profound questions of authenticity for the journalistic world. With audio joining the mix, it is not only journalists but also privacy advocates and the conspiracy-minded who will no doubt ponder the worrisome mischief that lurks in the not too distant future.

'We already know that seeing isn't necessarily believing,' says Dan Kuehl, 'now I guess hearing isn't either.' William M. Arkin, author of 'The U.S. Military Online,' is a leading expert on national security and the Internet. He lectures and writes on nuclear weapons, military matters and information warfare. An Army intelligence analyst from 1974-1978, Arkin currently consults for Washingtonpost, Newsweek Interactive, MSNBC and the Natural Resources Defense Council.

Request for Proposal MT 349 Fall 2002 July/August 2000

LYING WITH PIXELS

Seeing is no longer believing. The image you see on the evening news could well be a fakeâ a fabrication of fast new video manipulation technology.

A few years ago, Steven Livingston, professor of political communication at George Washington University, astonished attendees at a conference on the geopolitical pros and cons of satellite imagery. He didn't produce evidence of new military mobilizations or global pandemics. Instead, he showed a video of figure skater Katarina Witt during a 1998 skating competition.

In the clip, Witt gracefully plies the ice for about 20 seconds. Then came what is perhaps one of the most unusual sports replays ever seen. The background was the same, the camera movements were the same. In fact, the image was identical to the original in all ways except for a rather important one: Witt had disappeared, along with all signs of her, such as shadows or plumes of ice flying from her skates. In their place was exactly what you would expect if Witt had never been there to begin with - the ice, the walls of the rink and the crowd.

So what's the big deal, you ask. After all, Stalin's staff routinely airbrushed persona

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

non grata out of photos more than a half-century ago. And Woody Allen ushered a variation on reality morphing into the movies 17 years ago with *Zelig*, in which he inserted himself next to Adolf Hitler and Babe Ruth. In films such as *Forrest Gump* and *Wag the Dog*, reality twisting has become commonplace.

What sets the Witt demo apart - way apart - is that the technology used to "virtually delete" the skater can now be applied in real time, live, even as a camera records a scene and instantly broadcasts it to viewers. In the fraction of a second between video frames, any person or object moving in the foreground can be edited out, and objects that aren't there can be edited in and made to look real. "Pixel plasticity," Livingston calls it. The implication for those at the satellite imagery conference was sobering: Pictures from orbit may not necessarily be what the satellite's electronic camera actually recorded.

But the ramifications of this new technology reach beyond satellite imagery. As live electronic manipulation becomes practical, the credibility of all video will become just as suspect as Soviet Cold War photos. The problem stems from the nature of modern video. Live or not, it is made of pixels, and as Livingston says, pixels can be changed. The best-known examples of real-time video manipulation so far are "virtual insertions" in professional sports broadcasts. Last January 30, for instance, nearly one-sixth of humankind in more than 180 countries repeatedly saw an orange first-down line stretched across the gridiron as they watched the Super Bowl. Princeton Video Imaging (PVI) in Lawrenceville, N.J., created that line, stored it in a computer, and inserted it into the live feed of the broadcast. To help determine where to insert the orange pixels, several game cameras were fitted with sensors that tracked the cameras spatial positions and zoom levels. Adding to the illusion of reality was the ability of the PVI system to make sure that players and referees occlude the virtual line when their bodies traverse it.

Last spring and summer, as PVI and rivals such as New York-based Sportvision were airing virtual insertion products, including simulated billboards on walls behind major league batters, a team of engineers from Samoff Corp. in Princeton, N.J., flew to the Coalition Allied Operations Center of NATO's Operation Allied Force in Vicenza, Italy. Their mission: transform their experimental video processing technology into an operational tool for rapidly locating and targeting Serbian military vehicles in Kosovo. The project was dubbed TIGER, for targeting by image georegistration.

Our goal was to be able to fire precision-guided munitions at Serbian military vehicles - just dial in the coordinates and the thing goes, explains Michael Hansen, a young, caffeinated Samoff gadgeteer who can hardly believe he was helping fight a war last year.

Compared to PVI's job, the military's technical task was more difficult - and the stakes were much higher. Instead of altering a football broadcast, the TIGER team manipulated a live video feed from a Predator, an unmanned reconnaissance craft flying some 450 meters above Kosovo battlefields. Rather than superimposing virtual lines or ads into sports settings, the task was to overlay, in real time, georegistered images of Kosovo onto the corresponding scenes streaming in live from the Predator's video camera.

The terrain images had been previously captured with aerial photography and digitally stored. The TIGER system, which automatically detected moving objects against the background, could almost instantly feed to the targeting officers the coordinates for

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

any piece of Serbian hardware in the Predator's view. This was quite a technical feat, since the Predator was moving and its angle of view was constantly changing, yet those views had to be electronically aligned and registered with the stored imagery in less than one-thirtieth of a second (to match the frame rate of video recording).

Any video that has ever been recorded is becoming clip art that producers can digitally sculpt into the story they want to tell.

In principle, the targeting step could have been hotwired to precision guided weapons. "We weren't actually doing that in Allied Force," Hansen notes. "We were just telling targeting officers exactly where Serbian targets were and then they would vector in planes to go strike the targets."

That way the human decision makers could preempt flawed machine-made decisions. According to the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency, TIGER technology was used extensively in the final three weeks of the Kosovo operation, during which "80 to 90 percent of the mobile targets were hit."

So far, real-time video manipulation has been within the grasp only of technologically sophisticated organizations such as TV networks and the military. But developers of the technology say it's becoming simple and cheap enough to spread everywhere. And that has some observers wondering whether real-time video manipulation will erode public confidence in live television images, even when aired by news outlets. "Seeing may no longer be believing," says Norman Winarsky, corporate vice president for information technology at Samoff. "You may not know what to trust."

THE SUBLIME TO THE RIDICULOUS

A crude form of video manipulation already is happening in the satellite imagery community. The weekly publication Space News reported earlier this year that the Indian government releases imagery from its remote-sensing satellites only after defense facilities have been "processed out." In this case, it's not real-time manipulation and it's up front, like a censor's black marker. But pixels are plastic. It is perfectly possible now to insert sets of pixels into satellite imagery data that interpreters would view as battalions of tanks, or war planes, or burial sites, or lines of refugees, or dead cows that activists claim are victims of a biotech accident.

A demo tape supplied by PVI bolsters the point in the prosaic setting of a suburban parking lot. The scene appears ordinary except for a disturbing feature: Amidst the SUVs and minivans are several parked tanks and one armored behemoth rolling incongruously along. Imagine a tape of virtual Pakistani tanks rolling over the border into India pitched to news outlets as authentic, and you get a feel for the kind of trouble that deceptive imagery could stir up.

Commercial suppliers of virtual insertion services are too focused on new marketing opportunities to worry much about geopolitics. They have their eyes on far more lucrative markets. Suddenly those large stretches of programming between commercials - the actual show, that is - become available for billions of dollars worth of primetime advertising. PVI's demo tape, for instance, includes a scene in which a Microsoft Windows box appears - virtually, of course - on the shelf of Frasier Crane's studio. This kind of product placement could become more and more important as new video recording

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

technologies such as TiVo and RePlayTV give viewers more power to edit out commercials.

Dennis Wilkinson, a Porsche-driving, sports-loving marketing expert who became CEO of 10-year-old PVI about a year ago, couldn't be happier about that. Wilkinson's eyes gleam when he describes a (near) future in which virtual insertion technology pushes advertisements to the personalized extreme. Combined with data-mining services by which browsers' individual likes, dislikes and purchasing patterns can be relentlessly tracked and analyzed, virtual insertion opens up the ability to shunt personally targeted advertisements over phone lines or cables to Web users and TV viewers. Say you like Pepsi but your neighbor next door likes Coke and your neighbor across the street likes Seven- Upâ is the kind of data harvestable from supermarket checkout records. It will become possible to tailor the soft-drink image in the broadcast signal to reach each of you with your preferred brand.

Just 15 minutes up the road from PVI, Samoff's Winarsky is also glowingâ not so much about capturing market share as about the transforming power of the technology. Samoff has a distinguished history in that regard; the company is the descendant of RCA Laboratories, which started innovating in television technology in the early 1940s and has given birth to a plethora of media technologies. The color TV picture tube, liquid crystal displays and high-definition TV all came, at least in part, from RCA qua Samoff, which has five technical Emmys in its lobby.

The ability to manipulate video data in real time, he says, has just as much potential as some of these forerunners. "Now that you can alter video in real time, you have changed the world," he says. That may sound inflated, but after looking at the Katarina Witt demo, Winarsky's talk of "changing the world" loses some of its air of hyperbole.

Deleting people or objects from live video, or inserting prerecorded people or objects into live scenes, is only the beginning of the deceptions becoming possible. Pretty much any piece of video that has ever been recorded is becoming clip art that producers can digitally sculpt into the story they want to tell, according to Eric Haseltine, senior vice president for R&D at Walt Disney Imagineering in Glendale, Calif. With additional video manipulation technologies, previously recorded actors can be made to say and do things they have never actually done or said. "You can have dead actors star again in entirely new movies," says Haseltine.

Contemporary shots featuring footage of dead performers have been around for several years. But the Hollywood illusion-craft that, for example, inserted John Wayne into a TV commercial required painstaking, frame-by-frame postproduction work by skilled technicians. There's a big difference now, says Haseltine: "What used to take an hour [per video frame], now can be done in a sixtieth of a second" This dramatic speedup means that manipulation can be done in real time, on the fly, as a camera records or broadcasts. Not only can John Wayne, Fred Astaire or Saddam Hussein be virtually inserted into pre-produced ads, they could be inserted into, say, a live broadcast of The Drew Carey Show.

The combination of real-time, virtual insertion with existing and emerging post-production techniques opens up a world of manipulative opportunity. Consider Video Rewrite technology, which its developers at the Interval Corp. and the University of

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

California, Berkeley first demonstrated publicly three years ago. With just a few minutes of video of someone talking, their system captures and stores a set of video snapshots of the way that a person's mouth-area looks and moves when saying different sets of sounds. Drawing from the resulting library of "visemes" makes it possible to depict the person seeming to say anything the producers dream up-including utterances that the subject wouldn't be caught dead saying.

In one test application, computer scientist Christoph Bregler, now of Stanford University, and colleagues, digitized two minutes of public-domain footage of President John F. Kennedy speaking during the Cuban missile crisis in 1962. Using the resulting viseme library, the researchers created "animations" of Kennedy's mouth saying things he never said, among them, "I never met Forrest Gump." With technology like this, near-future political activists conceivably will be able to orchestrate webcasts of their opponents saying things that might make Howard Stern sound like a mensch.

Haseltine believes video manipulation techniques will quickly be carried to their logical extreme: "I can predict with absolute certainty," he says, "that one person sitting at a computer will be able to write a script, design characters, do the lighting and wardrobe, do all of the acting and dialog, and post production, distribute it on a broadband network, do all of this on a laptop, and viewers won't know the difference."

THE END OF AUTHENTICITY

So far, the widely witnessed applications of real-time video manipulation have been in benign arenas like sports and entertainment. Already last year, however, the technology began diffusing beyond these venues into applications that raised eyebrows. Last fall, for instance, CBS hired PVI to virtually insert the network's familiar logo all over New York Cityâ on buildings, billboards, fountains and other places-during broadcasts of the network's The Early Show. The New York Times ran a front-page story in January raising questions about the journalistic ethics of altering the appearance of what is really there.

The combination of real-time virtual insertion, cyber-puppeteering, video rewriting and other video manipulation technologies with a mass-media infrastructure that instantly delivers news video worldwide has some analysts worried. "Imagine you are the government of a hypothetical country that wants more international financial assistance," says George Washington University's Livingston. "You might send video of a remote area with people starving to death and it may never have happened," he says.

Haseltine agrees. "I'm amazed that we have not seen phony video," he says, before backpedaling a bit: "Maybe we have. Who would know?"

It's just the sort of scenario played out in the 1998 movie Wag the Dog, in which top presidential aides conspire with a Hollywood producer to televise a virtually crafted war between the United States and Albania to deflect attention from a budding Presidential scandal. Haseltine and others wonder when reality will imitate art imitating reality. The importance of the issue will only intensify as the technology becomes more accessible. What now typically requires an \$80,000 box of electronics the size of a small refrigerator should soon be doable with a palm-sized card (and ultimately a single chip) that fits inside a commercial video recorder, according to Winarsky. "This will be available to people in Circuit City," he says. Consumer gear for virtual video insertion is likely to

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

require a camcorder with a specialized image-processing card or chip. This hardware will take signals from the camera's electronic image sensors and convert them into a form that can be analyzed and manipulated in a computer using appropriate software—much as photo editors at newspapers use Adobe Photoshop and other programs to clean up digital image files. A home user might, for instance, insert absent family members into the latest reunion tape or remove strangers they would prefer not to be in the scene—bringing Soviet-style historical revisions right into the family den.

Combine the potential erosion of faith in video authenticity with the so-called "CNN effect" and the stage is set for deception to move the world in new ways. Livingston describes the CNN effect as the ability of mass media to go beyond merely reporting what is happening to actually influencing decision-makers as they consider military, international assistance and other national and international issues. "The CNN effect is real," says James Currie, professor of political science at the National Defense University at Fort McNair in Washington. "Every office you go into at the Pentagon has CNN on." And that means, he says, that a government, terrorist or advocacy group could set geopolitical events in motion on the strength of a few hours' worth of credibility achieved by distributing a snippet of well-doctored video.

With experience as an army reservist, as a staffer with a top-secret clearance on the Senate's Intelligence Committee, and as a legislative liaison for the Secretary of the Army, Currie has seen governmental decision-making and politicking up close. He is convinced that real-time video manipulation will be, or already is, in the hands of the military and intelligence communities. And while he has no evidence yet that any government or nongovernment organization has deployed video manipulation techniques, real-time or not, for political or military purposes, he has no problem conjuring up disinformation scenarios. For example, he says, consider the impact of a fabricated video that seemed to show Saddam Hussein "pouring himself a Scotch and taking a big drink of it. You could run it on Middle Eastern television and it would totally undermine his credibility with Islamic audiences. For all the heavy breathing, however, some experts remain unconvinced that real-time video manipulation poses a real threat, no matter how good the technology gets. John Pike, an analyst of the intelligence community for the Federation of American Scientists in Washington, D.C., says the credibility risks are simply too great for governments or serious organizations to get caught attempting to spoof the public. And for the organizations that would be willing to risk it, says Pike, the news folks—knowing just what the technology can do—will become increasingly vigilant. If some human rights organization popped up at CNN with some video, particularly an organization they were not familiar with, I would think that [CNN] would consider that radioactive, says Pike. Same goes for nongovernmental organizations (NGOs). No responsible director of an established organization would authorize such a thing. And they would fire on the spot anyone caught doing it. The stock-in-trade of NGO policy organizations is that we tell the truth. Even cool heads like Pike, however, concede that the media's fortress of skepticism has an Achilles heel: the Internet. The issue is not so much your ability to get fake video on CNN, but to get it online, he says. That's because so much Internet content is unfiltered. This could play into the phenomenon in the news production process where you would not replicate the original report, but you might

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

report that it was reported, says Pike. And that could cascade into a CNN effect. These are undoubtedly experiments that will be done, Pike says.

The trouble is, says Livingston, it may only take a few such experiments to forever make people question the authenticity of video. That could have enormous repercussions for military, intelligence and news operations. An ironic sociological consequence might emerge: a return to heavier reliance on unmediated face-to-face communication. In the meantime, though, there will undoubtedly be some interesting twists and turns as pixels become ever more plastic. Ivan Amato is a correspondent for National Public Radio and the author of *Stuff: The Materials the World Is Made Of*, a chronicle of cutting-edge research in materials science.

NASA PROJECT BLUE BEAM

This is from the International Free Press in Canada.

(With the deaths of its founder, Serge Monast, and chief researcher, David O'Reilly, IFP is now defunct)

The International Free Press network is not a religious group, neither is it a political organization, but an independent worldwide investigation press agency in the field of politics, economics, medical and military.

We specialize in investigating and publishing special reports and audio tapes to expose the underworld of the United Nations conspiracy to implement a New World Order.

Our task is to make the people realize that the agenda of the New World Order is not a dream or some wild, paranoid theory; it is a real ongoing Satanic project.

For what?

To abolish all Christian traditional religions in order to replace them with a one world religion based on the cult of man. To abolish all national identity and national pride in order to establish a world identity and a world pride. To abolish the family as known today in order to replace them with individuals all working for the glory of the new one world government.

To destroy all individual artistic and scientific creativity to implement a one world government one-mind set. And that kind of declaration of war from the United Nations is for the implementation of a universal, obligatory membership to the United Nations, a strengthening of the UN by a multi-military and multi-police force, a worldwide justice department through the UN with an international tribunal, a worldwide new trade agreement for all nations, the end of cold war and local wars as they are today, and the obligation for peace by scrapping all national and state constitutions.

Also, a new world religion and a new culture for all men. If we really wish to understand the NASA Blue Beam Project, we have to return to the "dawning of the age of Aquarius." Remember that song? That song said, "When the moon is in the seventh house and Jupiter aligned with Mars, then peace will guide our planet and love will steer the stars."

This related with the year 1982 to be, at that time, the opening for the conspiracy of the age of Aquarius, just before the implementation of the new world order, supposed to begin sometime in 1983.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

I have to say that the Blue Beam Project was set up for the year 1983. It has been delayed; we don't know exactly why. But, since 1983 (eleven years before the publication of this report), they have really improved themselves with new technology and innovations in space hardware and software in which they are involved right now to make their systems possible.

So, the goals of the new age movement under which the United Nations operates right now, are the implementation of a new world "messiah."

The tools of the new world order are, 1. an international army; 2. an international police force; 3. a world bank for the economy; 4. a world government under the United Nations; 5. a world conservatory bank for wilderness preservation around the world. That means all "green" movements will be melded into the new international bank or disappear altogether; 6. a world religion where all church doctrines will be destroyed at the roots to be replaced by the new world religion of the age of Aquarius; 7. the world seven races classification for all human slaves who will fulfill predetermined work tasks whether they agree with it or not; 8. the world concentration headquarters at the United Nations for those who will not accept the new system; 9. the world agriculture and food supply control which will control food and vitamin supplies around the world.

The new world order will be an "in-between" government system for USSR, Great Britain and all its commonwealths, and the United States with its melting-pot population.

This is, at the end, a new spiritual and political world order which will replace the old ones under which we live right now.

WHAT ARE THE NEW WORLD ORDER PLANS?

They plan on the destruction of all people who believe in the Bible or worship Jesus Christ, and the complete disappearance of Christianity. To achieve this plan, the new world order is changing national laws to assure that Christian beliefs and symbolsâ like the cross, for instance, will become outlawed and unlawful. Religious holidays and ceremonies will be replaced with new age festivities around the world.

The elimination and complete destruction of all secret societies and secret brotherhoods, lodges and sanctuaries, all of which they view as the most serious threats to their survival after the implementation of the one world religion and one world government.

The new world order also plans the abolition of all national currencies, and the transfer of commerce to electronic cash through the superhighway.

The thinkers and the basic doctrine of the new age conspiracies books are:

Elena Petrovna Blavatsky, who wrote "Isis Unveiled" and "The Secret Doctrine."

Alice A. Bailey who wrote "The Race and the Initiation and Externalization of the Heirarchy;" "Initiation: Human and Savior;" "The Reappearance of the Christ." (Their Christ is the new messiah). "The Destiny of the Nation," in which are plans for the disposition of the nation-states; "The Unfinished Autobiography;" "Disciplineship and the New Age;" "Esoteric Psychology."

These books are very important for new age thinkers who are exactly the ones who are conspiring to implement the New World Order and who, incidentally, will be the first to die after establishment of the NWO.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Also, the writing of Nicola Roerich, who wrote, "Matraia," (that's their new messiah); "Shambala, The Resplendent," and "The Agni Yoga Series."

David Spangler who wrote, "Revelation: The Birth of a New Age," considered as the "bible" inside the new age movement; "Reflections on the Christ," which is related to the Luciferian initiation; "Links With Space," which maintains that offworld aliens are supposed to come to save earthlings from themselves; "Relationship and Identity," "The Love of Manifestation," "New Age Rifts," and "Toward a Planetary Vision," which is directly related to the visions of the new world order, as they plan it to be.

Now...what those people also plan and I repeat, this is not a dream and is not paranoid thinking, this is real. They plan that in order to accept the new world order, all people must first accept the new age religion; to enter into the new world religion, the Christian will have to abdicate their own beliefs. So, as they said, the initiation will be on a worldwide basis inside the newly organized new Christian church (which will be a reorganized and strictly controlled Masonic temple) occult organization based on a Luciferian initiation. What we have to understand here is that no one will be able to maintain their old beliefs and, at the same time, enter into the new age religion. It will be impossible.

For those who will not accept the new world order, who will reject it, the new world order people have already built reeducation concentration camps and, for those camps, they have established what they call the "rainbow classifications" of the new world order prisoners.

The rainbow is considered as the "bridge" leading to the Satanic empire of the new world order. We already know, for instance, that everyone will have to take an oath to Lucifer in order to cross that bridge into the new age. All who resist that initiation will be sent to detention facilities where they will be separated into different categories, known as the rainbow classification of the new world order prisoners.

1. Classification of Christian children, as planned, is to be as human sacrifices where, within the black mass ceremonies, they will be forced to participate in any kind of sexual orgies or be kept as sexual slaves.

2. Classification of prisoners to be used in medical experiments where drugs and new technologies will be tested on humans.

3. Classification of healthy prisoners for the International Organ Donation Center where vital organs will be removed one by one while they are kept alive by mechanical devices.

4. Classification of all healthy underground workers. The new world order is basically a worldwide dictatorship based upon the Luciferian religion; a dictatorship with the illusion of democracy. In order to maintain the illusion of democracy, camps and slave labor will be hidden underground in massive colonies that are being built as we write this report.

5. Classification of "Uncertain Prisoners." In the international "reeducation" center, political and religious prisoners will be reeducated (by whatever means are required) so that they may repent on international television programs and glorify the virtues of the one world government for the benefit of all humanity.

6. Classification of the International Execution Center. Clear enough!

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

7. Classification seven. We are still waiting on the details of the Seventh Classification, and we are awaiting verification of the colors to be assigned to these classifications of prisoners, but this is the basic agenda of those who have planned the new "paradise" world of the future.

You must understand that when I decided to release, about six months ago, some of their plans and information concerning their most important project, which is the NASA Blue Beam Project, I wasn't certain if I would survive my stand against the new world order's plans to put down on their knees all of the world's cultures and religions. But, now, following my own Christian conscience, my real and deep love for all my unknown brothers and sisters in America and throughout the world, I freely accept to give my life if it has to be the case for the truth, for Jesus Christ, by releasing for the first time, the four major steps of the Satanic Blue Beam Project.

I ask everyone who reads the following descriptions not to be paralyzed by their natural fears but to spread to everyone the contents of this special report, and to gather together in order to pray and to think and to organize ways to survive the new world order government showdown and power taking, because what we have to understand is that the new world government will not be something permanent, immortal; this is not the case. But what we have to do right now is to decide how to organize to survive such Satanic plans.

EDITOR'S NOTE:

The author of this report and his colleague were both killed only weeks apart; one in Canada and the other while visiting Ireland. Now we must carry on their work.

PROJECT BLUE BEAM ADVANCED PROGRAM

The infamous NASA Blue Beam Project has four different steps in order to implement the new age religion with the Antichrist at its head. We must remember that the new age religion is the very foundation for the new world government, without which religion the dictatorship of the new world order is completely impossible.

I'll repeat that: Without a universal belief in the new age religion, the success of the new world order will be impossible!

That is why the Blue Beam Project is so important to them, but has been so well hidden until now.

The first step concerns the breakdown of all archeological knowledge. It deals with the setup with artificially created earthquakes at certain precise locations on the planet where, supposedly, new discoveries will finally explain to all people the error of all fundamental religious doctrines. The falsification of this information will be used to make all nations believe that their religious doctrines have been misunderstood for centuries and misinterpreted. Psychological preparations for that first step have already been implemented with the film, "2001: A Space Odyssey;" the Star Trek series, and "Star Wars;" all of which deal with invasions from space and the coming together of all nations to repel the invaders. The last films, "Jurassic Park," deals with the theories of evolution, and claim God's words are lies.

What is important to understand in the first step is that those earthquakes will hit at different parts of the world where scientific and archeological teachings have indicated

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

that arcane mysteries have been buried. By those types of earthquakes, it will possible for scientists to rediscover those arcane mysteries which will be used to discredit all fundamental religious doctrines.

This is the first preparation for the plan for humanity because what they want to do is destroy the beliefs of all Christians and Muslims on the planet. To do that, they need some false "proof" from the far past that will prove to all nations that their religions have all been misinterpreted and misunderstood.

The second step involves a gigantic "space show" with three-dimensional optical holograms and sounds, laser projection of multiple holographic images to different parts of the world, each receiving a different image according to predominating regional national religious faith.

This new "god's" voice will be speaking in all languages.

In order to understand that, we must study various secret services' research done in the last 25 years. The Soviet's have perfected an advanced computer, even exported them, and fed them with the minute physio-psychological particulars based on their studies of the anatomy and electromechanical composition of the human body, and the studies of the electrical, chemical and biological properties of the human brain.

These computers were fed, as well, with the languages of all human cultures and their meanings. The dialects of all cultures have been fed into the computers from satellite transmissions. The Soviets began to feed the computers with objective programs like the ones of the new messiah. It also seems that the Sovietsâ the new world order people have resorted to suicidal methods with the human society by allocating electronic wavelengths for every person and every society and culture to induce suicidal thoughts if the person doesn't comply with the dictates of the new world order. There are two different aspects of step two. The first is the "space show." Where does the space show come from? The space show, the holographic images will be used in a simulation of the ending during which all nations will be shown scenes which will be the fulfillment of that which they desire to verify the prophecies and adversary events. These will be projected from satellites onto the sodium layer about 60 miles above the earth. We see tests every once in a while, but they are called UFOs and 'flying saucers.' The result of these deliberately staged events will be to show the world the new "Christ," the new messiah, Matraia, for the immediate implementation of the new world religion. Enough truth will be foisted upon an unsuspecting world to hook them into the lie. 'Even the most learned will be deceived.'

The project has perfected the ability for some device to lift up an enormous number of people, as in a rapture, and whisk the entire group into a never-never land. We see tests of this device in the abduction of humans by those mysterious little alien greys who snatch people out of their beds and through windows into waiting 'mother ships.'

The calculated resistance to the universal religion and the new messiah and the ensuing holy wars will result in the loss of human life on a scale never imagine before in all of human history.

The Blue Beam Project will pretend to be the universal fulfillment of the prophecies of old, as major an event as that which occurred 2,000 years ago. In principle, it will

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

make use of the skies as a movie screen (on the sodium layer at about 60 miles) as space-based laser-generating satellites project simultaneous images to the four corners of the planet in every language and dialect according to the region. It deals with the religious aspect of the new world order and is deception and seduction on a massive scale. Computers will coordinate the satellites and software already in place will run the sky show. Holographic images are based on nearly identical signals combining to produce an image or hologram with deep perspective which is equally applicable to acoustic ELF, VLF and LF waves and optical phenomena.

Specifically, the show will consist of multiple holographic images to different parts of the world, each receiving a different image according to the specific national, regional religion. Not a single area will be excluded. With computer animation and sounds appearing to emanate from the very depths of space, astonished ardent followers of the various creeds will witness their own returned messiahs in convincing lifelike reality.

Then the projections of Jesus, Mohammed, Buddha, Krishna, etc., will merge into one after correct explanations of the mysteries and revelations will have been disclosed. This one god will, in fact, be the Antichrist, who will explain that the various scriptures have been misunderstood and misinterpreted, and that the religions of old are responsible for turning brother against brother, and nation against nation, therefore old religions must be abolished to make way for the new age new world religion, representing the one god Antichrist they see before them.

Naturally, this superbly staged falsification will result in dissolved social and religious disorder on a grand scale, each nation blaming the other for the deception, setting loose millions of programmed religious fanatics through demonic possession on a scale never witnessed before.

In addition, this event will occur at a time of profound worldwide political anarchy and general tumult created by some worldwide catastrophe. The United Nation even now plans to use Beethoven's "Song of Joy" as the anthem for the introduction for the new age one world religion. If we put this space show in parallel with the star wars program we get this: combination of electromagnetic radiation and hypnosis have also been the subject of intensive research. In 1974, for instance, researcher G. F. Shapits, said of one of the research proposals that, "...in this investigation it will be shown that the spoken words of the hypnotist may also be converted by electromagnetic energy directly and to the subconscious part of the human brain without employing any mechanical device for receiving or transcoding the message, and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input consciously. It may be expected that the rationalized behavior will be considered to have been taken out of their own free will."

Anyone investigating so-called "channelling" phenomena right now would be wise to take this area of research into consideration. It will be noted that those who think of themselves as "channelers" has escalated rapidly since this type of research was conducted.

It is uncanny how similar their messages are, despite which entity they claim to be their source of divine guidance. It would suggest any individual considering the credibility of channelled information should be discerning and critically evaluate where the message they are receiving originates, and if the messages are specifically

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

beneficially to the new world order.

The Sydney Morning newspaper published an item on March 21st, 1983 which announced that the Soviets were invading the human mind, the article having been submitted to the foreign editor by Doctor Nathan Abnuengy <sp>, assistant professor in the faculty of agriculture in Asia. It is worth quoting the article at length even though his grammar is a little old.

This article relates to the Soviets who created the supercomputer we were discussing earlier and which is really important because these types of computers can be run through satellites and through space. The computers were fed with all the different languages and their meanings, the dialect of all peoples were fed to the computers with objective programs.

But we are no longer talking about the Soviets; we are talking about the United Nations, the minions of the new world order, who are feeding the computers with the necessary information.

The editor of the column in which the article appeared even states that the piece made points too important to ignore. I think it is possible that the persons who have created this mega-mind control program could sell the software to an organization and not be aware that the client might use the program and data to enslave all of humankind. Just imagine how far they have advanced since that article was published!

The advancement of techniques propel us toward the third step in the Blue Beam Project that goes along with the telepathic and electronically augmented two-way communication where ELF, VLF and LF waves will reach each person from within his or her own mind, convincing each of them that their own god is speaking to them from the very depths of their own soul.

Such rays from satellites are fed from the memories of computers that have stored massive data about every human on earth, and their languages. The rays will then interlace with their natural thinking to form what we call diffuse artificial thought.

That kind of technology goes into the 1970s, 1980s, and 1990s research where the human brain has been compared to a computer. Information is fed in, processed, integrated and then a response is formulated and acted upon.

Mind controllers manipulate information the same way a computer for grammar manipulates information. In January 1991, the University of Arizona hosted a conference entitled, "The NATO Advanced Research Workshop on Current and Emergent Phenomena and Biomolecular Systems." What does that mean exactly?

It means this: We refer to one paper that was delivered at the conference which stands out for its different attitude towards the development under discussion at that time. It was, in effect, a protest and chilling warning to the attending scientists about the potential abuse of their research findings. Their findings, of course, stated that the United States has already developed communications equipment which can make the blind see, the deaf hear and the lame walk. It can relieve the terminally ill from pain without the use of drugs or surgery. I'm not talking about science fiction. A man might retain the use of all his faculties right up to the moment of his death. This communications equipment depends upon a completely new way of looking at the human brain and neuromuscular systems

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

and radiation pulses at ultra-low frequencies.

Some of this equipment is now operational within the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), and Federal Bureau of Investigation. It will never be used to make the blind see, the deaf hear and the lame walk because it is central to the domestic political agenda and foreign policy of George Bush and his puppetmasters of the new world order.

Domestically, the new communications equipment is being used to torture and murder person who match profiles imagined to be able to screen a given population for terrorists; to torture and murder citizens who belong to organizations which promote tolerance and peace and development in Central America; to torture and murder citizens who belong to organizations who oppose the development and deployment of nuclear weapons, and to create a race of slave cult automatons, or what is popularly called "the Manchurian Candidates."

Overseas experimentation is taking place on hostages held by the United States and Canada, Great Britain, Australia, Germany, Finland and France. Additionally, there has been a long series of bizarre suicides among British computer scientists, all of whom have had some connection to the United States Navy.

What it is possible to ask before such a psychology of terror is this: would any government, corporation or psychiatrist willfully promote such horror today?

The answer is quite obviously, "Yes." Government agencies and the corporations that work with them toward a new world order are prepared to promote anything that will help them achieve their objective of total social control. As for the question of why: For one thing, if you terrify the public and make them fear for their safety, they will allow you to implement draconian law enforcement practices, disarm them and keep extensive records on them, and they only have to tell you that it is all to protect you, of course.

Secondly, it promotes the decay of the present democratic forms of political systems, and leads societies to search for alternative methods of political ideology. Of course, the alternative has already been planned. It is called the new world order and it will not have your safety or interests at heart. As George Bush said: "Read my lips."

Fear has always been used by powerful elite to control and subjugate the masses. The old maxim, divide and conquer is being played out to the limit worldwide to ensure that everyone is frightened for their personal safety, and to be suspicious of everyone else. This, too, is mind control. To go further in regard to the new technology which is at the base of the NASA Blue Beam Project, we have to consider this statement by psychologist James V. McConnell which was published in a 1970s issue of Psychology Today. He said, "The day has come when we can combine sensory deprivation with drug hypnosis and astute manipulation of reward and punishment to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behavior. It should then be possible to achieve a very rapid and highly effective type of positive brainwashing that would allow us to make dramatic changes in a person's behavior and personality."

Now, when we talked before about that kind of ray and the telepathic and electronically augmented communication, the kind of rays that are fed from the memories of computers which store massive data about humans, human language and dialects, and we said that the people will be reached from within, making each person to believe

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

that his own god is speaking directly from within his or her own soul, we refer to that kind of technology and that kind of thinking that some psychologist was espousing, that is: we should be trained from birth that we should all do what society wants us to do rather than what we want to do for ourselves; that because they have the technology to alter it, no one should now be allowed to have their own individual personality. This statement and these ideas are important because it is the basic teaching of the United Nations that no one owns his or her own personality. And that some psychologist claims that no one has any say-so about the kind of personality they acquire and there is no reason to believe you have the right to refuse to acquire a new personality if your old personality is considered "antisocial."

What is important in this declaration is that the new world order will be set up over the current system, meaning the old way of thinking and behavior and religion will be considered the "old" and incorrect way of thinking and that they can change it at one of the eradication camps of the United Nations to make sure that anyone with this "antisocial" behavior will be disposed of quickly so that other modified individuals will be able to fulfill the needs and agendas of the new world order without being distracted by the truth. Could this be the greatest mind control project ever? The NASA Blue Beam Project is the prime directive for the new world order's absolute control over the populations of the entire earth. I would suggest you investigate this information carefully before dismissing it as fanatic lunacy.

If we go further in the different reports we have presented, we find that the mind control operations and technology include a transmitter that broadcasts at the same frequency as the human nervous system, which transmitter is manufactured by the Loral Electro-Optical System in Pasadena, California.

Loral, a major defense contractor, has previously conducted research on directed energy weapons for Lt. Gen. Leonard Perez of the U. S. Airforce who was searching for a weapon that could implant messages into the minds of the enemy while urging his own troops on to superhuman deeds of valor!

The device employs electromagnetic radiation of gigahertz frequencies pulsed at extremely low frequencies (ELF).

It is used to torture people both physically and mentally from a distance. Weapons of this type are thought to have been used against a British woman protesting the presence of American Cruise Missiles at Greenham Common Airbase during the 1970s.

This weapon can be used to induce total sensory deprivation by broadcasting signals into the auditory nerve at such high power that it blocks the ability of the individual to hear themselves think!

The process employed by such ELF technology are described in various U. S. Defense Department publications, including one entitled, "The Electromagnetic Spectrum and Low Intensity Conflict," by Captain Paul E. Tyler, Medical Commandant, U. S. Navy, which is included in a collection entitled, "Low Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology Edict," by Lt. Col David G. Dean, USAF.

The paper was delivered in 1984 and the collection published 1986 by Air University Press, Maxwell Airforce Base, Alabama.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Another pulse microwave device can deliver audible signals directly to an individual while remaining undetectable to anyone else. The technology is very simple and can be built by using an ordinary police radar gun. The micro-wave beam generated by the device is modulated at audio frequencies and can broadcast messages directly into the brain.

NOW HERE WE COME TO THE NASA BLUE BEAM PROJECT.

The broadcasting of subliminal two-way communication and images from the depths of space correspond directly to that kind of technology.

In his book, "The Body Electric," Nobel Prize nominee Robert Baker describes a series of experiments conducted in the early 1960s by Allen Frie where this phenomena was demonstrated as well as later experiments conducted in 1973 at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research by Dr. Joseph C. Sharp who personally underwent tests in which he proved he could hear and understand messages delivered to him in an echo-free isolation chamber via a pulsed micro-wave audiogram which is an analog of the word's sound vibration beamed into his brain.

Baker then goes on to state, "Such a device has obvious application for covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with unknown voices or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin."

Now figure out when we hear that voice from the new world messiah who would be speaking from space to all of the sane people of the earth who might give instructions to zealots and religious fanatics, we would see hysteria and social mayhem on a scale never witnessed before on this planet.

No police forces in the world, even as a combined front, could deal with the disorder that will follow!

A 1978 book entitled, "Microwave Auditory Effect and Application," by James C. Lynn describes how audible voices can be broadcast directly into the brain. This technology could actually allow the blind to see and the deaf to hear. Instead, it has been turned into a weapon to enslave the world.

Allen Frie also reports that he could speed up, slow down or stop the hearts of isolated frogs by synchronizing the pulsed rate of a microwave beam with the heart itself. According to Robert Baker, similar results have been obtained using live frogs, which shows that it is technically feasible to produce heart attacks with rays designed to penetrate the human chest.

EDITOR'S NOTE: Both the author of this report and his research colleague died of "heart attacks" only days apart. Neither had a history of heart problems. I should mention also that Dr. Baker does NOT participate in such research.

It has been demonstrated that focused ultra high frequency UHF electromagnetic energy beams can be used to induce considerable agitation and muscular activity or induce muscular weakness and lethargy.

Microwaves can also be used to burn human skin and aid the effect of drugs, bacteria and poisons or affect the function of the entire brain. These effects were all revealed at length by the CIA on September 21, 1977 in testimony before the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, who directed the MK-Ultra program at that time was forced to discuss the scope of the CIA's research to find techniques of activation of the human organism by remote electronic means.

So this is something that exists right now, that has been pursued to its highest degree, that can be used from space to reach any person, anyplace on the face of the earth. If we go deeper in that process of mind control over the people we find that the equipment and technology **has been used to influence politics** in a much more direct fashion.

Michael Dukakis, the Democrat candidate running against George Bush in the 1988 election was targeted with microwave technology in order to impede his public speaking performance once the public opinion polls showed he posed a serious threat to Bush's election prospects. He also claims that the equipment was used against Kitty Dukakis and drove her to the brink of suicide.

In the Disneyland world of U. S. politics, a presidential candidate with problems such as these, would obviously lose their race to the White House.

In the December 1980 edition of the U. S. Army Journal, called the Military Review, a column by Lt. Col John B. Alexander, entitled, "The New Mental Battlefield: Beam Me Up, Spock," provides further insight into the technical capabilities at the disposal of the comptroller. He writes, "Several examples will demonstrate areas in which progress have been made. The transference of energy from one organism to another; the ability to heal or cause disease to be transmitted over a distance, thus inducing illness or death from no apparent cause, telepathic behavior modification which includes the ability to induce hypnotic states up to a distance of 1,000 kilometers have been reported. The use of telepathic hypnosis also holds great potential. This capability could allow agents to be deeply implanted with no conscious knowledge of their programming. In movie terms, the Manchurian Candidate lives, and does not even require a telephone call.

"Other mind-to-mind induction techniques are being considered. If perfected, this capability could allow the direct transference of thought via telepathy from one mind or group of minds to a select target audience. The unique factor is that the recipient will not be aware that thought has been implanted from an external source. He or she will believe the thoughts are original."

This is exactly what we were talking about.

The third step in the NASA Blue Beam Project is called the Telepathic Electronic Two-Way Communication. Lt. Col Alexander's article continues: "If it is possible to feed artificial thought into the multigenic field via satellite, the mind control of the entire planet is now possible. An individual's only resistance would be to constantly question the motivation behind their thoughts and not act upon thoughts which they consider to be outside their own ideological, religious and moral boundaries."

Once again, it is wise to consider how television, advertising, modern education and various types of social pressure are used to manipulate those boundaries.

It has been reported by Lt. Col Alexander who said, in the summary of his Military Review article, "The information on those kinds of technologies presented here would be considered by some to be ridiculous since it does not conform to their view of reality. But some people still believe the world is flat."

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Now, this means a lot, because if people do not believe this kind of technology is possible, or that it is science fiction, those people put themselves in great jeopardy, because on the night when those thousand stars will shine from space, during the night when the new messiah will be presented to the world, they will not be prepared and will have no time to prepare to save themselves against that kind of technology. They don't believe and they won't take time to prepare.

Step Four of the NASA Blue Beam Project.

The fourth step concerns the universal supernatural manifestation with electronic means. It contains three different orientations. One is to make mankind believe that an alien (offworld) invasion is about to occur at every major city on earth in order to provoke each major nation to use its nuclear weapons in order to strike back. This way, the United Nations Court will require that all those nations which launched nuclear weapons to disarm when the invasion is shown to have been false.

And how will the United Nations know that the invasion was false? They will have staged it, of course.

The second is to make the Christians believe that the rapture is going to occur with the supposed divine intervention of an alien (offworld) civilization coming to rescue earthlings from a savage and merciless demon. Its goal will be to dispose of all significant opposition to the implementation of the new world order in one major stroke, actually within hours of the beginning of the sky show!

The third orientation in the fourth step is a mixture of electronic and supernatural forces. The waves used at that time will allow 'supernatural forces' to travel through optical fibers, coaxial cables (TV), electrical and phone lines in order to penetrate to everyone at once through major appliances. Embedded chips will already be in place. The goal of this deals with global Satanic ghosts projected all around the world in order to push all populations to the edge of hysteria and madness, to drown them into a wave of suicide, murder and permanent psychological disorders. After the night of the thousand stars, worldwide populations will be ready for the new messiah to reestablish order and peace at any cost, even at the cost of abdication of freedom.

The techniques used in the fourth step is exactly the same used in the past in the USSR to force the people to accept Communism. The same technique will be used by the United Nations to implement the new world religion and the new world order.

A lot of people ask when this is going to happen and how they will accomplish the visions of the night of a thousand stars, and the events that will point to the days when it will begin.

According to the many reports we have received, we believe it will begin with some kind of worldwide economic disaster. Not a complete crash, but enough to allow them to introduce some kind of in-between currency before they introduce their electronic cash to replace all paper or plastic money.

The in-between currency will be used to force anyone with savings to spend or turn in their cash because they understand that people who have money and are not dependent upon them might be the very ones who will mount an insurrection against them. If everyone is broke, no one can fund a war of any kind—paper currency will cease to

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

exist.

This is one of the first signs.

But to implement the worldwide electronic money system, everyone in the world who might have money in the future, will have to have a way to transfer money electronically. Before that time, everyone will have spent, before the year 2,000, all of their cash, reserves and assets. Everyone has to be 100% dependent upon the Council for their existence.

To prevent any kind of independence, the new world order has already implanted micro chips in wild animals, birds, fish, etc. Why? They want to make certain that the people who will not accept the new world order will not be able to hunt or fish any where in the world. If they try, they will be tracked and traced by satellites, then hunted down and imprisoned or killed.

The new world order is already changing the laws of all nations to make everyone dependent upon a single food and vitamin supply. They are changing laws about religion and psychiatric disorders in order to identify anyone who is potentially threatening to the NWO. Those who are found defective will be sent to eradication camps where their organs will be taken and sold to the highest bidders. Those who are not killed outright will be used as slave labor or used in medical experiments.

The goal of a dictatorship is to control everyone, everywhere on the planet, ruthlessly and without exception. That's why the new technology being introduced everywhere is a technology for the control of the people. The technology of the 1940s and 1950s was used to help the people have an easier and more productive life. The new technology is designed and built to track down and control people everywhere. This technology is being manufactured for a specific purpose and to refuse to see and recognize that purpose, which is to enslave the entire populations of the world, is to deny the emergence of the Antichrist and the establishment of the new world order religion and government.

If you cannot see, if you cannot learn, if you cannot understand, then you and your family and friends will succumb to the fires of the crematoria that have been built in every state and every major city on earth—built to deal with you.

No one is safe in a totalitarian police state!

THE MIND HAS NO FIREWALL

"David Esur" - a military soldier who actually released secrets from the NSA (it is believed). Last reported as "he is worried for his life" because of releasing it, he has disappeared from my email list. But then again, I never really was able to contact him to begin with—he contacted me, once. He released:

"Subliminal Implanted Posthypnotic Suggestions and Scripts Using Acoustically Delivered and Phonetically Accelerated Posthypnotic Commands without Somnambulistic Preparation in the Subject for Intelligence and Counterintelligence Applications by the United States National Security Agency."

I think he disappeared....like Ross Adey.... and I think that the writer of the article below, Timothy Thomas, may have too. But who knows?

Foreign Military Studies Office 101 Meade Ave.

Fort Leavenworth, KS 66027-1351

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

WARNING! The views expressed in FMSO publications and reports are those of the authors and do not necessarily represent the official policy or position of the Department of the Army, Department of Defense, or the U.S. Government.

THE MIND HAS NO FIREWALL

Mr. Timothy L. Thomas Foreign Military Studies Office, Fort Leavenworth, KS.

This article first appeared in the Spring 1998 issue of Parameters.

"It is completely clear that the state which is first to create such weapons will achieve incomparable superiority." - Major I. Chemishev, Russian Army 1

The human body, much like a computer, contains myriad data processors. They include, but are not limited to, the chemical-electrical activity of the brain, heart, and peripheral nervous system, the signals sent from the cortex region of the brain to other parts of our body, the tiny hair cells in the inner ear that process auditory signals, and the light-sensitive retina and cornea of the eye that process visual activity. 2

We are on the threshold of an era in which these data processors of the human body may be manipulated or debilitated. Examples of unplanned attacks on the body's data-processing capability are well-documented. Strobe lights have been known to cause epileptic seizures. Not long ago in Japan, children watching television cartoons were subjected to pulsating lights that caused seizures in some and made others very sick.

Defending friendly and targeting adversary data-processing capabilities of the body appears to be an area of weakness in the US approach to information warfare theory, a theory oriented heavily toward systems data processing and designed to attain information dominance on the battlefield. Or so it would appear from information in the open, unclassified press. This US shortcoming may be a serious one, since the capabilities to alter the data processing systems of the body already exist. A recent edition of U.S. News and World Report highlighted several of these "wonder weapons" (acoustics, microwaves, lasers) and noted that scientists are "searching the electromagnetic and sonic spectrums for wavelengths that can affect human behavior." 3

A recent Russian military article offered a slightly different slant to the problem, declaring that "humanity stands on the brink of a psychotropic war" with the mind and body as the focus. That article discussed Russian and international attempts to control the psychophysical condition of man and his decision making processes by the use of VHF-generators, "noiseless cassettes," and other technologies.

An entirely new arsenal of weapons, based on devices designed to introduce subliminal messages or to alter the body's psychological and data processing capabilities, might be used to incapacitate individuals. These weapons aim to control or alter the psyche, or to attack the various sensory and data-processing systems of the human organism. In both cases, the goal is to confuse or destroy the signals that normally keep the body in equilibrium.

This article examines energy-based weapons, psychotropic weapons, and other developments designed to alter the ability of the human body to process stimuli. One consequence of this assessment is that the way we commonly use the term "information warfare" falls short when the individual soldier, not his equipment, becomes the target of attack.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Information Warfare Theory and the Data-Processing Element of Humans

In the United States, the common conception of information warfare focuses primarily on the capabilities of hardware systems such as computers, satellites, and military equipment which process data in its various forms. According to Department of Defense Directive S-3600. 1 of 9 December 1996, information warfare is defined as "an information operation conducted during time of crisis or conflict to achieve or promote specific objectives over a specific adversary or adversaries." An information operation is defined in the same directive as "actions taken to affect adversary information and information systems while defending one's own information and information systems." These "information systems" lie at the heart of the modernization effort of the US armed forces and other countries, and manifest themselves as hardware, software, communications capabilities, and highly trained individuals. Recently, the US Army conducted a mock battle that tested these systems under simulated combat conditions.

US Army Field Manual 101-5-1, Operational Terms and Graphics (released 30 September 1997), defines information warfare as "actions taken to achieve information superiority by affecting a hostile's information, information based-processes, and information systems, while defending one's own information, information processes, and information systems." The same manual defines information operations as a "continuous military operation within the military information environment that enables, enhances, and protects friendly forces" ability to collect, process, and act on information to achieve an advantage across the full range of military operations. [Information operations include] interacting with the Global Information Environment and exploiting or denying an adversary's information and decision capabilities." 4

This "systems" approach to the study of information warfare emphasizes the use of data, referred to as information, to penetrate an adversary's physical defenses that protect data (information) in order to obtain operational or strategic advantage. It has tended to ignore the role of the human body as an information- or data-processor in this quest for dominance except in those cases where an individual's logic or rational thought may be upset via disinformation or deception. As a consequence little attention is directed toward protecting the mind and body with a firewall as we have done with hardware systems. Nor have any techniques for doing so been prescribed. Yet the body is capable not only of being deceived, manipulated, or misinformed but also shut down or destroyed-just as any other data-processing system. The "data" the body receives from external sources-such as electromagnetic, vortex, or acoustic energy waves-or creates through its own electrical or chemical stimuli can be manipulated or changed just as the data (information) in any hardware system can be altered. The only body-related information warfare element considered by the United States is psychological operations (PSYOP). In Joint Publication 3-13.1, for example, PSYOP is listed as one of the elements of command and control warfare. The publication notes that "the ultimate target of [information warfare] is the information dependent process, whether human or automated Command and control warfare (C2W) is an application of information warfare in military operations.... C2W is the integrated use of PSYOP, military deception, operations security, electronic warfare and physical destruction." 5

One source defines information as a "nonaccidental signal used as an input to a

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

computer or communications system." 6

The human body is a complex communication system constantly receiving nonaccidental and accidental signal inputs, both external and internal. If the ultimate target of information warfare is the information-dependent process, "whether human or automated," then the definition in the joint publication implies that human data-processing of internal and external signals can clearly be considered an aspect of information warfare. Foreign researchers have noted the link between humans as data processors and the conduct of information warfare. While some study only the PSYOP link, others go beyond it. As an example of the former, one recent Russian article described offensive information warfare as designed to "use the Internet channels for the purpose of organizing PSYOP as well as for "early political warning" of threats to American interests."

7

The author's assertion was based on the fact that "all mass media are used for PSYOP . . . [and] today this must include the Internet." The author asserted that the Pentagon wanted to use the Internet to "reinforce psychological influences" during special operations conducted outside of US borders to enlist sympathizers, "who would accomplish many of the tasks previously entrusted to special units of the US armed forces."

Others, however, look beyond simple PSYOP ties to consider other aspects of the body's data-processing capability. One of the principal open source researchers on the relationship of information warfare to the body's data-processing capability is Russian Dr. Victor Solntsev of the Baumann Technical Institute in Moscow. Solntsev is a young, well-intentioned researcher striving to point out to the world the potential dangers of the computer/operator interface. Supported by a network of institutes and academies, Solntsev has produced some interesting concepts. 8

He insists that man must be viewed as an open system instead of simply as an organism or closed system. As an open system, man communicates with his environment through information flows and communications media. One's physical environment, whether through electromagnetic, gravitational, acoustic, or other effects, can cause a change in the psychophysiological condition of an organism, in Solntsev's opinion. Change of this sort could directly affect the mental state and consciousness of a computer operator. This would not be electronic war or information warfare in the traditional sense, but rather in a nontraditional and non-US sense. It might encompass, for example, a computer modified to become a weapon by using its energy output to emit acoustics that debilitate the operator. It also might encompass, as indicated below, futuristic weapons aimed against man's "open system."

Solntsev also examined the problem of "information noise," which creates a dense shield between a person and external reality. This noise may manifest itself in the form of signals, messages, images, or other items of information. The main target of this noise would be the consciousness of a person or a group of people. Behavior modification could be one objective of information noise; another could be to upset an individual's mental capacity to such an extent as to prevent reaction to any stimulus. Solntsev concludes that all levels of a person's psyche (subconscious, conscious, and "superconscious") are potential targets for destabilization. According to Solntsev, one computer virus capable of affecting a person's psyche is Russian Virus 666. It manifests

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

itself in every 25th frame of a visual display, where it produces a combination of colors that allegedly put computer operators into a trance. The subconscious perception of the new pattern eventually results in arrhythmia of the heart. Other Russian computer specialists, not just Solntsev, talk openly about this "25th frame effect" and its ability to subtly manage a computer user's perceptions. The purpose of this technique is to inject a thought into the viewer's subconscious. It may remind some of the subliminal advertising controversy in the United States in the late 1950s.

US VIEWS ON WONDER WEAPONS

ALTERING THE DATA-PROCESSING ABILITY OF THE BODY

What technologies have been examined by the United States that possess the potential to disrupt the data-processing capabilities of the human organism? The 7 July 1997 issue of U.S. News and World Report described several of them designed, among other things, to vibrate the insides of humans, stun or nauseate them, put them to sleep, heat them up, or knock them down with a shock wave. 9

The technologies include dazzling lasers that can force the pupils to close; acoustic or sonic frequencies that cause the hair cells in the inner ear to vibrate and cause motion sickness, vertigo, and nausea, or frequencies that resonate the internal organs causing pain and spasms; and shock waves with the potential to knock down humans or airplanes and which can be mixed with pepper spray or chemicals. 10

With modification, these technological applications can have many uses. Acoustic weapons, for example, could be adapted for use as acoustic rifles or as acoustic fields that, once established, might protect facilities, assist in hostage rescues, control riots, or clear paths for convoys. These waves, which can penetrate buildings, offer a host of opportunities for military and law enforcement officials. Microwave weapons, by stimulating the peripheral nervous system, can heat up the body, induce epileptic-like seizures, or cause cardiac arrest. Low-frequency radiation affects the electrical activity of the brain and can cause flu-like symptoms and nausea. Other projects sought to induce or prevent sleep, or to affect the signal from the motor cortex portion of the brain, overriding voluntary muscle movements. The latter are referred to as pulse wave weapons, and the Russian government has reportedly bought over 100,000 copies of the "Black Widow" version of them. 11

However, this view of "wonder weapons" was contested by someone who should understand them. Brigadier General Larry Dodgen, Deputy Assistant to the Secretary of Defense for Policy and Missions, wrote a letter to the editor about the "numerous inaccuracies" in the U.S. News and World Report article that "misrepresent the Department of Defense's views." 12

Dodgen's primary complaint seemed to have been that the magazine misrepresented the use of these technologies and their value to the armed forces. He also underscored the US intent to work within the scope of any international treaty concerning their application, as well as plans to abandon (or at least redesign) any weapon for which countermeasures are known. One is left with the feeling, however, that research in this area is intense. A concern not mentioned by Dodgen is that other countries or nonstate actors may not be bound by the same constraints. It is hard to imagine someone with a greater desire than terrorists to get their hands on these technologies. "Psycho-terrorism"

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

could be the next buzzword.

RUSSIAN VIEWS ON "PSYCHOTROPIC WAR"

The term "psycho-terrorism" was coined by Russian writer N. Anisimov of the Moscow Anti-Psychotronic Center. According to Anisimov, psychotropic weapons are those that act to "take away a part of the information which is stored in a man's brain. It is sent to a computer, which reworks it to the level needed for those who need to control the man, and the modified information is then reinserted into the brain." These weapons are used against the mind to induce hallucinations, sickness, mutations in human cells, "zombification," or even death. Included in the arsenal are VHF generators, X-rays, ultrasound, and radio waves. Russian army Major I. Chemishev, writing in the military journal *Orienteer* in February 1997, asserted that "psy" weapons are under development all over the globe. Specific types of weapons noted by Chemishev (not all of which have prototypes) were:

A psychotropic generator, which produces a powerful electromagnetic emanation capable of being sent through telephone lines, TV, radio networks, supply pipes, and incandescent lamps.

An autonomous generator, a device that operates in the 10-150 Hertz band, which at the 10-20 Hertz band forms an infrasonic oscillation that is destructive to all living creatures.

A nervous system generator, designed to paralyze the central nervous systems of insects, which could have the same applicability to humans.

Ultrasound emanations, which one institute claims to have developed. Devices using ultrasound emanations are supposedly capable of carrying out bloodless internal operations without leaving a mark on the skin. They can also, according to Chemishev, be used to kill.

Noiseless cassettes. Chemishev claims that the Japanese have developed the ability to place infra-low frequency voice patterns over music, patterns that are detected by the subconscious. Russians claim to be using similar "bombardments" with computer programming to treat alcoholism or smoking.

The 25th-frame effect, alluded to above, a technique wherein each 25th frame of a movie reel or film footage contains a message that is picked up by the subconscious. This technique, if it works, could possibly be used to curb smoking and alcoholism, but it has wider, more sinister applications if used on a TV audience or a computer operator.

Psychotropics, defined as medical preparations used to induce a trance, euphoria, or depression. Referred to as "slow-acting mines," they could be slipped into the food of a politician or into the water supply of an entire city. Symptoms include headaches, noises, voices or commands in the brain, dizziness, pain in the abdominal cavities, cardiac arrhythmia, or even the destruction of the cardiovascular system.

There is confirmation from US researchers that this type of study is going on. Dr. Janet Morris, coauthor of *The Warrior's Edge*, reportedly went to the Moscow Institute of Psycho-Corrections in 1991. There she was shown a technique pioneered by the Russian Department of Psycho-Correction at Moscow Medical Academy in which researchers electronically analyze the human mind in order to influence it. They input subliminal

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

command messages, using key words transmitted in "white noise" or music. Using an infra-sound, very low frequency transmission, the acoustic psycho-correction message is transmitted via bone conduction. 13

In summary, Chemishev noted that some of the militarily significant aspects of the "psy" weaponry deserve closer research, including the following nontraditional methods for disrupting the psyche of an individual:

ESP research: determining the properties and condition of objects without ever making contact with them and "reading" peoples' thoughts

Clairvoyance research: observing objects that are located just beyond the world of the visible-used for intelligence purposes

Telepathy research: transmitting thoughts over a distance-used for covert operations

Telekinesis research: actions involving the manipulation of physical objects using thought power, causing them to move or break apart-used against command and control systems, or to disrupt the functioning of weapons of mass destruction.

Psychokinesis research: interfering with the thoughts of individuals, on either the strategic or tactical level. While many US scientists undoubtedly question this research, it receives strong support in Moscow. The point to underscore is that individuals in Russia (and other countries as well) believe these means can be used to attack or steal from the data-processing unit of the human body.

Solntsev's research, mentioned above, differs slightly from that of Chemishev. For example, Solntsev is more interested in hardware capabilities, specifically the study of the information-energy source associated with the computer/operator interface. He stresses that if these energy sources can be captured and integrated into the modern computer, the result will be a network worth more than "a simple sum of its components." Other researchers are studying high-frequency generators (those designed to stun the psyche with high frequency waves such as electromagnetic, acoustic, and gravitational); the manipulation or reconstruction of someone's thinking through planned measures such as reflexive control processes; the use of psychotronics, parapsychology, bioenergy, bio fields, and psycho energy; 14 and unspecified "special operations" or anti-ESP training.

The last item is of particular interest. According to a Russian TV broadcast, the strategic rocket forces have begun anti-ESP training to ensure that no outside force can take over command and control functions of the force. That is, they are trying to construct a firewall around the heads of the operators.

CONCLUSIONS

At the end of July 1997, planners for Joint Warrior Interoperability Demonstration '97 "focused on technologies that enhance real-time collaborative planning in a multinational task force of the type used in Bosnia and in Operation Desert Storm. The JWID '97 network, called the Coalition Wide Area Network (CWAN), is the first military network that allows allied nations to participate as full and equal partners." 15

The demonstration in effect was a trade fair for private companies to demonstrate their goods; defense ministries got to decide where and how to spend their money wiser, in many cases without incurring the cost of prototypes. It is a good example of doing

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

business better with less.

Technologies demonstrated included: 16

Soldiers using laptop computers to drag cross-hairs over maps to call in air strikes.

Soldiers carrying beepers and mobile phones rather than guns.

Generals tracking movements of every unit, counting the precise number of shells fired around the globe, and inspecting real-time damage inflicted on an enemy, all with multicolored graphics. 17

Every account of this exercise emphasized the ability of systems to process data and provide information feedback via the power invested in their microprocessors. The ability to affect or defend the data-processing capability of the human operators of these systems was never mentioned during the exercise; it has received only slight attention during countless exercises over the past several years. The time has come to ask why we appear to be ignoring the operators of our systems. Clearly the information operator, exposed before a vast array of potentially immobilizing weapons, is the weak link in any nation's military assets. There are few international agreements protecting the individual soldier, and these rely on the good will of the combatants. Some nations, and terrorists of every stripe, don't care about such agreements.

This article has used the term data-processing to demonstrate its importance in ascertaining what so-called information warfare and information operations are all about. Data-processing is the action this nation and others need to protect. Information is nothing more than the output of this activity. As a result, the emphasis on information-related warfare terminology ("information dominance," "information carousel") that has proliferated for a decade does not seem to fit the situation before us. In some cases the battle to affect or protect data-processing elements pits one mechanical system against another. In other cases, mechanical systems may be confronted by the human organism, or vice versa, since humans can usually shut down any mechanical system with the flip of a switch. In reality, the game is about protecting or affecting signals, waves, and impulses that can influence the data-processing elements of systems, computers, or people. We are potentially the biggest victims of information warfare, because we have neglected to protect ourselves.

Our obsession with a "system of systems," "information dominance," and other such terminology is most likely a leading cause of our neglect of the human factor in our theories of information warfare. It is time to change our terminology and our conceptual paradigm. Our terminology is confusing us and sending us in directions that deal primarily with the hardware, software, and communications components of the data-processing spectrum. We need to spend more time researching how to protect the humans in our data management structures. Nothing in those structures can be sustained if our operators have been debilitated by potential adversaries or terrorists who—right now—may be designing the means to disrupt the human component of our carefully constructed notion of a system of systems.

END NOTES

1. I. Chemishev, "Can Rulers Make "Zombies" and Control the World?" Orienteer, February 1997, pp. 58-62.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

2. Douglas Pasternak, "Wonder Weapons," U.S. News and World Report, 7 July 1997, pp. 3846.

3. Ibid., p. 38.

4. FM 101-5-1, Operational Terms and Graphics, 30 September 1997, p. 1-82.

5. Joint Pub 3-13.1, Joint Doctrine for Command and Control Warfare (C2W), 7 February 1996, p. v.

6. The American Heritage Dictionary (2d College Ed.; Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1982), p. 660, definition 4.

7. Denis Snezhnyy, "Cybernetic Battlefield & National Security," Nezavisimoye Voennoye Obozreniye, No. 10, 15-21 March 1997, p. 2.

8. Victor I. Solntsev, "Information War and Some Aspects of a Computer Operator's Defense," talk given at an Infer Conference in Washington, D.C., September 1996, sponsored by the National Computer Security Association. Information in this section is based on notes from Dr. Solntsev's talk.

9. Pasternak, p. 40.

10. Ibid., pp. 40-46.

11. Ibid.

12. Larry Dodgen, "Nonlethal Weapons," U.S. News and World Report, 4 August 1997, p. 5.

13. "Background on the Aviary," Nexus Magazine, downloaded from the Internet on 13 July 1997 from www.execpc.com/vjentpr/nexusavi.html, p.7.

14. Aleksandr Cherkasov, "The Front Where Shots Aren't Fired," Orienteer, May 1995, p. 45. This article was based on information in the foreign and Russian press, according to the author, making it impossible to pinpoint what his source was for this reference.

15. Bob Brewin, "DOD looks for IT "golden nuggets," Federal Computer Week, 28 July 1997, p. 31, as taken from the Earlybird Supplement, 4 August 1997, p. B 17.

16. Oliver August, "Zap! Hard day at the office for NATO's laptop warriors," The Times, 28 July 1997, as taken from the Earlybird Supplement, 4 August 1997, p. B 16.

17. Ibid.

MIND CONTROL

Years of technology developed with Project Rainbow and the Phoenix Project may have been used during the Gulf War. Most Americans had the opportunity to watch the live briefings of the Persian Gulf war on CNN. Five briefings, to the astute listener, nearly always disclose revealing information that later will be edited out.

A CNN reporter said that he had just returned from Kuwait where he had travelled with an American patrol. They had observed a patrol of about thirty Iraqis some distance away and the Americans were wondering how they would get them to surrender.

A U.S. helicopter suddenly appeared and flew over the Iraqi patrol, and by the time the helicopter had reached the next sand dune, they had surrendered.

This is very unusual because these were the same Iraqis who waged unrelenting Holy War against Iran for eight years.

Later, as the land battle was winding down, a BBC reporter asked about American

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

plans to get the Iraqi soldiers out of the deep, well-fortified bunkers built by the Germans. General Neil started to say, "We bring in the psychological..."

He then broke his sentence with a cough, apparently having caught himself saying something he shouldn't reveal. When he stopped coughing, he said the Army flew in with PA helicopters and "talked them out."

It seems apparent that the General had made a mistake and had to cover up something like: "psychological warfare broadcasting helicopters" with "PA helicopters."

Even after massive pinpoint air bombardment, the Iraqis were still alive and well protected in the bunkers. They had electricity, entertainment and enough food and water to last for about six months. They also had equipment to tunnel out if prime entrances were blocked.

That these fanatic soldiers would have surrendered under the slight threat of PA system helicopters is absurd and, knowing of the mind control experiments being conducted by the U.S. military and intelligence agencies, it seems reasonable to assume that mind control or subliminal transmissions were used to coax the Iraqis to surrender en masse, so many, in fact, that coalition forces were hard-pressed to house, feed and guard them!

A HISTORY LESSON ABOUT AMERICA'S MIND CONTROL PROJECTS

While the Phoenix Project was investigating weather and the use of radiosondes (which has evolved into HAARP), Project Rainbow resurfaced in 1947 or 1948. Project Rainbow (The Philadelphia Experiment) was funded to continue research into the phenomena encountered on the USS Eldridge. This project was concerned with the electromagnetic technology.

Dr. John von Neumann and his research team, loaned to the Manhattan Project during the Second War, were called back and put to work on a new agenda. It was similar to Rainbow but had a different goal. They were to find out how to protect humans within an electromagnetic field so vessels and crews could be transported through space and time without harm to either or any.

By the early 1950's, Project Rainbow and the radiosonde weather project were included under the same funding and "Phoenix Project" was used as a cover title to refer to all of these "black" activities.

Dr. von Neumann, a mathematician and theoretical physicist who came from Germany, was placed in charge of Phoenix. He was noted for his advanced concepts of space and time. He originated and built the first vacuum tube computer at Princeton University, where he served as the head of the Institute for Advanced Study. He had the ability to apply advanced theories to technology and, because of these qualifications, he could easily communicate with Einstein and acted as liaison between him and engineers serving on the project.

Von Neumann quickly learned that he was going to have to study metaphysics; to understand the metaphysical side of man.

The Rainbow experiment had disassembled the physical and biological structure of human beings. Crew members had melded with bulkheads and changed beyond recognition. Those who had survived were quite mad or died later from madness and

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

some strange internal burning.

Project engineers and scientists spent nearly ten years working out why human beings had troubles with electromagnetic fields that lofted them through different times and spaces. It now appears they discovered that humans are born with what is known as a "time reference" point. At conception, an energy being (human) is attached to a time line and must begin life manifest as flesh from that point. To understand this, it is necessary to view the "energy being" or soul as completely different from the physical body.

Our references as both a physical and metaphysical being appears to have origin in the time reference residing within the electromagnetic background of Earth. This time reference is the basic orientation point to the way the universe operates. Time, in the normal context, appears always to flow in one direction-, forwardâ at least to our limited senses.

But the Rainbow technology apparently creates an alternate reality having its existence entirely within the quantum field, literally transferring material objects out of our "normal" time and space. This accounts for the light-invisibility of the USS Eldridge and her crew.

The alternate reality created by the shift has no time references because it is not part of the normal forward flow of time. For the person who was experiencing the phenomenon uninstructed, it would be like having an intense and enduring nightmare wherein nothing makes any sense. So Phoenix engineers were faced with solving the problem of letting human test subjects get into and out of the quantum field without harm by somehow connecting them to the time reference they could recognize as the planet Earth. This meant that when they were in the alternate reality, they had to be equipped mentally with something that would give them a "real time" reference.

Engineers solved this by feeding in all the required natural background information of the Earth to convince test subjects of a continuous stream real earth time reference so they would not experience trans-dimensional disorders. Test subjects would believe they were still in Earth "real-time."

Dr. von Neumann was the ideal Director for the Phoenix Projects. He knew computers would have to be used if they were going to calculate the time references of specific people and replicate those references while they were in the quantum field, otherwise the test subjects would be experiencing essentially "no reality" or a continuous nightmare reality at best.

The computer had to be programmed to generate an electromagnetic background with which the test subjects could synchronize. If not done, the soul and the physical body time and space reference points would be out of sync, resulting in dissolution and insanity or inability to return to Earth real time.

Because they were dealing with two separate and distinct entitiesâ 'the spiritual human and the physical humanâ' the time reference would be required to lock in the spirit and the electromagnetic background would be required to lock in the body. The technology, begun in 1948, was apparently fully developed by 1967, during the height of the Vietnam conflict.

When the project's first phase was complete, a report was submitted to the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Congressional committee from which funds had been appropriated. Congressional members were told that the consciousness of man could definitely be affected by electromagnetism and, additionally, that it would be possible to develop electronic hardware and software that could literally change the way a person thinks about anything and everything.

The committee, fearing they would be first on the list of new test subjects, refused to refinance and Project Phoenix was disbanded in 1969.

But the scientists and engineers at Brookhaven had spent too much time, effort and money on Phoenix to just scrap it and walk away. Their empire was in place, the technology was secure, and the engineers were looking for a mission. What they needed was funding from a secret agency to continue with the mind control experiments. The military seemed the most logical source.

When told a device had been developed that would alter the way peopleâ and particularly soldiersâ would think and act, military pundits were beside themselves with joy. Such a device could not only change the outcome of a battle already begun, it might be used to convince entire populations that war is not only unnecessary, but completely impossible. Or that total war was the only solution to a political crisis.

Phoenix had found its mission.

SPINAL TAP

THE INTELLIGENCE AGENCIES DISCOVER MIND CONTROL.

Exploration into telepathy, teleportation, transportation, levitation and tentative excursions backward and forward in time has continued almost without cease from 1943 until the present time. The results of the experiments aboard the USS Eldridge, disastrous as they might have been at the time, provided fuel and data for a series of programs and black projects that now consumes a great portion of America's defense budgets.

Scientists and engineers learned how to alter and direct weather, how to create storms or to vanquish natural storms by tapping into the planet's energy and turning it on or off at will. This series, under the title of Project Phoenix, would later absorb Project Rainbow and others, and the entire curriculum would be known as Phoenix.

One facet of the Phoenix Project was intense research into various areas of paranormal activity, particularly telepathy. The military was well aware that the Soviets were involved in paranormal research, and they knew that if sensitive espers could be found who possessed skills or powers strong enough to nullify Soviet espers or even overpower them, America might have an incredible superweapon with whom they could defeat any foe, military or civilian.

When Congress refused to refinance Phoenix and disbanded the group, they had no idea some zealous scientists would seek support elsewhere. When scientists approached the military and told them what they had accomplished and what could be developed from the research, facilities were eagerly prepared, equipment purchased and millions of dollars began to appear from more than one unknown source. By 1970 the Brookhaven group as well as several elite universities worldwide were deeply involved in paranormal research. Some of these splinter projects involved use of drugs and hallucinogens; others did not. Some experiments were conducted using electromagnetic fields. A few purists

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

tapped only the mind-power of their test subjects (whom they considered "expendables").

Investigation quickly revealed that telepathic waves, while not radio waves, behaved similar to radio waves and could, therefore, be controlled, modulated and directed with the use of proper equipment. Scientists were elated. They had discovered (or rediscovered) electromagnetic functions unlike anything ever reported in scientific journals and textbooks. They were on the verge of wholly new discoveries in human mind power.

Because the projects were funded by and controlled by the military and federal intelligence agencies, the data gathered was delivered to them and filed away in war rooms and at secret military bases. The general public, by and large, was wholly unaware of these insidious mind-probing activities.

Out of early research came the revelation that certain radio frequencies in the 410-420 MHz range could effectively block human thought patterns, leaving test subjects unable to perform their tasks. Unknown to the researchers and test subjects at the time, the military had established a secret base on the east coast and was using a jamming device in the form of a modified radar antenna that, for 14 years, from 1970 until about 1984, beamed thought altering electromagnetic frequencies toward thousands of Americans in dozens of New England communities.

These thought altering waves would cause crowds to gather and then suddenly disperse in bewilderment; cause an increase in crime, including murder, in areas receiving the frequencies, and stimulated increased delinquency and rebellion among teenagers. When the signals were turned off, these communities would return to normal. The body snatchers had arrived!

When the base was suddenly abandoned in 1983 or 1984, the former residents left behind nearly all their equipment, papers and military orders. Military transfer orders discovered by other researchers were complete and accurate in every detail, except that some had large words scrawled across them: GONE!

This odd defacing of official government orders could not be explained until further investigation revealed what intelligence agencies had paid for at the secret base. They apparently had been sending their test subjects, all males, some military, some civilians, back and forth through time! Espers found the base surrounded with unusual vibrations and images; remnants of unusual weather patterns, mind control and beings that had been created from the ether out of the thoughts of test subjects. The investigators were certain something remarkable had happened at the facility and set out to discover what it was. Their focal starting point was the premise that everyone on the base had vanished at nearly the same time, perhaps the same day, and that they had no time to actually shut down the base or decommission it officially. In fact, the base did not officially exist. Except that it was in a state of general disarray when they arrived, investigators found materials, machines, supplies, reports, buildings and support gear in place as if the base might still be operational. But all the people were gone.

WITHOUT A TRACE.

Citizens in nearby cities revealed that while the base was operating, strange things, other than increase in crime and delinquency, had happened. Large groups of animals

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

would suddenly charge into town and crash through windows. It snowed in August. Hurricane force winds suddenly came from nowhere and as quickly subsided. Thunderstorms, lightning and hail would appear and vanish when no meteorological indications of such violent storms had been present. (This is now caused by HAARP).

In 1947, federal agencies in America began an extensive research project into the specific control of weather. This was the original Phoenix project and was developed from data provided earlier by Austrian scientist Dr. Wilhelm Reich. Most of his research data was burned by the U.S. Food and Drug Administration and is no longer available for general reading.

Dr. Reich was best known for his discovery of a force he called "orgone" energy, orgasmic or life energy, the existence of which he proved in his lab. While this discovery in itself, associated with the Newtonian concept of "the ether," was not earth-shaking, he soon ran afoul of the medical authorities when he claimed his control of the life energy, the waveform nature of the cosmic ether, cured cancer. In 1940s America, such a proclamation was certain to be a decree of professional suicide.

Still, Reich found practical uses for his waveform energy to control and modify weather by modulating the amount of "orgone" within a storm. Varying amounts of orgone were found to reside in biological organisms as well as in every square inch of cosmic space. By using electromagnetic force fields, Reich was ultimately able to reduce the violence of natural storms, a feat he promptly and foolishly reported to the government.

But the government had been closely following Dr. Reich's experiments and already knew what he could do. They asked for, and received, all his prototype equipment and research papers and quickly used the information to advance their own weather research (HAARP).

This research combined the radio meteorograph, a balloon lofted weather monitor, with Reich's "orgone buster" and produced the devices now known as radiosondes. In the 1950s, radiosondes were lofted by balloon into the atmosphere at the rates of about 200 per day. Despite the government's cover story that the radiosondes were lofted to gather weather data, no receivers for the transmitters aboard have never been discovered and the government was able, through a chain of disinformation, to preserve the secrecy of the weather altering devices for over forty years.

Even if radiosondes were used to nullify violent storms on the eastern seaboard, the potential exists to use them to actually create violent storms and to direct them toward specific targets, communities and factories or military bases, which research has been reported in the former Soviet Union for about thirty years.

According to investigators who have pursued weather control, the joint RAFB/USAFB Woodbridge-Bentwaters, just north of London, England, was partially destroyed by a man-made storm. Huge tracts of lovely forest on and around the base were literally pulled out by the roots during a sudden, violent, localized storm of great intensity, a disaster which is lamented by citizens from nearby communities to this day.

PHOENIX II

Research into mind control produces some dangerous and unexpected results: TIME-TRIPPING!

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Of all the mind-control experiments conducted in the 1970s and 1980s, those of the Phoenix Project produced some of the most bizarre and unexpected results. While they were primarily interested in altering the moods and behavior of test subjects, scientists at Phoenix quickly learned that they could beam specific controlled frequencies to produce specific mood changes and thought patterns.

Once they had learned this, they beamed those frequencies all over the New England area to see how they could alter the thoughts of local citizens. Those tests produced the results already discussed.

Test subjects were bombarded with many different pulse rates and widths as scientists tried to determine which pulses made the person cry, laugh, sleep, violent, etc. They discovered that when the equipment was operating, the mood of everyone at the facility would change.

From this they concluded that the person did not have to be in the direct path of the beamed frequencies to be affected by the mind control pulses. Their newly found weapon of RF power gave them a virtual doorway to the human mind! Next on the agenda was to discover what was inside and how they could alter it permanently.

Unfortunately, several people died of massive brain damage during the early tests when exposed to long periods of intense pulses of microwave energy. After this problem was solved, the scientists began compiling a data base of pulses and frequencies that produced the results they were looking for and, by 1972, had developed a non-burning, nonlethal technology and began using it almost continually on military personnel and nearby communities.

A natural outcome of these experiments was changing the frequencies to see which produced the best results. From these rapid and random frequency change tests there emerged the first useful ideas and mechanics of time-tripping which would be used later to purposefully send test subjects out of this time/space continuum.

By about 1975, shortly after cessation of hostilities in Vietnam, the Phoenix Project was in full swing with computers, a comprehensive data base covering a broad range of cause and effect, and all the new, powerful transmitters they required to begin beaming their subliminal transmissions over a large area of the American Northeast.

This pulse, when it can be heard above local noise, sounds like a diesel engine running at idle about a mile away and is just at the low end of human hearing. In some areas, a pulse attributed to Soviet experiments is at a very low frequency and sounds like a "woodpecker" at the 5Hz to 8Hz range on shortwave radios. This low pulse has been detected in the Seattle, Washington area and, most recently, in the New England area.

New technology almost always produces unimagined side-effects and Phoenix was no exception. When directed at automobiles, certain pulses could cause engines to stop running and electrical instruments to malfunction. Even animals could be agitated to do strange things. So the scientists had not only a machine that could disable automobiles and machines of war, they had, by the early 1980s, built and programmed a device that would allow them access to the human mind and complete thought control over every citizen of the world. They could turn us on and off like lights, but further research was

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

required to determine which switches needed to be on and in what order to produce the desired effect on a mass scale.

Help was already available and funds were pouring in from private and secret sources. Phoenix had a wealth of supporters, all of whom expected to reap great financial rewards from the new mind-control technology. Some contributors would gain from the manufacture and sale of the hardware and software; some would gain from sale of machines to the military; others would gain by programming consumers to purchase their advertised products and services. Apparently no one stopped to think of those who were going to lose: the peopleâ those into whose minds the programs would be fed.

But the most important discovery was just around the corner. While they were refining the mind-reading/thought control research, the scientists would stumble onto time-tripping .

Facilities were expanded, equipment upgraded, new Cray computers cooled with synthetic human blood were installed to decode the messages returning from the brains of test subjects, and translators were placed into the loop to convert the electrical signals into actual pictures which could be displayed on television monitors.

The engineers, funded by some of the largest communications companies in the world, were able from that time to listen to, read and watch the thoughts of their test subjects! They could hear and see what was going on inside their minds. They could join in conversations and record running dialogues. They could vary pulses to change the test subject's mood and actually see what the effect produced.

After refinements, the translator was changed into a transmitter; that is, the thoughts of the subject, instead of being merely recorded into a data base, were going to be transmitted to other test subjects who were conducting time tripping experiments to give them a "real time" reference to present time Earth. This reference was found to be necessary so time-trippers would not become disoriented and lost in the quantum field which might produce images vastly different from those the test subjects recently left.

But the "dreamers" or "scanners" could not always lock onto images and hold them for long periods of time and several time-trippers were lost before the "real time" images were converted to computer images that could be locked on for indefinite periods.

It was at this point and with the aid of the Cray and IBM computers and the new "virtual reality" imaging technology that time-tripping became possible without the dangers inherent in the earlier systems which used human scanners who were unable to generate continuous images to those traveling through the quantum field.

Theoretically, time moves in one direction only: forward. There are, however, very subtle shifts in time that most people cannot detect and of which only very astute and sensitive people are aware. One of these subtle shifts is the phenomena of *deja vu* or "second view." Another is precognition or viewing events in another time before they happen in this time.

I experience these episodes so often that I don't even consider them unusual anymore. They are, as far as I can determine, good evidence that some people have existed in more than one time in the same lifetime and that the friends we gather here are gathered there as well. I suspect this construct would be a parallel universe since things there are

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

as familiar as they are here, however, I am not certain in which of the realities the events actually occur first.

Once the time shifts and scan lock problems had been solved with computers, the scientists could conjure up a "pseudo-time" that would tie the time travelers to an Earth reality. This would keep them from getting lost and allow them to find their way back through the quantum field vortex being generated at the facility.

But, because the computers could now generate images that appeared real and solid, the scientists realized they could project or broadcast them and cause people outside the facility to believe they were actually seeing creatures and machines interacting with them. These images were particularly apparent to people who had more than normal sensory perception and, because many of those people report what they think they see, the scientists have been able to compile a small list of potential receptors (espers) who generally incorrectly translate the images and pass them on to nonsensitive people.

This mind control through intermediaries (the espers) has been actively conducted since about 1975 or 1976 and accounts for almost all reports of alien abduction other than those incidents attributed to actual abduction by military or federal intelligence agencies for medical or psychological research.

The early tests, under the cover title of "The Seeing Eye" were conducted to determine how easily espers, linked with computer-generated virtual images, could influence the general population. The scanner or "Scannate" projects were born of this new technology and were employed by several different intelligence agencies during the cold war to find submarines, troop staging areas and underground facilities of the enemy. Some of them continue even now at secret bases in American western states.

The only purpose of the new technology being directed at American citizens is to load thoughts into their minds to make them do things they would not ordinarily do, including murder, suicide, madness, or purchasing items they do not want and cannot use. By 1984, as predicted by George Orwell, Big Brother was inside your head and you didn't even know it.

SPACE ENOUGH AND TIME

THE FIRST TEST SUBJECTS GO THROUGH THE QUANTUM FIELD VORTEX.

After the electromagnetic fields and computer-generated images were refined and perfected, the Phoenix Project scientists began conducting a series of comprehensive tests to determine how effective their subliminal transmission were on the general population.

By 1980 they were transmitting mental images of hairy anthropoid creatures, flying saucers and grey aliens across a large area of North America. All the while they compiled vast data bases and continuously altered frequencies and programs.

Other departments were creating storms and hurricanes and causing floods and blizzards as they perfected their weather machines to be used (they claimed) as weapons of war. We wonder—since Americans became the test subjects—against whom they intended to wage this unholy war? Most certainly from 1980 until the present time, this war has been waged against Americans.

The first hint of something new and exciting came early in 1980 when someone

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

observed that an artificial event occurred before it was transmitted, and others were observed hours or days after they were broadcast. These astounding observations led the scientists and engineers to conclude that the broadcasts were getting lost in time and were being shifted or rebroadcast sooner or later than they should have been.

Further investigation revealed that time shifting was, indeed, occurring. By reconstructing the events and tracing the cause of the shift, they were ultimately able to isolate and control the moment and duration of the shift. They had, by accident, discovered how to manipulate or "bend" time. Because their present equipment was barely adequate to fulfill the requirements of the time shifting, they requested and obtained new and more powerful electronic devices, most of which were installed and operational by 1981. By surrounding their test subjects with powerful electromagnetic fields, they were able to create the effect produced aboard the USS Eldridge but with a great deal more control. They had found the portal into the quantum field and began tentatively to explore it, discovering in rapid succession, null time in which all things material and ethereal exists at one and the same moment in all planes as "being" before the creation of the manifest cosmos; negative time (past); present time; positive time (future) and proof of parallel universes also having their own past, present and future times! It was into this vast unknown quantum field the scientists intended to project their test subjects.

Immediately there were problems. People vanished and were never retrieved from the vortex. They appeared to have fallen into the rabbit hole and not found their way out again. It was from these calamities that the computer-generated links were devised. These "real time" links would serve as a lifeline for the time trippers, allowing them to find the portals so they could return to present earth time and space. It established a "zero time" or beginning and ending reference for the travelers.

During the early phase of this refinement, and because they worried about losing their trained psychics, it became routine to take homeless people from the alleys and streets and project them into the vortex. If they were lost no one would even miss them. If they returned, they were forced to relate their adventures and then they were projected into the vortex again for additional tests. When they outlived their usefulness or if the scientists feared they might remember what happened and tell someone else, they were projected in and the computer links were shut down. Hundreds of people may have been lost in this manner.

Once the zero time and the image links were perfected and programmed into the computers, the human psychics in the loop were deemed unnecessary and they were taken out, primarily because they were unable to consistently lock in the real time images required to maintain the link between this time and "other" time. The project was now totally controlled by vast electromagnetic generators and computers.

Most of the base personnelâ 'those who had not succumbed to the project' had been transferred to other assignments. New crews arrived to guard and maintain the base.

Civilian cadres were down-sized and many of the psychics were cut loose. Many of them simply disappeared. Between 1981 and 1983 a large number of successful, if mostly tentative, excursions had been made forward and backward through time in parallel and alternate universes as well as projections back and forth in earth time. During the trips back into earth time, a number of significant historic political events were altered.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

They explored the vortex in Earth's past and future, sampling air and water and observing the evolution of society and the loss of natural resources, altering those events that would have caused natural or manmade disasters in the future. These alterations have bent the earth's time line and forced it out of its original direction and chronology. Those of us living since 1983 are not the people we would have become had not the time-trippers altered our time/space.

Because the transmitter could be tuned to any point or time, travelers were often projected into parallel universes and into past, present and future time. The vortex was described by test subjects as being a passageway, brightly lit and having branches and side tunnels. They described their trips, their missions and their return trips.

It is interesting to note that, while hours or even months might pass while they were performing tasks in the alternate or parallel time, the trippers almost always returned to the exact moment they left Earth's real time. To the casual observer, they would have appeared not to have gone anywhere at all!

"There was not," claimed one scientist, "more than a slight bending of light rays to indicate the test jumpers had gone into the vortex. They reappeared, after having performed tasks for weeks, in the next second."

The project, sophisticated as it was by 1983, was not without danger. More than one tripper was abandoned in the vortex when power fluctuated or was lost. Still, both volunteers and conscripts, all males between the ages of 16 and 24 years, and in the total number of perhaps ten thousand, were being lofted into the vortex on a daily basis, many of them equipped with transmitting devices that could send messages and images back to the test facility, and many others with mining and survival equipment. A large number of these trippers did not return to present day earth and it is to be assumed that theirs was a one-way mission through time. They were not expected to return and, indeed, must have agreed not to.

From this revelation, many are led to conclude that the trippers were sent through the vortex to terraform a distant planet or, perhaps, to colonize a near celestial body such as the moon or Mars.

Several sources have indicated that manned landings were made on Mars as early as 1962 and there is some evidence to suggest that the first large group of colonists were lofted to the Martian and lunar surfaces by the Brookhaven group using their time/space bending technology. Something is certainly going on up there, particularly at the Martian South Pole where a complex resembling a water extraction and treatment plant has been photographed in great detail!

To understand time, one must remember that "time" as a thing does not actually exist. "Time" is the orderly progression of events occurring only in the mind of the observer and only within the limits of the particular universe in which they are manifest. These same (or similar) events may also occur at the same moment in a parallel universe. If the observer was projected suddenly into the parallel universe, he might not even be aware that a shift had occurred, except that he might experience some vertigo or an episode of *deja vu*. Generally these episodes are nullified with a shake of the head or a shrug of the shoulders.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

The observer appears to be in his own real time and continues with his life as if he were. He is totally unaware that a time shift occurred or that he was momentarily in the vortex. These sudden and unexplained shifts may have no direct impact on one's future. On the other hand, they may have profound effects on all of humankind, for the act of changing the time line of a single person is tantamount to changing everyone's time line. The alternate future, once established, becomes fixed until or unless someone goes into the vortex to tamper with it again.

Because the time line has already been altered, first accidentally with the Philadelphia Experiment and then purposefully during the Phoenix Project, we find ourselves in a time lock in which everything appears to be progressing normally but is, in fact, progressing through altered time.

Events are getting away from us. Our control over normal chores diminishes. Events occur for which there are no logical answers. The weather has gone haywire. People have gone mad and the prisons are full to overflowing. We've jumped sideways and are having trouble finding our way back to 1943.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

CHAPTER SIX 'OUMUAMUA'—THE SCOUT

This event began on October 19, 2017 when Robert Weryk, a telescope operator at PAN-STARRS in Haleakala, Hawaii discovered an object passing near the Earth. All of the asteroids or comets that we have seen before are gravitationally bound to the sun, so they come back again and again, just like a ball being tossed into the air returns to us. Now comes this peculiar object that does not act like a ball coming back to us; it appears to be a ball that was thrown *at* us.

And, so, here we have a visitor that comes for dinner but, by the time we notice how strange this visitor is, it has already departed through the door into the dark night and we couldn't really chase it because it moves much too rapidly. So, the question is: from whence came this unusual object and what is its true nature?

This object was named 'Oumuamua' because it was discovered in Hawaii and 'Oumuamua' in Hawaiian means 'Scout,' a visitor from a distant location who has come to see us for the first time.

The simplest approach to discover the true nature of this tourist is to imagine the sun as the lamppost that illuminates this neighborhood and as these objects approach Earth, we can detect them by reflected sunlight. After the first week of observation it became clear the object was changing its brightness by a factor of ten every eight hours. That is an extreme change of brilliance from any other asteroid or comet that we have seen before.

So the question is: 'What, exactly, is it?'

Is it a comet or an asteroid? A piece of rock, extremely shaped? Or perhaps it is shedding some gas and simply behaving as a comet. Oddly enough, there was no cometary tail and, moreover, the Spitzer telescope looked for carbon-based molecules, assigning very tight limits to the existence of gas, and found none. So it became clear that this object was not a comet.

In 2018 a paper was published in Nature Magazine arguing that this object deviated from an orbit that is shaped purely by gravity. *It actually changed course.* And, so, the lack of a cometary tail, lack of gases around the object, and the course change implied that it must be very weird, unlike any comet or asteroid we have ever observed before in this solar system.

At that point astronomers began wondering if, perhaps, it was of artificial origin; that

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

it may not be a rock and might be something else. Respected astronomers were consulted and they all said the same thing: that this object looks very peculiar.

Their paper suggested that, perhaps, the extra push that Oumuamua received during its passage near Earth was from reflected sunlight and, as a result, it must be much thinner than its length, less than a millimeter thick and tens of meters in expanse, sort of like a giant sail. So if one had to imagine, one would think of it as a very flattened configuration that would look like an umbrella or a sheet wafting through space.

The situation is similar to a sail on a sailboat that is pushed by wind. As air bounces off the sail, the boat is pushed forward and the same, potentially, could happen to an object in space if it reflects sunlight. The only possible origin for an object as thin as one millimeter and as broad as tens of meters that approaches our planet and then turns away, is an artificial one.

About 70 years ago, Enrico Fermi, who was a distinguished physicist, went to lunch with colleagues, and they were discussing the search for extraterrestrial intelligence. At some point in the discussion, Fermi asked, 'Where is everyone? If they are out there, why haven't we received a signal from them?'

That became one of the arguments as to why we might be alone in the cosmos. However, over the decades since then, there have been numerous attempts to answer Fermi's paradox. One solution is that civilizations are relatively short-lived. As soon as they develop modern technology, they also develop the means for their own destruction. As a result of that, we might find artifacts on planets—bones, perhaps—we might find abandoned equipment falling through space in the form of defunct technologies, or we might even find functional equipment in space such as our two Voyagers that are still proceeding outbound from this solar system.

Another answer to Fermi's paradox is that we are not interesting enough, being sort of like ants on the pavement that no one pays attention to because ants are just so common and insignificant, and we need to prove that we are of importance before we can receive any meaningful communication.

Our hope is that as soon as we leave this solar system, and move into interstellar space, we will get a signal back telling us, 'Welcome to the Interstellar Club.' It will be the first indication that we are worth while of the attention of other beings out there.

If it transpires that Oumuamua was a very unique object in the sense that it went directly to the heart of this solar system where life may exist—the habitable zone—then one would suspect that there was a specific agenda driving its mission; that it came to spy on the happenings of the inner region of the Milky Way.

There is another strange aspect of Oumuamua and that is that, in the framework of the Milky Way galaxy, the object was standing still and the galaxy collided with it. In that aspect it could be one of an array of relay stations that transmit information throughout the cosmos, sort of like a vast cellphone network.

Here is an interesting way to think about it: The very first time that we develop the technology to search for and discover an object like Oumuamua, we find it! This is tantamount to throwing a fishing line into a lake and catching a large fish on the first throw. It means there are many more fish and if Oumuamua is of extraterrestrial origin,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

there must be many more out there just waiting for us to catch up with them.

If it transpires that there are not any more fish, it could be that this is an artificial object lofted in our direction with a specific purpose. Since we are in the process of developing solar sails, it does not appear as speculation that Oumuamua was mastered by another civilization and *that* idea has allowed scientists to posit that Oumuamua is, indeed, a light sail, a solar sail, an artifact created by an unknown civilization.

Irrespective of whether Oumuamua is of natural origin or artificial origin, one thing is clear: its nursery is very different from this solar system and by giving thought to it, we will learn something new.

We do not know what we do not know.

Generally speaking, major advances in science are accomplished through the discovery of anomalies. These are phenomena that cannot be explained in terms of things that we already know. The way to approach them is to develop new theories that will expand our understanding of the cosmos. These are concepts that are not in the same box we have been working with for centuries and we should entertain all possibilities and rule them out one by one, based on additional data and evidence.

Discovery of Oumuamua *is* an anomaly in that it is an object from a population that we have not anticipated discovering so early in our space game. Moreover, this particular object is unlike any other object we have encountered in the solar system before. We should leave it on the table and give it suitable consideration. As Sherlock Holmes' dictum states: '***When you rule out all other possibilities, whatever remains must be the truth.***'

We should follow that paradigm when pursuing our science, having no prejudices, remaining open-minded, polarizing thoughts that are not within the box, within the orthodoxy, all of which is a part of innovation and scientific enquiry.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

UNCONTROLLED AND OUT OF CONTROL

Dr. Robert Becker comments that "Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with 'voices' or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin."

A new hypothesis of Alien Abduction

Section I. Introduction

Section II. The Technology

Section III. Applications

Section IV. Abductions

I. INTRODUCTION

One wag has dubbed the problem "Terra and the Pirates."

The pirates, ostensibly, are marauders from another solar system; their victims include a growing number of troubled human beings who insist that they've been shanghaied by these otherworldly visitors. An outlandish scenario - yet through the works of such authors as Budd Hopkins¹ and Whitley Strieber,² the "alien abduction" syndrome has seized the public imagination. Indeed, tales of UFO contact threaten to lapse into fashionability, even though, as I have elsewhere noted,³ they may still inflict a formidable social price upon the claimant.

Some time ago, I began to research these claims, concentrating my studies on the social and political environment surrounding these events. As I studied, the project grew and its scope widened. Indeed, I began to feel as though I'd gone digging through familiar terrain only to unearth Gomorrah.

These excavations may have disgorged a solution.

THE PROBLEM

Among ufologists, the term "abduction" has come to refer to an infinitely confounding experience, or matrix of experiences, shared by a dizzying number of individuals, who claim that travellers from the stars have scooped them out of their beds, or snatched them from their cars, and subjected them to interrogations, quasi-medical examinations, and "instruction" periods.

Usually, these sessions are said to occur within alien spacecraft; frequently, the stories include terrifying details reminiscent of the tortures inflicted in Germany's death camps. The abductees often (though not always) lose all memory of these events; they find themselves back in their cars or beds, unable to account for hours of "missing time."

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Hypnosis, or some other trigger, can bring back these haunted hours in an explosion of recollection - and as the smoke clears, an abductee will often spot a trail of similar experiences, stretching all the way back to childhood.

Perhaps the oddest fact of these odd tales: Many abductees, for all their vividly-recollected agonies, claim to love their alien tormentors. That's the word I've heard repeatedly: love.

Within the community of "scientific ufologists" those lonely, all too little-heard advocates of reasonable and open-minded debate on matters saucerological -these claims have elicited cautious interest and a commendable restraint from conclusion-hopping. Outside the higher realms of scientific ufology, the situation is, alas, quite different. In the popular press, in both the "straight" and sensationalist media, within that journalistic realm where issues are defined and public opinion solidified (despite a frequently superficial approach to matters of evidence and investigation) abduction scenarios have elicited two basic reactions: that of the Believer and the Skeptic. The Believers - and here we should note that "Believers" and "abductees" are two groups whose memberships overlap but are in no way congruent - accept such stories at face value. They accept, despite the seeming absurdity of these tales, the internal contradictions, the askew logic of narrative construction, the severe discontinuity of emotional response to the actions described. The Believers believe, despite reports that their beloved "space brothers" use vile and inhuman tactics of medical examination - senseless procedures most of us (and certainly the vanguard of an advanced race) would be ashamed to inflict on an animal. The Believers believe, despite the difficulty of reconciling these unsettling tales with their own deliriums of benevolent off-worlders.

Occasionally, the rough notes of a rationalization are offered: "The aliens don't know what they are doing," we hear; or "Some aliens are bad." Yet the Believers confound their own reasoning when they insist on ascribing the wisdom of the ages and the beneficence of the angels to their beloved visitors. The aliens allegedly know enough about our society to go about their business undetected by the local authorities and the general public; they communicate with the abductees in human tongue; they concern themselves with details of the percipients' innermost lives - yet they remain so ignorant of our culture as to be unaware of the basic moral precepts concerning the dignity of the individual and the right to self-determination. Such dichotomies don't bother the Believers; they are the faithful, and faith is assumed to have its mysteries.

SANCTA SIMPLICITAS

Conversely, the Skeptics dismiss these stories out of hand. They dismiss, despite the intriguing confirmatory details: the multiple witness events, the physical traces left by the ufonauts, the scars and implants left on the abductees. The skeptics scoff, though the abductees tell stories similar in detail - even certain tiny details, not known to the general public.

Philip Klass is a debunker who, through his appearances on such television programs as NOVA and NIGHTLINE, has been in a position to affect much of the public debate on UFOs. In his interesting but poorly-documented work on abductions,⁴ Klass claims that "abduction" is a psychological disease, spread by those who write about it. This argument exactly resembles the professional press-basher's frequent assertion that terrorism

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

metastasizes through media exposure. Yet for all the millions of words expectorated by newsmen on the subject of terrorism, terrorist actions remain quite rare, as any statistician (though few politicians) will admit, and verifiable linkage between crimes and their coverage remains to be found. For that matter, there have been books - bestsellers, even - on unicorns and gnomes. People who claim to see those creatures are few. Abductees are plentiful.

Both Believer and Skeptic, in my opinion, miss the real story. Both make the same mistake: They connect the abduction phenomenon to the forty-year history of UFO sightings, and they apply their prejudices about the latter to the controversy about the former.

At first sight, the link seems natural. Shouldn't our thoughts about UFOs color our thoughts about UFO abductions?

No.

They may well be separate issues. Or, rather, they are connected only in this: The myth of the UFO has provided an effective cover story for an entirely different sort of mystery. Remove yourself from the Believer/ Skeptic dialectic, and you will see the third alternative.

As we examine this alternative, we will, of necessity, stray far from the saucers. We must turn our face from the paranormal and concentrate on the occult - if, by "occult," we mean secret.

I posit that the abductees have been abducted. Yet they are also spewing fantasy - or, more precisely, they have been given a set of lies to repeat and believe. If my hypothesis proves true, then we must accept the following: The kidnapping is real. The fear is real. The pain is real. The instruction is real. But the little grey men from Zeti Reticuli are not real; they are constructs, Halloween masks meant to disguise the real faces of the controllers. The abductors may not be visitors from Beyond; rather, they may be a symptom of the carcinoma which blackens our body politic.

The fault lies not in our stars, but in ourselves.

THE HYPOTHESIS

Substantial evidence exists linking members of this country's intelligence community (including the Central Intelligence Agency, the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency, and the Office of Naval Intelligence) with the esoteric technology of mind control. For decades, "spy-psychiatrists" working behind the scenes - on college campuses, in CIA-sponsored institutes, and (most heinously) in prisons - have experimented with the erasure of memory, hypnotic resistance to torture, truth serums, post-hypnotic suggestion, rapid induction of hypnosis, electronic stimulation of the brain, nonionizing radiation, microwave induction of intracerebral "voices," and a host of even more disturbing technologies. Some of the projects exploring these areas were ARTICHOKE, BLUEBIRD, PANDORA, MKDELTA, MKSEARCH and the infamous MKULTRA.

I have read nearly every available book on these projects, as well as the relevant congressional testimony. I have also spent much time in university libraries researching relevant articles, contacting other researchers (who have graciously allowed me access to their files), and conducting interviews. Moreover, I traveled to Washington, DC to

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

review the files John Marks compiled when he wrote THE SEARCH FOR “THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE.”⁶ These files include some 20,000 pages of CIA and Defense Department documents, interviews, scientific articles, letters, etc. The views presented here are the result of extensive and ongoing research.

As a result of this research, I have come to the following conclusions:

1. Although misleading (and occasionally perjured) testimony before Congress indicated that the CIA’s “brainwashing” efforts met with little success,⁷ striking advances were, in fact, made in this field. As CIA veteran Miles Copeland once admitted to a reporter, “The congressional subcommittee which went into this sort of thing got only the barest glimpse.”⁸

2. Clandestine research into thought manipulation has NOT stopped, despite CIA protestations that it no longer sponsors such studies. Victor Marchetti, 14-year veteran of the CIA and author of the renown expose, THE CIA AND THE CULT OF INTELLIGENCE, confirmed in a 1977 interview that the mind control research continues, and that CIA claims to the contrary are a “cover story.”⁹

3. The Central Intelligence Agency was not the only government agency involved in this research.¹⁰ Indeed, many branches of our government took part in these studies - including NASA, the Atomic Energy Commission, as well as all branches of the Defense Department. To these conclusions I would append the following -not as firmly established historical fact, but as a working hypothesis and grounds for investigation:

4. The “UFO abduction” phenomenon might be a continuation of clandestine mind control operations. I recognize the difficulties this thesis might present to those readers emotionally wedded to the extraterrestrial hypothesis, or to those whose political WELTANSCHAUUNG disallows any such suspicions. Still, the open-minded student of abductions should consider the possibilities. Certainly, we are not being narrow-minded if we ask researchers to exhaust ALL terrestrial explanations before looking heavenward.

Granted, this particular explanation may, at first, seem as bizarre as the phenomenon itself. But I invite the skeptical reader to examine the work of George Estabrooks, a seminal theorist on the use of hypnosis in warfare, and a veteran of Project MKULTRA. Estabrooks once amused himself during a party by covertly hypnotizing two friends, who were led to believe that the Prime Minister of England had just arrived; Estabrooks’ victims spent an hour conversing with, and even serving drinks to, the esteemed visitor.¹¹ For ufologists, this incident raises an inescapable question: If the Mesmeric arts can successfully evoke a nonexistent Prime Minister, why can’t a representative from the Pleiades be similarly induced?

But there is much more to the present day technology of mind control than mere hypnosis - and many good reasons to suspect that UFO abduction accounts are an artifact of continuing brainwashing/behavior modification experiments. Moreover, I intend to demonstrate that, by using UFO mythology as a cover story, the experimenters may have solved the major problem with the work conducted in the 11:45 - “the disposal problem,” i.e., the question of “What do we do with the victims?”

If, in these pages, I seem to stray from the subject of the saucers, I plead for patience. Before I attempt to link UFO abductions with mind control experiments, I must first show

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

that this technology exists. Much of the forthcoming is an introduction to the topic of mind control - what it is, and how it works.

II. THE TECHNOLOGY A BRIEF OVERVIEW

In the early days of World War II, George Estabrooks, of Colgate University, wrote to the Department of War, describing in breathless terms the possible uses of hypnosis in warfare.¹² The Army was intrigued; Estabrooks had a job. The true history of Estabrooks' wartime collaboration with the CID, FBI.¹³ and other agencies may never be told: After the war, he burned his diary pages covering the years 1940-45, and thereafter avoided discussing his continuing government work with anyone, even close members of the family.¹⁴ Occasionally, he strongly intimated that his work involved the creation of hypno-programmed couriers and hypnotically-induced split personalities, but whether he succeeded in these areas remains a controversial point. Nevertheless, the eccentric and flamboyant Estabrooks remains a pivotal figure in the early history of clandestine behavioral research.

Which is not to say that he worked alone. World War II was the first conflict in which the human brain became a field of battle, where invading forces were led by the most notable names in psychology and pharmacology. On both sides, the war spurred furious efforts to create a "truth drug" for use in interrogating prisoners. General William "Wild Bill" Donovan, director of the OSS, tasked his crack team - including Dr. Winifred Overhulser, Dr. Edward Strecker, Harry J. Anslinger and George White - to modify human perception and behavior through chemical means; their "medicine cabinet" included scopolamine, peyote, barbiturates, mescaline, and marijuana. (This research had its amusing side: Donovan's "psychic warriors" conducted many extensive and expensive trials before deciding that the best method of administering tetrahydrocannabinol, the active ingredient in marijuana, was via the cigarette. Any jazz musician could have told them as much.¹⁵) Simultaneously, the notorious Nazi doctors at Dachau experimented with mescaline as a means of eliminating the victim's will to resist. Jews, Slavs, gypsies, and other "Untermenschen" in the camp were surreptitiously slipped the drug; later, mescaline was combined with hypnosis.¹⁶ The results of these tests were made available to the United States after the War.

In 1947, the Navy conducted the first known postwar mind control program, Project CHAPTER, which continued the drug experiments. Decades later, journalists and investigators still haven't uncovered much information about this project - or, indeed, about any of the military's other excursions into this field. We know that the Army eventually founded operations THIRD CHANCE and DERBY HAT; other project names remain mysterious, though the existence of these programs is unquestionable.

The newly-formed CIA plunged into this cesspool in 1950, with Project BLUEBIRD, rechristened ARTICHOKE in 1951. To establish a "cover story" for this research, the CIA funded a propaganda effort designed to convince the world that the Communist Bloc had devised insidious new methods of reshaping the human will; the CIA's own efforts could therefore, if exposed, be explained as an attempt to "catch up" with Soviet and Chinese work. The primary promoter of this "line" was one Edward Hunter, a CIA contract employee operating undercover as a journalist, and, later, a prominent member of the John Birch society. (Hunter was an OSS veteran of the China theatre - the same spawning

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

grounds which produced Richard Helms, Howard Hunt, Mitch Werbell, Fred Chrisman, Paul Helliwell and a host of other noteworthies who came to dominate that strange land where the worlds of intelligence and right-wing extremism meet.¹⁷)

Hunter offered “brainwashing” as the explanation for the numerous confessions signed by American prisoners of war during the Korean War and (generally) UN-recanted upon the prisoners’ repatriation. These confessions alleged that the United States used germ warfare in the Korean conflict, a claim which the American public of the time found impossible to accept. Many years later, however, investigative reporters discovered that Japan’s germ warfare specialists (who had wreaked incalculable terror on the conquered Chinese during WWII) had been mustered into the American national security apparatus - and that the knowledge gleaned from Japan’s horrifying germ warfare experiments probably WAS used in Korea, just as the “brainwashed” soldiers had indicated.¹⁸ Thus, we now know that the entire brainwashing scare of the 11:45 constituted a CIA hoax perpetrated upon the American public: CIA deputy director Richard Helms admitted as much when, in 1963, he told the Warren Commission that Soviet mind control research consistently lagged years behind American efforts.¹⁹

When the CIA’s mind control program was transferred from the Office of Security to the Technical Services Staff (TSS) in 1953, the name changed again - to MKULTRA.²⁰ Many consider this wide-ranging “octopus” project - whose tentacles twined through the corridors of numerous universities and around the necks of an army of scientists - the most ominous operation in CIA’s catalogue of atrocity. Through MKULTRA, the Agency created an umbrella program of a positively Joycean scope, designed to ferret out all possible means of invading what George Orwell once called “the space between our ears” (Later still, in 1962, mind control research was transferred to the Office of Research and Development; project cryptonyms remain unrevealed.²¹)

What was studied? Everything - including hypnosis, conditioning, sensory deprivation, drugs, religious cults, microwaves, psychosurgery, brain implants, and even ESP. When MKULTRA “leaked” to the public during the great CIA investigations of the 1970s, public attention focused most heavily on drug experimentation and the work with ESP.²² Mystery still shrouds another area of study, the area which seems to have most interested ORD: psychoelectronics. This research may prove key to our understanding of the UFO abduction phenomenon.

IMPLANTS

Perhaps the most interesting pieces of evidence surrounding the abduction phenomenon are the intracerebral implants allegedly visible in the X-rays and MRI scans of many abductees.²³ Indeed, abductees often describe operations in which needles are inserted into the brain; more frequently still, they report implantation of foreign objects through the sinus cavities. Many abduction specialists assume that these intracranial incursions must be the handiwork of scientists from the stars. Unfortunately, these researchers have failed to familiarize themselves with certain little-heralded advances in terrestrial technology.

The abductees’ implants strongly suggest a technological lineage which can be traced to a device known as a “stimoceiver,” invented in the late ’50s-early ’60s by a neuroscientist named Jose Delgado. The stimoceiver is a miniature depth electrode which

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

can receive and transmit electronic signals over FM radio waves. By stimulating a correctly-positioned stimoceiver, an outside operator can wield a surprising degree of control over the subject's responses.

The most famous example of the stimoceiver in action occurred in a Madrid bull ring. Delgado "wired" the bull before stepping into the ring, entirely unprotected. Furious for gore, the bull charged toward the doctor - then stopped, just before reaching him. The technician-turned-toreador had halted the animal by simply pushing a button on a black box, held in the hand.²⁴

Delgado's *PHYSICAL CONTROL OF THE MIND: TOWARD A PSYCHOCIVILISED SOCIETY* ²⁵ remains the sole, full-length, popularly-written work on intracerebral implants and electronic stimulation of the brain (ESB). (The book's ominous title and unconvincing philosophical rationales for mass mind control prompted an unfavorable public reaction - which may have deterred other researchers from publishing on this theme for a general audience.) While subsequent work has long since superseded the techniques described in this book, Delgado's achievements were seminal. His animal and human experiments clearly demonstrate that the experimenter can electronically induce emotions and behavior: Under certain conditions, the extremes of temperament - rage, lust, fatigue, etc. - can be elicited by an outside operator as easily as an organist might call forth a C-major chord.

Delgado writes: "Radio stimulation of different points in the amygdala and hippocampus in the four patients produced a variety of effects, including pleasant sensations, elation, deep, thoughtful concentration, odd feelings, super relaxation, colored visions, and other responses."²⁶ The evocative phrase "colored vision" clearly indicates remotely-induced hallucination; we will detail later how these hallucinations may be "controlled" by an outside operator.

Speaking in 1966 - and reflecting research undertaken years previous - Delgado asserted that his experiments "support the distasteful conclusion that motion, emotion, and behavior can be directed by electrical forces and that humans can be controlled like robots by push buttons."²⁷ He even prophesied a day when brain control could be turned over to nonhuman operators, by establishing two-way radio communication between the implanted brain and a computer.²⁸

Of one experimental subject, Delgado notes that "the patient expressed the successive sensations of fainting, fright and floating around. These 'floating' feelings were repeatedly evoked on different days by stimulation of the same point..."²⁹ Ufologists may recognize the similarity of this sequence of events to abductee reports of the opening minutes of their experiences.³⁰ Under subsequent hypnosis, the abductee could be instructed to misremember the cause of this floating sensation.

In a fascinating series of experiments, Delgado attached the stimoceiver to the tympanic membrane, thereby transforming the ear into a sort of microphone. An assistant would whisper "How are you?" into the ear of a suitably "fixed" cat, and Delgado could hear the words over a loudspeaker in the next room. The application of this technology to the spy trade should be readily apparent. According to Victor Marchetti, The Agency once attempted a highly-sophisticated extension of this basic idea, in which radio implants were attached to a cat's cochlea, to facilitate the pinpointing of specific conversations,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

freed from extraneous surrounding noises.³¹ Such “advances” exacerbate the already-imposing level of Twentieth-Century paranoia: Not only can our phones be tapped and mail checked, but even tabby may be spying on us!

Yet the ramifications of this technology may go even deeper than Marchetti indicates. I presume that if a suitably-wired subject’s inner ear can be made into a microphone, it can also be made into a loudspeaker one possible explanation for the “voices” heard by abductees.³² Indeed, I have personally viewed a strange, opalescent implant within the ear canal of an abductee. I see no reason to ascribe this device to alien intrusion - more than likely, the “intruders” in this case were the technological inheritors of the Delgado legacy. Indeed, not many years after Delgado’s experiments with the cat, Ralph Schwitzgebel devised a “bug-in-the-ear” via which the therapist - odd term, under the circumstances - can communicate with his subject.³³

Other researchers have made notable contributions to this field.

Robert G. Heath, of Tulane University, who has implanted as many as 125 electrodes in his subjects, achieved his greatest notoriety by attempting to “cure” homosexuality through ESB. In his experiments, he discovered that he could control his patients’ memory, (a feat which, applied in the ufological context, may account for the phenomenon of “missing time”); he could also induce sexual arousal, fear, pleasure, and hallucinations.³⁴

Heath and another researcher, James Olds,³⁵ have independently illustrated that areas of the brain in and near the hypothalamus have, when electronically stimulated, what has been described as “rewarding” and “aversive” effects. Both animals and men, when given the means to induce their own ESB of the brain’s pleasure centers, will stimulate themselves at a tremendous rate, ignoring such basic drives as hunger and thirst.³⁶ (Using fixed electrodes of his own invention, John C. Lilly had accomplished similar effects in the early 1950s.³⁷) Anyone who has studied the abduction phenomenon will find himself on familiar territory here, for the abductee accounts are replete with stories of bewildering and inappropriate sexual response countered by extremely painful stimuli - operant conditioning, at its most extreme, and most insidious, for here we see a form of conditioning in which the manipulator renders himself invisible. Indeed, B.F. Skinner-esque aversive therapy, remotely applied, was Heath’s prescription for “healing” homosexuality.³⁸

Ralph Schwitzgebel and his brother Robert have produced a panoply of devices for tracking individuals over long ranges; they may be considered the creators of the “electronic house arrest” devices recently approved by the courts.³⁹ Schwitzgebel devices could be used for tracking all the physical and neurological signs of a “patient” within a quarter of a mile,⁴⁰ thereby lifting the distance limitations which restricted Delgado.

In Ralph Schwitzgebel’s initial work, application of this technology to ESB seems to have been limited to cumbersome brain implants with protruding wires. But the technology was soon miniaturized, and a scheme was proposed whereby radio receivers would be mounted on utility poles throughout a given city, thereby providing 24-hour-a-day monitoring capability. ⁴¹ Like Heath, Schwitzgebel was much exercised about homosexuality and the use of intracranial devices to combat sexual deviation. But he has also spoken ominously about applying his devices to “socially troublesome persons”...

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

which, of course, could mean anyone.⁴²

Bryan Robinson, of the Yerkes primate laboratory has conducted fascinating simian research on the use of remote ESB in a social context. He could cause mothers to ignore their offspring, despite the babies' cries. He could turn submission into dominance, and vice-versa.⁴³

Perhaps the most disturbing wanderer into this mind-field is Joseph A. Meyer, of the National Security Agency, the most formidable and secretive component of America's national security complex. Meyer has proposed implanting roughly half of all Americans arrested - not necessarily convicted - of any crime; the numbers of "subscribers" (his euphemism) would run into the tens of millions. "Subscribers" could be monitored continually by computer wherever they went. Meyer, who has carefully worked out the economics of his mass-implantation system, asserts that taxpayer liability should be reduced by forcing subscribers to "rent" the implant from the State. Implants are cheaper and more efficient than police, Meyer suggests, since the call to crime is relentless for the poor "urban dweller" - who, this spook-scientist admits in a surprisingly candid aside, is fundamentally unnecessary to a post-industrial economy. "Urban dweller" may be another of Meyer's euphemisms: He uses New York's Harlem as his model community in working out the details of his mind-management system.⁴⁴

ABDUCTEE IMPLANTS

If we are to take seriously abductee accounts of brain implants, we must consider the possibility that the implanters, properly perceived, DON'T look much like the "greys" pictured on Strieber's dustjackets. Instead, the visitors may resemble Dr. Meyer and his brethren. We would thus have an explanation for both the reports of abductee brain implants and, as we shall see, the "scoop marks" and other scars visible on other parts of the abductees' bodies. We would also have an explanation for the reports of individuals suffering personality change after contact with the UFO phenomenon.

Skeptics might counter that the time factor of UFO abductions disallows this possibility. If estimates of "missing time" are correct, the abductions rarely take longer than one-to-three hours. Wouldn't a brain surgeon, operating under less-than-ideal conditions (perhaps in a mobile unit) need more time?

No - not if we accept the claims of a Florida doctor named Daniel Man. He recently proposed a draconian solution to the overblown "missing children problem," by suggesting a program wherein America's youngsters would be implanted with tiny transmitters in order to track the children continuously. Man brags that the operation can be done right in the office - and would take less than 20 minutes.⁴⁵

Conceivably, it might take a bit longer in the field.

A QUESTION OF TIMING

The history of brain implantation, as gleaned from the open literature, is certainly disquieting. Yet this history has almost certainly been censored, and the dates manipulated in a nigh-Orwellian fashion. When dealing with research funded by the engines of national security, one can never know the true origin date of any individual scientific advance. However, if we listen carefully to the scientists who have pioneered this research, we may hear whispers, faint but unmistakable, hinting that remotely-applied

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ESB originated earlier than published studies would indicate.

In his autobiography, *THE SCIENTIST*, John C. Lilly (who would later achieve a cultish reknown for his work with dolphins, drugs and sensory deprivation) records a conversation he had with the director of the National Institute of Mental Health - in 1953. The director asked Lilly to brief the CIA, FBI, NSA and the various military intelligence services on his work using electrodes to stimulate directly the pleasure and pain centers of the brain. Lilly refused, noting, in his reply:

Dr. Antoine Remond, using our techniques in Paris, has demonstrated that this method of stimulation of the brain can be applied to the human without the help of the neurosurgeon; he is doing it in his office in Paris without neurosurgical supervision.

This means that anybody with the proper apparatus can carry this out on a person covertly, with no external signs that electrodes have been used on that person. I feel that if this technique got into the hands of a secret agency, they would have total control over a human being and be able to change his beliefs extremely quickly, leaving little evidence of what they had done.⁴⁶

Lilly's assertion of the moral high ground here is interesting. Despite his avowed phobia against secrecy, a careful reading of *THE SCIENTIST* reveals that he continued to do work useful to this country's national security apparatus. His sensory deprivation experiments expanded upon the work of *ARTICHOKE*'s Maitland Baldwin, and even his dolphin research has - perhaps inadvertently proved useful in naval warfare.⁴⁷ One should note that Lilly's work on monkeys carried a "secret" classification, and that NIMH was a common CIA funding conduit.⁴⁸

But the most important aspect of Lilly's statement is its date. 1953? How far back does radio-controlled ESB go? Alas, I have not yet seen Remond's work - if it is available in the open literature. In the documents made available to Marks, the earliest reference to remotely-applied ESB is a 1959 financial document pertaining to *MKULTRA* subproject 94. The general subproject descriptions sent to the CIA's financial department rarely contain much information, and rarely change from year to year, leaving us little idea as to when this subproject began.

Unfortunately, even the Freedom of Information Act couldn't pry loose much information on electronic mind control techniques, though we know a great deal of study was done in these areas. We have, for example, only four pages on subproject 94 - by comparison, a veritable flood of documents were released on the use of drugs in mind control. (Whenever an author tells us that *MKULTRA* met with little success, the reference is to drug testing.) On this point, I must criticize John Marks: His book never mentions that roughly 20-25 percent of the subprojects are "dark" - i.e., little or no information was ever made available, despite lawyers and FOIA requests. Marks seems to feel that the only information worth having is the information he received. We know, however, that research into psychoelectronics was extensive indeed, statements of project goals dating from *ARTICHOKE* and *BLUEBIRD* days clearly identify this area as a high priority. Marks' anonymous informant, jocularly named "Deep Trance," even told a previous interviewer that, beginning in 1963, CIA and the military's mind control efforts strongly emphasized electronics.⁴⁹ I therefore assume - not rashly, I hope - that the "dark" *MKULTRA* subprojects concerned matters such as brain implants, microwaves, ESB, and

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

related technologies.

I make an issue of the timing and secrecy involved in this research to underscore three points:

1. We can never know with certainty the true origin dates of the various brainwashing methods - often, we discover that techniques which seem impossibly futuristic actually originated in the 19th century. (Pioneering ESB research was conducted in 1898, by J.R. Ewald, professor of physiology at Strausbourg.⁵⁰)

2. The open literature almost certainly gives a bowdlerized view of the actual research.

3. Lavishly-funded clandestine researchers - unrestrained by peer review or the need for strict controls can achieve far more rapid progress than scientists "on the outside."

Potential critics should keep these points in mind should they attempt to invalidate the "mind control" thesis of UFO abductions by citing an abduction account which antedates Delgado.

THE QUANDARY

We have amply demonstrated, then, that as far back as the 1960s - and possibly earlier still - scientists have had the capability to create implants similar to those now purportedly visible in abductee MRI scans. Indeed, we have no notion just how advanced this technology has become, since the popular press stopped reporting on brain implantation in the 1970s. The research has no doubt continued, albeit in a less public fashion. In fact, scientists such as Delgado have cast their eye far beyond the implants; ESB effects can now be elicited with microwaves and other forms of electromagnetic radiation, used with and without electrodes.

So why - if we take UFO abduction accounts at face value - are the "advanced aliens" using an old technology, Earth technology, a technology which may soon be rendered obsolescent, if it hasn't been so rendered already? I am reminded of the charming anachronisms in the old Flash Gordon serials, where swords and spaceships clashed continually.

Do they also watch black-and-white television on Zeta Reticuli?

REMOTE HYPNOSIS

Hypnosis provides the (highly controversial) key which opens the door to many abduction accounts.⁵¹ And obviously, if my thesis is correct, hypnosis plays a large part in the abduction itself. One thing we know with certainty: Since the earliest days of project BLUEBIRD, the CIA's spy-chiatrists spent enormous sums mastering Mesmer's art.

I cannot here give even a brief summary of hypnosis, nor even of the CIA's studies in this area. (Fortunately, FOIA requests were rather more successful in shaking loose information on this topic than in the area of psycho-electronics.) Here, we will concentrate on a particularly intriguing allegation - one heard faintly, but persistently, for the past twenty years by those who would investigate the shadow side of politics.

If this allegation proves true, hypnosis is not necessarily a person-to-person affair.

The abductee - or the mind control victim - need not have physical contact with a hypnotist for hypnotic suggestion to take effect; trance could be induced, and suggestions made, via the intracerebral transmitters described above. The concept sounds like something out of Huxley's or Orwell's most masochistic fantasies. Yet remote hypnosis

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

was first reported - using allegedly parapsychological means - in the early 1930s, by L.L. Vasilev, Professor of Physiology in the University of Leningrad.⁵² Later, other scientists attempted to accomplish the same goal, using less mystic means.

Over the years, certain journalists have asserted that the CIA has mastered a technology call RHIC-EDOM. RHIC means "Radio Hypnotic Intracerebral Control." EDOM stands for "Electronic Dissolution of Memory." Together, these techniques can - allegedly - remotely induce hypnotic trance, deliver suggestions to the subject, and erase all memory for both the instruction period and the act which the subject is asked to perform.

RHIC uses the stimoceiver, or a microminiaturized offspring of that technology to induce a hypnotic state. Interestingly, this technique is also reputed to involve the use of intramuscular implants, a detail strikingly reminiscent of the "scars" mentioned in Budd Hopkins' *MISSING TIME*. Apparently, these implants are stimulated to induce a post-hypnotic suggestion.

EDOM is nothing more than missing time itself, the erasure of memory from consciousness through the blockage of synaptic transmission in certain areas of the brain. By jamming the brain's synapses through a surfeit of acetylcholine, neural transmission along selected pathways can be effectively stilled. According to the proponents of RHIC-EDOM, acetylcholine production can be affected by electromagnetic means. (Modern research in the psychophysiological effects of microwaves confirm this proposition.)

Does RHIC-EDOM exist? In our discussion of Delgado's work, I have already cited a strange little book (published in 1969) titled *WERE WE CONTROLLED?*, written by one Lincoln Lawrence, a former FBI agent turned journalist. (The name is a pseudonym; I know his real identity.) This work deals at length with RHIC-EDOM; a careful comparison of Lawrence's work with MKULTRA files declassified ten years later indicates a strong possibility that the writer did indeed have "inside" sources.

Here is how Lawrence describes RHIC in action:

It is the ultra-sophisticated application of post-hypnotic suggestion triggered at will [italics in original] by radio transmission. It is a recurring hypnotic state, re-induced automatically at intervals by the same radio control. An individual is brought under hypnosis. This can be done either with his knowledge - or without it by use of narcohypnosis, which can be brought into play under many guises. He is then programmed to perform certain actions and maintain certain attitudes upon radio signal.⁵³

Other authors have mentioned this technique - specifically Walter Bowart (in his book *OPERATION MIND CONTROL*) and journalist James Moore, who, in a 1975 issue of a periodical called *MODERN PEOPLE*, claimed to have secured a 350-page manual, prepared in 1963, on RHIC-EDOM.⁵⁴ He received the manual from CIA sources, although - interestingly the technique is said to have originated in the military.

The following quote by Moore on RHIC should prove especially intriguing to abduction researchers who have confronted odd "personality shifts" in abductees:

Medically, these radio signals are directed to certain parts of the brain. When a part of your brain receives a tiny electrical impulse from outside sources, such as vision, hearing, etc., an emotion is produced anger at the sight of a gang of boys beating an old

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

woman, for example. The same emotion of anger can be created by artificial radio signals sent to your brain by a controller. You could instantly feel the same white-hot anger without any apparent reason.⁵⁵

Lawrence's sources imparted an even more tantalizing - and frightening revelation:

...there is already in use a small EDOM generator-transmitter which can be concealed on the body of a person. Contact with this person - a casual handshake or even just a touch - transmits a tiny electronic charge plus an ultrasonic signal tone which for a short while will disturb the time orientation of the person affected.⁵⁶

If RHIC-EDOM exists, it goes a long way toward providing an earthbound rationale for alien abductions - or, at least, certain aspects of them. The phenomenon of "missing time" is no longer mysterious. Abductee implants, both intracerebral and otherwise, are explained. And note the reference to "recurring hypnotic state, reinduced automatically by the same radio command." This situation may account for "repeater" abductees who, after their initial encounter, have regular sessions of "missing time" and abduction - even while a bed-mate sleeps undisturbed.

At present, I cannot claim conclusively that RHIC-EDOM is real. To my knowledge, the only official questioning of a CIA representative concerning these techniques occurred in 1977, during Senate hearings on CIA drug testing. Senator Richard Schweicker had the following interchange with Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, an important MKULTRA administrator:

SCHWEICKER: Some of the projects under MKULTRA involved hypnosis, is that correct?

GOTTLIEB: Yes.

SCHWEICKER: Did any of these projects involve something called radio hypnotic intracerebral control, which is a combination, as I understand it, in layman's terms, of radio transmissions and hypnosis.

GOTTLIEB: My answer is "No."

SCHWEICKER: None whatsoever?

GOTTLIEB: Well, I am trying to be responsive to the terms you used. As I remember it, there was a current interest, running interest, all the time in what effects people's standing in the field of radio energy have, and it could easily have been that somewhere in many projects, someone was trying to see if you could hypnotize someone easier if he was standing in a radio beam. That would seem like a reasonable piece of research to do.

Schweicker went on to mention that he had heard testimony that radar (i.e., microwaves) had been used to wipe out memory in animals; Gottlieb responded, "I can believe that, Senator."⁵⁷

Gottlieb's blandishments do not comfort much. For one thing, the good doctor did not always provide thoroughly candid testimony. (During the same hearing he averred that 99 percent on the CIA's research had been openly published; if so, why are so many MKULTRA subprojects still "dark," and why does the Agency still go to great lengths to protect the identities of its scientists?⁵⁸)

We should also recognize that the CIA's operations are compartmentalized on a

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

“need-to-know” basis; Gottlieb may not have had access to the information requested by Schweicker. Note that the MKULTRA rubric circumscribed Gottlieb’s statement: RHIC-EDOM might have been the focus of another program. (There were several others: MKNAOMI, MKACTION, MKSEARCH, etc.) Also keep in mind the revelation by “Deep Trance” that the CIA concentrated on psychoelectronics after the termination of MKULTRA in 1963. Most significantly: RHIC-EDOM is described by both Lawrence and Moore as a product of MILITARY research; Gottlieb spoke only of matters pertaining to CIA. He may thus have spoken truthfully at least in a strictly technical sense - while still misleading the Congressional interlocutors.

Personally, I believe that the RHIC-EDOM story deserves a great deal of further research. I find it significant that when Dr. Petter Lindstrom examined X-rays of Robert Naesland, a Swedish victim of brain-implantation, the doctor authoritatively cited WERE WE CONTROLLED? in his letter of response.⁵⁹ This is the same Dr. Lindstrom noted for his pioneering use of ultrasonics in neurosurgery.⁶⁰ Lincoln Lawrence’s book has received a strong endorsement indeed.

Bowart’s OPERATION MIND CONTROL contains a significant interview with an intelligence agent knowledgeable in these areas. Granted, the reader has every right to adopt a skeptical attitude toward information culled from anonymous sources; still, one should note that this operative’s statements confirm, in pertinent part, Lawrence’s thesis.⁶¹

Most importantly: The open literature on brain-wave entrainment and the behavioral effects of electromagnetic radiation substantiates much of the RHIC-EDOM story - as we shall see.

THAT’S ENTRAINMENT

Robert Anton Wilson, an author with a devoted cult following, recently has taken to promoting a new generation of “mind machines” designed to promote creativity, stimulate learning, and alter consciousness - i.e., provide a drug-less high. Interestingly, these machines can also induce “Out-of-Body Experiences,” in which the percipient mentally “travels” to another location while his body remains at rest.⁶² This rapidly-developing technology has spawned a technological equivalent to the drug culture; indeed, the aficionados of the electronic buzz even have their own magazine, REALITY HACKERS. I strongly suspect that we will hear much of these machines in the future.

One such device is called the “hemi-synch.” This headphone-like invention produces slightly different frequencies in each ear; the brain calculates the difference between these frequencies, resulting in a rhythm known as the “binaural beat.” The brain “entrains” itself to this beat - that is, the subject’s EEG slows down or speeds up to keep pace with its electronic running partner.⁶³

THE BRAIN HAS A “BEAT” OF ITS OWN.

This rhythm was first discovered in 1924 by the German psychiatrist Hans Berger, who recorded cerebral voltages as part of a telepathy study.⁶⁴ He noted two distinct frequencies: alpha (8-13 cycles per second), associated with a relaxed, alert state, and beta (14-30 cycles per second), produced during states of agitation and intense mental concentration. Later, other rhythms were noted, which are particularly important for our present purposes: theta (4-7 cycles per second), a hypnagogic state, and delta (.5 to 3.5

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

cycles per second), generally found in sleeping subjects.⁶⁵

The hemi-synch - and related mind-machines - can produce alpha or theta waves, on demand, according to the operator's wishes. A suitably-entrained brain is much more responsive to suggestion, and is even likely to experience vivid hallucinations.

I have spoken to several UFO abductees who describe a "stereophonic sound" effect - exactly similar to that produced by the hemi-synch - preceding many "encounters." Of course, one usually administers the hemi-synch via headphones, but I see no reason why the effect cannot be transmitted via the above described stimoceiver. Again, I remind the reader of the abductee with an implant just inside her ear canal.

There's more than one way to entrain a brain. Michael Hutchison's excellent book MEGA BRAIN details the author's personal experiences with many such devices - the Alpha-stim, TENS, the Synchro-energizer, Tranquilite, etc. He recounts dazzling, Daliesque hallucinations, as a result of using this mind-expanding technology; moreover, he offers a seductive argument that these devices may represent a true breakthrough in consciousness-control, thereby fulfilling the dashed dream of the hallucinogenic '60s.

I wish to avoid a knee-jerk Luddite response to these fascinating wonderboxes. At the same time, I recognize the dangers involved. What about the possibility of an outside operator literally "changing our minds" by altering our brainwaves without our knowledge or permission? If these machines can induce a hypnotic state, what's to stop a skilled hypnotist from making use of this state?

Granted, most of these devices require some physical interaction with the subject. But a tool called the Bio-Pacer can, according to its manufacturer, produce a number of mood altering frequencies - WITHOUT attachment to the subject. Indeed, the Bio-Pacer III (a high-powered version) can affect an entire room. This device costs \$275, according to the most recent price sheet available.⁶⁶ What sort of machine might \$27,500 buy? Or \$275,000? What effects, what ranges might a million-dollar machine be capable of?

The military certainly has that sort of money.

And they're certainly interested in this sort of technology, according to Michael Hutchison. His interview with an informant named Joseph Light elicited some particularly provocative revelations. According to Light:

There are important elements in the scientific community, powerful people, who are very much interested in these areas... but they have to keep most of their work secret. Because as soon as they start to publish some of these sensitive things, they have problems in their lives. You see, they work on research grants, and if you follow the research being done, you find that as soon as these scientists publish something about this, their research funds are cut off. There are areas in bioelectric research where very simple techniques and devices can have mind-boggling effects. Conceivably, if you have a crazed person with a bit of a technical background, he can do a lot of damage.⁶⁷

This last statement is particularly evocative. In 1984, a violent neo-Nazi group called The Order (responsible for the murder of talk-show host Alan Berg) established contact with two government scientists engaged in clandestine research to project chemical imbalances and render targeted individuals docile via certain frequencies of electronic waves. For \$100,000 the scientists were willing to deliver this information.⁶⁸

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Thus, at least one group of crazed individuals almost got the goods.

WAVE YOUR BRAIN GOODBYE

Every Senator and Congressional representative has a “wavie” file. So do many state representatives. Wavies have even pled their case to private institutions such as the Christic Institute.⁶⁹

And who are the wavies?

They claim to be victims of clandestine bombardment with nonionizing radiation - or microwaves. They report sudden changes in psychological states, alteration of sleep patterns, intracerebral voices and other sounds, and physiological effects. Most people never realize how many wavies there are in this country. I've spoken to a number of wavies myself.

Are these troubled individuals seeking an exterior rationale for their mental problems? Maybe. Indeed, I'm sure that such is the case in many instances. But the fact is that the literature on the behavioral effects of microwaves, extra-low-frequencies (ELF) and ultrasonics is such that we cannot blithely dismiss all such claims.

For decades, American science and industry tried to convince the population that microwaves could have no adverse effects on human beings at sub-thermal levels - in other words, the attitude was, “If it can't burn you, it can't hurt you.” This approach became increasingly difficult to defend as reports mounted of microwave-induced physiological effects. Technicians described “hearing” certain radar installations; users of radar telescopes began developing cataracts at an appallingly high rate.⁷⁰ The Soviets had long recognized the strange and sometimes subtle effects of these radio frequencies, which is why their exposure standards have always been much stricter.

Soviet microwave bombardment of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow prompted the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency's Project PANDORA (later renamed), whose ostensible goal was to determine whether these pulsations (reportedly 10 cycles per second, which puts them in the alpha range) could be used for the purposes of mind control. I suspect that the “war on Tchaikovsky Street,” as I call it,⁷¹ was used, at least in part, as a cover story for DARPA mind control research, and that the stories floated in the news (via, for example, Jack Anderson's column) about Soviet remote brainwashing served the same propaganda purposes as did the bleatings of Edward Hunter during the 1950s.⁷²

WHAT CAN LOW-LEVEL MICROWAVES DO TO THE MIND?

According to a DIA report released under the Freedom of Information Act,⁷³ microwaves can induce metabolic changes, alter brain functions, and disrupt behavior patterns. PANDORA discovered that pulsed microwaves can create leaks in the blood/brain barrier, induce heart seizures, and create behavioral disorganization.⁷⁴ In 1970, a RAND Corporation scientist reported that microwaves could be used to promote insomnia, fatigue, irritability, memory loss, and hallucinations.⁷⁵

Perhaps the most significant work in this area has been produced by Dr. W. Ross Adey at the University of Southern California. He determined that behavior and emotional states can be altered without electrodes -simply by placing the subject in an electromagnetic field. By directing a carrier frequency to stimulate the brain and using

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

amplitude modulation to “shape” the wave into a mimicry of a desired EEG frequency, he was able to impose a 4.5 cps theta rhythm on his subjects - a frequency which he previously measured in the hippocampus during avoidance learning. Thus, he could externally condition the mind towards an aversive reaction.⁷⁶ (Adey has also done extensive work on the use of electrodes in animals.⁷⁷)

According to another prominent microwave scientist, Allen Frey, other frequencies could - in animal studies - induce docility.⁷⁸ The controversial researcher Andrijah Puharich asserts that “a weak (1mW) 4 Hz magnetic sine wave will modify human brain waves in 6 to 10 seconds. The psychological effects of a 4 Hz sine magnetic wave are negative - causing dizziness, nausea, headache, and can lead to vomiting.” Conversely, an 8 Hz magnetic sine wave has beneficial effects.⁷⁹ Though some writers question Puharich’s integrity (perhaps correctly, considering his involvement in the confused tale of Uri Geller), his claims here seem in line with the findings of less-flamboyant experimenters.

As investigative journalist Anne Keeler writes:

Specific frequencies at low intensities can predictably influence sensory processes... pleasantness-unpleasantness, strain-relaxation, and excitement-quiescence can be created with the fields. Negative feelings and avoidance are strong biological phenomena and relate to survival. Feelings are the true basis of much “decision-making” and often occur as subthreshold impressions.... Ideas including names [my italics] can be synchronized with the feelings that the fields induce.⁸⁰

Adey and compatriots have compiled an entire library of frequencies and pulsation rates which can affect the mind and nervous system. Some of these effects can be extremely bizarre. For example, engineer Tom Jarski, in an attempt to replicate the seminal work of F. Cazzamali, found that a particular frequency caused a ringing sensation in the ears of his subjects who felt strangely compelled to BITE the experimenters!⁸¹ On the other hand, the diet-conscious may be intrigued by the finding that rats exposed to ELF waves failed to gain weight normally.⁸²

For our present purposes, the most significant electromagnetic research findings concern microwave signals modulated by hypnoidal EEG frequencies. Microwaves can act much like the “hemi-synch” device previously described - that is, they can entrain the brain to theta rhythms.⁸³ I need not emphasize the implications of remotely synchronizing the brain to resonate at a frequency conducive to sleep, or to hypnosis.

Trance may be remotely induced - but can it be directed? Yes. Recall the intracerebral voices mentioned earlier in our discussion of Delgado. The same effect can be produced by “the wave.” Frey demonstrated in the early 1960s that microwaves could produce booming, hissing, buzzing, and other intracerebral static (this phenomenon is now called “the Frey effect”); in 1973, Dr. Joseph Sharp, of the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, expanded on Frey’s work in an experiment where the subject - in this case, Sharp himself - “heard” and understood spoken words delivered via a pulsed-microwave analog of the speaker’s sound vibrations.⁸⁴

Dr. Robert Becker comments that “Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with ‘voices’ or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin.”⁸⁵ In other words, we now have, at the push of a

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

button, the technology either to inflict an electronic gaslight - or to create a true Manchurian Candidate. Indeed, the former capability could effectively disguise the latter. Who will listen to the victims, when electronically-induced hallucinations they recount exactly parallel the classical signals of paranoid schizophrenia and/or temporal lobe epilepsy?

Perhaps the most ominous revelations, however, concern the mysterious work of J.F. Schapitz, who in 1974 filed a plan to explore the interaction of radio frequencies and hypnosis. He proposed the following:

In this investigation it will be shown that the spoken word of the hypnotist may be conveyed by modulated electromagnetic energy directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain [my italics] - i.e., without employing any technical devices for receiving or transcoding the messages and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input consciously.

He outlined an experiment, innocent in its immediate effects yet chilling in its implications, whereby subjects would be implanted with the subconscious suggestion to leave the lab and buy a particular item; this action would be triggered by a certain cue word or action. Schapitz felt certain that the subjects would rationalize the behavior - in other words, the subject would seize upon any excuse, however thin, to chalk up his actions to the working of free will.⁸⁶ His instincts on this latter point coalesce perfectly with findings of professional hypnotists.⁸⁷

Schapitz's work was funded by the Department of Defense. Despite FOIA requests, the results have never been publicly revealed.⁸⁸

FINAL THOUGHTS ON "THE WAVE"

I must again offer a caveat about possible disparities between the "official" record of electromagnetism's psychological effects and the hidden history. Once more, we face a question of timing. How long ago did this research REALLY begin?

In the early years of this century, Nikola Tesla seems to have stumbled upon certain of the behavioral effects of electromagnetic exposure.⁸⁹ Cazamalli, mentioned earlier, conducted his studies in the 11:45 In 1934, E.L. Chaffe and R.U. Light published a paper on "A Method for the Remote Control of Electrical Stimulation of the Nervous System."⁹⁰ From the very beginning of their work with microwaves, the Soviets explored the more subtle physiological effects of electromagnetism - and despite the bleatings of certain right-wing alarmists⁹¹ that an "electromagnetic gap" separates us from Soviet advances, East European literature in this area has been closely monitored for decades by the West. ARTICHOKE/BLUEBIRD project outlines, dating from the early 1950s, prominently mention the need to explore all possible uses of the electromagnetic spectrum. Another point worth mentioning concerns the combination of EMR and miniature brain electrodes. The father of the stimoceiver, Dr. J.M.R. Delgado, has recently conducted experiments in which monkeys are exposed to electromagnetic fields, thereby eliciting a wide range of behavioral effects - one monkey might fly into a volcanic rage while, just a few feet away, his simian partner begins to nod off. Fascinatingly, when monkeys with brain implants felt "the wave," the effects were greatly intensified. Apparently, these tiny electrodes can act as amplifiers of the electromagnetic effect.⁹²

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

This last point is important to our "alien abduction" thesis. Critics might counter that any burst of microwave energy powerful enough to have truly remote effects would probably also create a thermal reaction. That is, if a clandestine operator propagated a "wave" from outside an abductee's bedroom (say, from a low-flying helicopter, or from a truck traveling alongside the subject's car), the power necessary to do the job might be such that the microwave would cook the target before it got a chance to launder his thoughts. Our abductee would end up like the victim of the microwave "hit" in the finale of Jerzy Kozinsky's COCKPIT.

It's a fair criticism. But Delgado's work may give us our solution. Once an abductee has been implanted -and if we are to trust hypnotic regression accounts of abductees at all, the first implanting session may occur in childhood - the chip-in-the-brain would act as an intensifier of the signal. Such an individual could have any number of "UFO" experiences while his or her bed partner dozes comfortably. Furthermore, recent reports indicate that a "waver" can achieve pinpoint accuracy without the use of Delgado-style implants. In 1985, volunteers at the Midwest Research Institute in Kansas City, Missouri, were exposed to microwave beams as part of an experiment sponsored by the Department of Energy and the New York State Department of Health. As THE ARIZONA REPUBLIC⁹³ described the experiment, "A matched control group sat in the same room without being bombarded by nonionizing radiation." [My italics.] Apparently, one can focus "the wave" quite narrowly - a fact which has wide implications for abductees.

III. APPLICATIONS

So we now have some idea of the tools available to the "spy-chiatrists." How have these tools been used? This question necessarily involves some detective work. The Central Intelligence Agency, under duress, provided some, though not enough, documentation of its efforts to commandeer "the space between our ears." We know that these efforts were extensive, long-term, and at least partially successful. We know also that these experiments used human subjects. But who? When?

One paradox of this line of inquiry is that, for many readers, the victims elicit sympathy only insofar as they remain anonymous. Intellectually, we realize that MKULTRA and its allied projects must have affected hundreds, probably thousands, of individuals. Yet we react with deep suspicion whenever one of these individuals steps forward and identifies himself, or whenever an independent investigator argues that mind control has directed some newsworthy person's otherwise inexplicable actions. Where, the skeptic may rightfully ask, is the documentation supporting such accusations? Most of the MKULTRA "paper trail" was (allegedly) burnt at Richard Helms' order; what's left has been censored, leaving black ink smudges wherever the names originally appeared.

Claimed mind control victims can, for the most part, only give us testimony - and how reliable can such testimony be, especially in light of the fact that one purpose of MKULTRA was to induce insanity? Anyone asserting that he was victimized by the program might well be seeking an extrinsic excuse for his own psychopathology. If you say that you are a manufactured madman, you were probably mad to begin with: Catch 22.

When John Marks wrote THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE," he received numerous letters from people insisting that they had been drugged, "waved," or otherwise abused by the CIA or the military. Most of these communications went

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

directly into his crank file. Perhaps many deserved that destination; I know of at least one that did not.⁹⁴

Marks did, however, devote much attention to Val Orlikov, a former “patient” of perhaps the most notorious figure in the annals of American medical crime: Dr. Ewen Cameron, a CIA-funded scientist heading the Allan Memorial Institute at McGill University, Montreal, Canada. Cameron, a highly-respected mental health researcher,⁹⁵ experimented with a technique he called “psychic driving,” a brainwashing program which involved inflicting upon a subject an endless tape loop blaring selected messages, 16-to-24 hours a day, combined with massive electroshock and LSD. The project’s “guinea pigs” were patients who had come to Allan Memorial with relatively minor psychological complaints. Cameron’s experiments failed and his theories were discredited, which may explain why the CIA and its apologists now feel relatively comfortable discussing the Frankensteinian efforts at Allan Memorial, as opposed to more successful work elsewhere.

Orlikov’s testimony has received much respectful attention from those writers who have examined MKULTRA, and correctly so. When I studied the files at the National Security Archives, I was particularly keen to read her original letters to John Marks, for these pages had led to the unmasking of an especially heinous CIA project. The letters, interestingly enough, proved just as vague, disjointed, and bizarre as similar correspondence which researchers routinely dismiss. Orlikov can’t be blamed for the hazy nature of her recollections; a certain amount of fog is to be expected, given the nature of the crime perpetrated against her. The important point is that her story, ultimately, was found to be true. All of which leads me to wonder: Why did HER claims prompt investigation when those of others prompt only dismissal? Perhaps the answer lies in the fact that Orlikov’s husband became a Canadian Member of Parliament. Any victims of CIA experimentation who wish to be taken seriously ought, perhaps, first make sure to marry well.

Of course, we can easily forgive previous writers and readers whose researches into MKULTRA have been biased in favor of complacency.⁹⁶ But we can’t let this natural prejudice cripple our present investigation. Let us examine, then, a few of the “horror stories” from the mind control literature and highlight possible correlations to abductee testimony.

PALLE HARDRUP’S “GUARDIAN ANGEL”

As mentioned previously, I have not delved much into the subject of hypnosis in this paper - primarily because of space and time limitations, but also because discussions of the possibilities of hypnosis per se tend to cloud the issue of its use in conjunction with the above-mentioned electronic techniques. Obviously, however, hypnosis is a major weapon in the mind controller’s armament; in a forthcoming full-length work, I intend to deal with this subject at much greater length.

Needless to say, one of the primary objectives of MKULTRA and related projects was to determine whether one could hypnotically induce someone to commit an antisocial act. This possibility remains one of the most hotly debated issues in hypnosis, for conventional wisdom asserts that no individual can be hypnotized to commit an action which violates his interior moral code. Martin Orne, editor of the prestigious INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS agrees with

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

this axiom,⁹⁷ and he is in a position to codify much of the established view on this topic. Orne, however, is a veteran of MKULTRA, and furthermore seems to have lied - at least in his original communications - to author John Marks about his witting involvement in subproject 94.98 While I respect much of Orne's ground-breaking work, his pronouncements do not hold, for this layman, an Olympian unassailability.

To be sure, many other hypnosis experts, untainted by Company connections, also discount the possibility that antisocial actions can be induced. But a number of highly-experienced professionals - including Milton Kline, William Kroger, George Estabrooks, John Watkins, and Herbert Spiegel - have argued that such actions can, at least to some degree, be elicited by an outside manipulator.

Occasionally, claims of hypnotically-induced antisocial behavior find their way into the courtroom; one such case, which led to the incarceration of the hypnotist, was the Palle Hardrup affair. This incident occurred in Denmark in 1951,⁹⁹ Palle Hardrup robbed a bank, killing a guard in the process, and later claimed that he had been instructed to do so by the hypnotist Bjorn Nielsen. Nielsen eventually confessed to having engineered the crime as a test of his hypnotic abilities.

The most significant aspect of this incident concerns the "pose" Nielsen adopted to work his malicious designs. During the hypnosis sessions, Nielsen hypnotically suggested that he was Hardrup's "guardian angel," represented by the letter X. Hardrup testified that "There is another room next door where Nielsen and I go and talk on our own. It is there that my guardian spirit usually comes and talks to me. Nielsen says that X has a task for me."

One of these tasks was arranging for Hardrup's girlfriend to have sex with the hypnotist. The other tasks, he mentioned, included robbery and murder. Nielsen convinced his victim that "X" wanted the robbery funds to be used for worthwhile political goals. The end, Hardrup was told, justified the means.

Compare this scenario to that encountered in the typical contactee case, in which alien "guardians" convince their victims/subjects that the encounter will eventually serve some unspecified "higher purpose." Indeed, in my interviews with abductees who have established a "long-term" relationship with their visitors, I have found that some of them originally believed themselves in contact with Hardrup-like angelic guardians. Only in recent years was the "angel" pose discarded and the true "alien" form revealed.

Thus we have one possible means of overcoming the proposition that hypnosis cannot induce antisocial behavior. If a hypnotist lacks scruples, and has access to a particularly susceptible subject, he can induce a misperceived reality. Actions which we would abhor in an everyday context become acceptable in specialized circumstances: A citizen who could never commit murder on a suburban street might, if drafted into an army, kill on the field of battle. In hypnosis, the mind becomes that battlefield. In the words of Dr. John Watkins:

"We behave on the basis of our perceptions. If our perceptions of a situation can be altered so as to cause us to misconstrue it, or to develop a false belief, then our behavior in relation to it will be drastically altered. It is precisely in the area of changing perceptions that the hypnotic modality demonstrates its most powerful effects. Hallucinations both under hypnosis, and posthypnotic, can easily be induced in the suggestible subject. He

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

can be made to ignore painful stimuli, be apparently unable to hear loud sounds, and "see" individuals who are not present. Moreover, attitudes and beliefs can be initiated in him which are quite abnormal and often contrary to those which he previously held."100

If traditional hypnosis, unaided, can achieve such changes in perception, one can only imagine the possibilities inherent in the combination of hypnotic techniques with the psychoelectronic research previously described.

Scientists such as Orne and Milton Erickson¹⁰¹ have taken issue with Watkins' assertions. But the Hardrup case would appear to bear Watkins out. If someone can be convinced that he, like Jeanne D'Arc, acts under the influence of a supernatural higher power, then previously unthinkable capabilities may be evinced and "impossible" actions carried forth. Indeed, when we consider the extreme personality changes and occasionally, the heinous actions, elicited by leaders of certain cults, and occult groups,¹⁰² we understand the desirability of installing a hypnotic "cover story" within a supernatural matrix. People will do for God - or the Devil, or the Space Brothers - what they would not do otherwise.

The date of the Hardrup affair corresponds to the institution of BLUEBIRD/ARTICHOKE; it doesn't require much imagination to see how this case could have served as a model to the scientists researching those and subsequent projects.

SCREEN MEMORY

According to declassified documents in the Marks files, a major difficulty faced by the MKULTRA researchers concerned the "disposal problem." What to do with the victims of CIA-sponsored electroshock, hypnosis, and drug experimentation? The Company resorted to distressing, but characteristic, tactics: They disposed of their human guinea pigs by incarcerating them in insane asylums, by performing icepick lobotomies, and by ordering "executive actions."103

A more sophisticated solution had to be found. One of the goals of the CIA's mind control efforts was the erasure of memory via hypnosis (and drugs, electronics, lobotomies, etc.); not only would this hide what occurred during the experimental indoctrination/programming sessions, it would prove useful in the field. "Amnesia was a big goal," confirms Victor Marchetti, who points out its usefulness in dealing with contract agents: "After you've done it, the agent doesn't even know what he's done... you send him in, he does the job. When he comes out, you clean his head out."104

The big problem: Despite hypnotically-induced amnesia, there would be memory leaks - snippets of the repressed material would arise spontaneously, in dreams, as flashbacks, etc. A proposed solution: Give the subject a "screen memory," a false story; thus, even if he starts to recall the material, he will recall it incorrectly.

Even the conservative Dr. Orne notes that:

A subject who is able to develop good posthypnotic amnesia will also respond to suggestions to remember events which did not actually occur. On awakening, he will fail to recall the real events of the trance and will instead recall the suggested events. If anything, this phenomenon is easier to produce than total amnesia, perhaps because it eliminates the subjective feeling of an empty space in memory.¹⁰⁵

Not only would the screen memories fill in the uncomfortable blanks in the subjects'

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

recollection, they would protect against revelation. One fear of the MKULTRA scientists was that a hypno-programmed individual used as, say, a courier, could be unprogrammed by another hypnotist, perhaps working for the enemy. Thus, the MKULTRA scientists decided to instill multiple personalities - multiple cover stories, if you will - to confuse any "unauthorized" hypnotist.¹⁰⁶

One case using this technique centered on an assassin named Luis Castillo, who, after his capture in the Philippines, was extensively debriefed and studied by experts in the employ of the National Bureau of Investigation, that country's equivalent to our FBI. Castillo was discovered to have had at least four separate personalities hypnotically instilled; each personality could be triggered by a specific cue. In one state, he claimed to be Sgt. Manuel Angel Ramirez, of the Strategic Air Tactical Command in South Vietnam; supposedly, "Ramirez" was the illegitimate son of a certain pipe-smoking, highly-placed CIA official whose initials were A.D.¹⁰⁷

Another personality claimed to be one of John F. Kennedy's assassins. The main hypnotist involved with this case labelled these hypnotic alter-egos "Zombie states." The report on the case stated that "The Zombie phenomenon referred to here is a somnambulistic behavior displayed by the subject in a conditioned response to a series of words, phrases, and statements, apparently unknown to the subject during his normal waking state."

Upon Castillo's repatriation to the United States, the FBI claimed that he had fabricated the story. In his book OPERATION MIND CONTROL, Walter Bowart makes a convincing case against the FBI's claims. Certainly, many aspects of the Castillo affair argue for his sincerity - including his hypnotically-induced insensitivity to pain,¹⁰⁸ his maintenance of the story (or stories) even when severely inebriated, and his apparently programmed suicide attempts.

If Castillo told the truth, as I believe he did, then he manifested both hypnotically-induced multiple personality and pseudomemory. The former remains controversial; the latter has been repeatedly replicated in experimental situations.¹⁰⁹

This point is vitally important for students of the abduction phenomenon. We CANNOT assume the accuracy of abduction descriptions given during subsequent hypnotic regression. Moreover, we cannot even assume the accuracy of spontaneously-arising recollections (i.e., abduction memories not elicited through hypnotic regression). Indeed, responsible skeptics have argued that hypnotic regression may prove inadvertently harmful, in that it may lock in place a false remembrance. (Note, however, that other psychiatric professionals consider hypnotic regression the best technique, however flawed, in unlocking amnesia.¹¹⁰ For my part, I maintain an ambivalent and cautious attitude toward the use of hypnosis in abductee work.)

Granted, it is all too easy for the debunkers to cry "confabulation" to dismiss hypnotic testimony which does not conform to our preconceptions about the possible; I do not intend to make this same error. Whenever skeptics offer the phenomenon of pseudomemory to rationalize abduction claims, they cite experimental situations in which pseudomemory was originally created by a hypnotist ¹¹¹ These experiments can not be cited as proof that an individual abductee spontaneously conjured up a fantasy (which just happens to correspond to the details of hundreds of similar "fantasies"). Rather,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

laboratory studies of pseudomemory creation prove my point: Pseudomemory can be induced by previous hypnosis.¹¹²

In other words, an abductee may talk of aliens - when the reality was something else entirely.

In correspondence with me, a noted abduction researcher wrote of an instance in which an abductee recounted seeing a helicopter during his experience; as the abductee testimony progressed, the helicopter turned into a UFO. During one of the (quite few) regression sessions I attended, I heard an exactly similar narrative. Hopkins would argue that the helicopter was a "screen memory" hiding the awful reality of the UFO encounter. But does Occam's razor really cut that way? Shouldn't we also consider the possibility that the object in question really WAS a helicopter - which the abductee was instructed to recall as a UFO?

THE SUPER SPY

Among the released BLUEBIRD/ARTICHOKE/ MKULTRA papers was the following handwritten memorandum, unsigned and undated:

I have developed a technic which is safe and secure (free from international censorship). It has to do with the conditioning of our own people. I can accomplish this as a one-man job.

The method is the production of hypnosis by means of simple oral medication. Then (with NO further medication) the hypnosis is re-enforced daily during the following three or four days.

Each individual is conditioned against revealing any information to an enemy, even though subjected to hypnosis or drugging. If preferable, he may be conditioned to give FALSE information rather than NO information.

In the margin of this document, one of Marks' assistants wrote, "Is this Wendt?" The reference here is to G. Richard Wendt, a professor employed by Project CHATTER who, in 1951, led both his Naval employers and the CIA on a mind control merry goose chase, when an experiment similar to that described above failed to produce results.¹¹³ Even if the above memorandum does describe an operational failure (and the tactics described in this memo do not seem very feasible to me), we should not rest complacent. We now know that, in at least ONE case, more sophisticated techniques made the above scenario a reality.

I REFER TO THE CASE OF CANDY JONES.

Her story has filled at least one book ¹¹⁴ and ought, one day, to give rise to another. Obviously, I cannot here give all the details of this fascinating and frightening narrative. But a precis is mandatory.

Ms. Jones (born Jessica Wilcox) achieved star status as a model during World War II, and later established her own modeling agency. An FBI man requested her to allow her place of business to be used as a "mail drop" for the Bureau and "another government agency" (presumably, the CIA); Candy, deeply patriotic, accepted the proposition gladly. Toiling on the fringes of the clandestine world, Candy eventually came into contact with a "Dr. Gilbert Jensen," who worked, in turn, with a "Dr. Marshall Burger." (Both names are pseudonyms.) Unknown to her, these doctors had been employed as "spy-chiatrists"

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

by the CIA. Using a job interview as a cover, Jensen induced hypnosis, found Candy to be a particularly responsive subject - and proceeded to use her as other scientists would use a rhesus monkey. She became a test subject for the CIA's mind control program.

Her job - insofar as it is known - was to provide a clandestine courier service.¹¹⁵ Estabrooks had outlined the basic idea years earlier: Induce hypnosis via a disguised technique, give the messenger information to memorize, hypnotically "erase" the message from conscious memory, and install a post-hypnotic suggestion that the message (now buried within the subconscious) will be brought forth only upon a specific cue. If the hypnotist can create such a courier, ultra-security can be guaranteed; even torture won't cause the messenger to tell what he knows - because he doesn't know that he knows it.¹¹⁶ According to the highly respected Dr. Milton Kline, "Evidence really does exist that has not been published" proving that Estabrooks' perfect secret agent could be successfully evoked.¹¹⁷

Candy was one such success story. Success, in this context, means that she could be - and was - brutally tortured and abused while running assignments for the CIA. All the MKULTRA toys were brought into play: hypnosis, drugs, conditioning - and electronics. Using these devices, Jensen and Burger managed to:

* install a "duplicate personality," * create amnesia of both the programming sessions and the field assignments, * turn Candy into a vicious, hatemongering bigot, the better to isolate her from the rest of humanity (previously, her associates considered her noteworthy for her racial tolerance; her modelling agency was one of the first to break the color barrier), and * program her to commit suicide at the end of her usefulness to the Agency. The programming techniques used on her were flawed. She breached security when she married famed New York radio personality John Nebel,¹¹⁸ who, using hypnotic regression, elicited the long-repressed truth. Eventually, the "Other Candy" was bade farewell, and the programming broken.

Skeptics might find Candy's story as incredible as the abduction accounts - after all, an amateur had conducted her hypnotic regression, and the possibility of confabulation always lurks. Nevertheless, I feel that the veracity of her narrative has been established beyond reasonable doubt. In her hypnotic regression sessions, she recalled being programmed at a government-connected institute in northern California - which, as John Marks' investigators later proved, was indeed heavily involved with government-funded brainwashing research.¹¹⁹ Marks himself believes Candy's story - not least, because the details of the programming methods used on her were substantiated by documents released AFTER her book was published.¹²⁰ Interviews with Milton Kline, Dr. Frances Jakes, John Watkins and others provided the testimony that the programming of Candy Jones was feasible - and Deep Trance substantiated the story.¹²¹

Recently, the case has received important "indirect" confirmation: Investigators interested in follow-up research have filed FOIA requests with the CIA for all papers relating to Candy Jones. The agency admits that it has a substantial file on her, but refuses to release any part of it. If her tale is false, then why would the CIA be so reluctant to deliver the information? Indeed, why would they have a file in the first place?¹²²

The final confirmation of Candy's tale requires a revelation - one which I make with some trepidation, even though the individual named is dead.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

“Marshall Burger” was really Dr. William Kroger.¹²³

Kroger, long associated with the espionage establishment, had written the following in 1963:

...a good subject can be hypnotized to deliver secret information. The memory of this message could be covered by an artificially induced amnesia. In the event that he should be captured, he naturally could not remember that he had ever been given the message... however, since he had been given a post-hypnotic suggestion, the message would be subject to recall through a specific cue.¹²⁴

If Candy confabulated her story, why did she name this particular scientist, who, writing theoretically in 1963, predicted the subsequent events in her life?[¹²⁵]

After l'affair Jones, Kroger transferred his base of operations to UCLA - specifically, to the Neuropsychiatric Institute run by Dr. Louis Jolyon West, an MKULTRA veteran. There he wrote HYPNOSIS AND BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION,¹²⁶ with a preface by Martin Orne (another MKULTRA veteran) and H.J. Eysenck (still another MKULTRA veteran). The finale of this opus contains chilling hints of the possibilities inherent in combining hypnosis with ESB, implants, and conditioning - though Kroger is careful to point out that “we are not concerned that man might be conditioned by rewards and punishments through electronic brain stimulation to be controlled like robots.”¹²⁷ HE may not be concerned - but perhaps WE ought to be.

The control of Candy Jones gives us much information useful to our “alien abduction” hypothesis.

1. Her torture sessions - inflicted during her programming by her CIA masters, and on missions by as-yet mysterious persons - seem strikingly like the otherwise senselessly painful “examinations” allegedly conducted aboard alien spacecraft.

2. Her personality shifts roughly parallel those experienced by certain UFO abductees.

3. Despite her brutalization, she remained “loyal” to Drs. Jensen and Burger. This bewildering behavior reminds me of my first abductee interviews, during which I heard ghastly descriptions of UFO torture sessions - followed by protestations of limitless love for the alien pain-mongers.

4. Like many abductees, Candy had to attend regular “conditioning” sessions. Repeated exposure to the programming is necessary to effect continuous control.

5. To maintain their hammerlock on her mind, Candy’s handlers programmed her to remain isolated. Specifically, they instilled a deep paranoia toward other human beings; “outsiders” were probable enemies, out to use or abuse her. I have seen this pattern consistently in my own work with abductees.¹²⁸ Skeptics would argue that unreasonable abductee fears probably indicate paranoid schizophrenia - one symptom of which can, indeed, be hallucinatory experiences. But most abductees are easily hypnotized, while paranoid schizophrenics are extremely difficult to “put under,” according to Dr. Edward Simpson- Kallas, a psychiatrist with wide experience in the area of forensic hypnosis.¹²⁹ If, however, those unreasonable fears had been hypnotically induced, the contradiction is resolved.

6. Candy was the product of an unhappy childhood, hence her propensity toward

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

multiple personality.¹³⁰ Many of the “repeater” abductees I have interviewed had similarly depressing family histories.¹³¹

7. The story of Candy Jones also has what we might call a “negative relevance” to the abduction accounts. Because the Controllers did not establish a hypnotic cover story, or pseudomemory, the true facts of the case managed to percolate into her conscious mind. No matter how thorough the posthypnotic amnesia, leaks will occur - hence the need for a false memory, to fill the gap of recollection. The CIA learns from its mistakes. Candy’s hypno-programming broke down in early 1973 - the year the “alien disguise” became (if my hypothesis proves correct) standard operating procedure.¹³² (Milton Kline accepted the Candy Jones story, but considered the job amateurish and inconsistent with the best work done at that time.¹³³ Perhaps the major fault was the lack of a pseudomemory cover story?)

BASES OF SUSPICION

“Underground base” rumors are as hot as jalapenos in the UFO field right now, and several of these stories involve abductions.

For example, a sideshow of the famous Bentwaters UFO case involves the abduction of an airman named Larry Warren to an underground cavity beneath the military base. There, while in what he later described as “a bit of a drugged state,” he saw aliens and human beings - military figures - working side-by-side.¹³⁴

I have spoken to another abductee, Nancy Wright, who was allegedly taken to an underground chamber ten miles north of Edwards AFB, California. As this was a multiple-witness event, and Ms. Wright has not attempted to capitalize on the story for financial gain, I tend to credit her story.¹³⁵

According to abduction researcher Miranda Parks, an elderly couple living in the vicinity was also abducted in an exactly similar fashion.¹³⁶

In 1979, Paul Bennewitz and Leo Sprinkle researched a particularly controversial abduction involving a young woman (name unrevealed) who was apparently taken to a facility where aliens processed fluids and body parts from a cattle mutilation. This investigation seems to have led to the government harassment of Bennewitz, in which some form of mind control (or, as I have previously referred to it, “electronic GASLIGHT”) may have played a part.¹³⁷

How do we account for these tales of alleged alien skullduggery carried out in conjunction with the military? I, for one, cannot credit the generally unsubstantiated tales of “cosmic conspiracy” now promulgated by ex-intelligence agents such as John Lear and William Cooper. While I cannot assert insincerity on the part of these men, I often wonder if they have been used as conduits - witting or unwitting - in a sophisticated disinformation scheme.

A simpler, though no less chilling, explanation for the “base” abductions may be found in the story of Dr. Louis Jolyon West, now notorious for his participation in MKULTRA experiments with LSD.¹³⁸ Inspired by VIOLENCE AND THE BRAIN (a book by Drs. Frank Ervin and Vernon H. Mark which ascribed inner city turmoil to a “genetic defect” within rebellious blacks), West proposed, in 1973, a Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence, where potentially violent individuals could be dealt with prophylactically.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

And who were these individuals? According to West's proposal, the noteworthy factors indicating a violent predisposition were "sex (male), age (youthful), ethnicity (black) and urbanicity." How to deal with them? "...by implanting tiny electrodes deep within the brain, electrical activity can be followed in areas that cannot be measured from the surface of the scalp... it is even possible to record bioelectrical changes in the brains of freely-moving subjects, through the use of remote monitoring techniques..." By monitoring the subjects' EEGs remotely, potentially violent episodes could be identified.

For our purposes, the most significant aspect of this proposal had to do with location. In a secret communication to Dr. J.M. Stubblebine, director of the California State Department of Health (fortunately, this missive was "leaked" to the public), West disclosed that he intended to house his Center in an abandoned Nike missile base, whose location was accessible yet relatively remote. "The site is securely fenced," West wrote. "Comparative studies could be carried out there, in an isolated but convenient location, of experimental model programs, for the alteration of undesirable behavior." 139

Public outcry stopped these plans. But was this scheme truly eliminated? Or was it merely modified, stripped (temporarily) of its overtly racial overtones and relocated to some less-accessible spot?

One thing is certain: A CIA "spy-chiatrist" favored secret behavior control experimentation in a remote military installation. Perhaps someone within the espionage establishment's mind-modification divisions still thinks highly of the idea. If so, the disposal problem would once again rear its ugly head, should "visitors" to these installations ever reappear in outside society. Again, a hypno-programmed cover story - the less believable, the better - would prove invaluable.

THE SCANDINAVIAN CONNECTION

Many books have been written about abductees, yet few exist about the victims of mind control. I cannot understand this situation; the reality of UFOs is still controversial, yet the existence of mind control was verified in two (heavily compromised) congressional investigations and in thousands of FOIA documents. Nevertheless, the abductees find many a sympathetic ear, while those few who dare to proclaim themselves the victims of known government programs rarely find anyone to hear them out. Our prejudices on this score are regrettable, for if we listened to the "controllees" we would hear many details strikingly similar to those mentioned by UFO abductees.

Two cases in point: Martti Koski and Robert Naeslund.

Koski, a Finnish citizen, claims to have been a victim of mind control experimentation while visiting Canada. Shortly after his experience began, he attempted to broadcast his situation to the world and draw attention to his plight. Few listened. Many of his details were bizarre, and not being a native speaker of English, he could not express himself convincingly to those he approached for help. Yet many aspects of his story correspond closely to known details of MKULTRA and related programs.

Naeslund, a Swedish citizen, tells a similar story. Moreover, his claims were backed by special evidence: X-rays revealed an implant in his brain. Naeslund actually went to the extreme of having his implant tested by electronic technicians employed by Hewlett-

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Packard. A Greek surgeon performed the necessary trepanation to remove the device.

Many aspects of the Koski and Naeslund stories correspond to my hypothesis. Koski, for example, was at one point told that the doctors afflicting him were actually “aliens from Sirius.” At another point, he was led to believe that he was under direction of “the Lord.” (As I previously indicated, manipulation of religious imagery could help induce antisocial behavior; the subject’s superego can be nullified if he believes that he follows commands from on high. Such manipulation may explain the more bizarre aspects of Betty Andreasson Luca’s abduction.¹⁴⁰)

Naeslund’s implant was originally placed through his nasal cavity. He first realized that something terrible had happened to him after an experience of missing time, followed by an inexplicable nosebleed.

This detail will be instantly familiar to anyone who has studied abductions; I have encountered it in my own conversations with abductees. For an excellent example in the UFO literature, I refer the reader to the case of Susan Ransted, as detailed in Kevin D. Randle’s *THE UFO CASEBOOK*; ¹⁴¹ the background of alleged contactee Diane Tessman is also noteworthy in this regard.¹⁴² Intriguingly, I have located a reference in the open literature to the use, in animal study, of nasally-implanted electrodes for the measurement of electromagnetic radiation effects.¹⁴³

There are other claimed mind control victims bearing evidence of implants; note, especially, the fascinating case of James Petit, a CIA-connected pilot and alleged brainwashing alumnus; X-rays of his cranium have revealed abductee-style implants - fitting, perhaps, since his body bears abductee-style scars.¹⁴⁴ Conversely, certain abductees will, if allowed a thorough and sympathetic hearing, deliver testimony strongly agreeing with Koski’s narrative.

HELICOPTERS AND DISKS

The bizarre story of Rex Niles and his sister (not named in news accounts) may shed interesting light on a variety of abductee cases, particularly that of Betty and Barney Hill.¹⁴⁵ Niles, the high-rolling owner of a Woodland Hills defense subcontracting firm (Rex Rep) was fingered by authorities investigating defense industry kickbacks. He became an extraordinarily cooperative witness in the investigation - until he was targeted by his enemies, who allegedly used psychoelectronics as harassment.

The following excerpt from the *LOS ANGELES TIMES* article on Niles is particularly compelling:

He [Niles] produced testimony from his sister, a Simi Valley woman who swears that helicopters have repeatedly circled her home. An engineer measured 250 watts of microwaves in the atmosphere outside Niles’ house and found a radioactive disk underneath the dash of his car.

A former high school friend, Lyn Silverman, claimed that her home computer went haywire when Niles stepped close to it.

No aliens in this story - yet how similar it is to tales of alien abduction! The low-flying helicopters, of course, are frequently reported by abduction victims the Betty Andreasson Luca case provides the best known example.¹⁴⁶ The haywire electronics equipment is also frequently encountered in putative abduction cases; I have spoken (independently)

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

to three women who claimed to have been able to disturb or shut off televisions and stereos simply by walking past the devices; one woman even claimed she had switched off her TV simply by pointing at it.

But the radioactive disk is especially intriguing. As former FBI agent Ted Gunderson recently explained to my associate Alexander Constantine, magnetic radioactive disks have long been used by the clandestine services as cancer-inducing "silent killers" - i.e., as tools of assassination. Not only that. The disc calls to mind one little-remembered detail of the Hill case - the dozen-or-so circular "shiny spots," each the size of a silver dollar, found on the trunk of her car directly after the abduction. A compass needle reacted wildly when placed near these spots. Could they have marked the location where an electromagnetic or radioactive device, similar to that found by Niles, was placed on the car? (Such a device might have been held to the spot magnetically, hence the circular impressions.) If so, then the disorienting EMR could have helped induce the Hills' "UFO sighting."

THE MILITARY AND MIND CONTROL

Some time ago, I attended hypnotic regression sessions in which the subject - a claimed UFO abductee recalled undergoing a mysterious "brain operation" at a veteran's hospital in California. The operation was performed by human beings, not aliens. Interestingly, this same hospital was mentioned in two other cases I encountered. These other claims were not made by abductees, but by people alleged to have been victims of mind control experimentation.

One of these claimants, a former Navy SEAL who undertook numerous dangerous missions in Vietnam, favorably impressed me with the wealth of detail in his story.¹⁴⁷ This individual - I've taken to calling him "the trained SEAL"- had received specialized combat training at a military base in California; he claims that at one point during this training he was drugged, hypnotized, possibly placed under some form of electronic control, and subjected to the extremes of pain/pleasure operant conditioning. One peculiar detail of his story concerns the "reward" aspect of the conditioning: When properly acquiescent, he was given unlimited sexual access to a woman who, the SEAL avers, was herself the victim of brainwashing.

Unbelievable as this last claim may seem, I found it oddly resonant when I later interviewed a prominent abductee in the Southern California area, who bravely offered me details on a puzzling, albeit quite delicate, incident in her past. Still an attractive woman, she recalled for me - indeed, seemed strangely compelled to describe - an early love affair with a young soldier training at a military base near her home. She cannot recall the soldier's name. All she remembers is that one day he started living at her family's house; she has no memory of how the arrangement began, and her parents have never felt comfortable discussing the matter. Although unattracted to this soldier, she felt compelled to become intimate with him, adopting a pliant, obeisant attitude that was quite out of character for her. Later, the soldier went on to covert missions in Vietnam.

Of course, a young person's psychosexual development is never smooth, and the incident related above may merely have represented one peculiarly upsetting bump in that notoriously rough road. Still, some of the details of this story - particularly the parents' attitude, the woman's personality shift, and her subsequent memory lapses - are striking,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

and I treat with respect the abductee's intuition that this minor enigma in her personal history could, if properly understood, shed light on her later "missing time" experiences.

Could the "trained SEAL" have been right? Was there, is there, a coterie of hypno-programmed soldiers conducting particularly hazardous missions? And do the programmers have at their disposal a "ladies' auxiliary," so to speak, of hypnotized camp followers?

If the SEAL's story stood alone, skeptics could easily dismiss it (provided they did not sit, as I did, face-to-face with the story's teller, listening to all the grisly and unsettling details). But other veterans have added their voices to this grim tale. Daniel Sheehan, of the Christic Institute, claims that his organization has spoken to half-a-dozen individuals with narratives similar to my SEAL informant. All had received "processing," so to speak, within the context of standard military training; after programming and specialized combat instruction by mercenaries, the recruits were placed "on hold," to be used as situations arose - and some of those situations occurred within the United States.¹⁴⁸

Walter Bowart began his own researches into mind control by placing an ad in SOLDIER-OF-FORTUNE style publications, asking for correspondence from veterans who experienced inexplicable lapses in memory or strange behavior modification techniques while serving in Vietnam; he received over 100 replies. Bowart devoted an entire chapter to one of these respondents an Air Force veteran named David, who ended his four-year tour of duty recalling only that he had spent the time, "having fun, skin diving, laying on the beach, collecting shells.... It never dawned on me until later that I must have DONE something while I was in the service." (An obvious example of screen memory.) He was also "assigned" a girlfriend whose name he cannot now recall, despite the length and deep intimacy of the affair.¹⁴⁹ The parallels to the SEAL's story and the abductee's account should be obvious.

We even have a confession, of sorts, from a scientist who specialized in one aspect of this sort of training. Lt. Commander Thomas Narut, of the U.S. Naval Hospital at the NATO headquarters in Naples, Florida, [Ed: ???] admitted during a lecture in Oslo that recruits in Naples underwent CLOCKWORK ORANGE-style behavior modification sessions. Trainees would be strapped into chairs with their eyelids clamped open while watching films of industrial accidents and African circumcision ceremonies - films frequently used by psychologists as a means of inducing stress in experimental situations. Unlike the protagonist in A CLOCKWORK ORANGE, who learned revulsion at the sight of violence, Narut's soldiers were taught to accept and enjoy bloodshed, to view it with equanimity. Similar techniques were used to dehumanize potential enemies. Graduates of this program became, in Narut's words, "hit men and assassins," to be placed in American embassies throughout the world.

When questioned by reporters about these claims, the American government denied the story; Narut - after a long incommunicado period and apparent coercion - later explained to journalists that he had merely spoken theoretically. If so, why did he originally describe the behavior modification procedure as an ongoing program?¹⁵⁰

And while it may seem frivolous to return to the subject of abductions after examining such grim data, I should remind the reader of the many abduction accounts in which abductees recall being forced to watch certain stress inducing motion pictures. The aliens,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

it seems, have learned a few lessons from Dr. Narut.

Narut, of course, concentrated on selective programming of individual American soldiers; on the other side of the mind control spectrum, Defense Department specialists have also concentrated on methods to render entire enemy battalions “combat ineffective.” Electromagnetic weaponry, intended to wipe out the aggression of the enemy, is the province of DARPA, under the direction of Dr. Jack Verona. These projects remain fairly mysterious; we do know, however, that one operation, SLEEPING BEAUTY, employed the services of Dr. Michael Persinger, a scientist who has expressed interesting views regarding UFOs.

Persinger discovered a method of using ELF waves to induce the brain’s MAST cells to release histamine; should a battlefield commander wish to subject his enemy to mass bouts of vomiting, Persinger’s trick could do the job even faster than a Tobe Hooper movie. The method works on animals. “The question,” writes mind control researcher Larry Collins, “is how to get from point A to point B without violating one of the most rigorous commandments of Government ethics - thou shalt not conduct experiments like that on human beings.”¹⁵¹

If Collins had studied the record a little more carefully, he might realize that the government hasn’t always regarded this commandment as something graven in stone. As Milton Kline put it:

Ethical factors involved in most research would preclude having positive results. Those ethical factors don’t always hold with government research. The research which has given really positive results has not been limited by ethical constraints.¹⁵²

The Ultimate Motive for Mind Control Hypnosis hard-liners of the Orne school would almost certainly dismiss the foregoing veterans’ accounts of the use of hypnosis, drugs and behavioral conditioning on American fighting men. Why, the skeptics would ask, would anyone attempt to create a “Manchurian Candidate” when the military services, using entirely conventional means, can create a “Rambo”? There have always been recruits for even the most hazardous duties; what need of hypnosis?

The need, in fact, is absolute.

The modern battlefield has little place for the traditional soldier. Advanced weaponry requires an increasing level of technical sophistication, which in turn requires a cool-headed operator. But the all-too-human combatant - though capable of extraordinary acts of courage under the most stressful conditions imaginable - does not possess inexhaustible reserves of sang-froid. Eventually, breakdowns will occur. Per-capita psychiatric casualties have increased dramatically in each successive American conflict. As Richard Gabriel, the excellent historian of the role of psychiatry in warfare, writes: Modern warfare has become so lethal and so intense that only the already insane can endure it... Modern war requiring continuous combat will increase the degree of fatigue on the soldier to heretofore unknown levels. Physical fatigue - especially the lack of sleep will increase the rate of psychiatric casualties enormously. Other factors - high rates of indirect fire, night fighting, lack of food, constant stress, large numbers of casualties - will ensure that the number of psychiatric casualties will reach disastrous proportions. And the number of casualties will overburden the medical structure to the point of collapse.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

The ability to treat psychiatric casualties will all but disappear. There will be no safe forward areas in which to treat soldiers debilitated by mental collapse. The technology of modern war has made such locations functionally obsolete.¹⁵³

According to Gabriel, the military intends to meet this challenge by creating “the chemical soldier,” a designer-drugged zombie in fighting man’s uniform:

On the battlefields of the future we will witness a true clash of ignorant armies, armies ignorant of their own emotions and even of the reasons for which they fight. Soldiers on all sides will be reduced to fearless chemical automatons who fight simply because they can do nothing else.... Once the chemical genie is out of the bottle, the full range of human mental and physical actions become targets for chemical control.... Today it is already possible by chemical or electrical stimulation to increase the aggression levels of the human being by stimulating the amygdala, a section of the brain known to control aggression and rage. Such “human potential engineering” is already a partial reality and the necessary technical knowledge increases every day.¹⁵⁴

While this passage speaks of drugs and electronics, we can safely assume that the planners of battle would not refrain from using any other promising technique.

Gabriel writes primarily of large-scale battle scenarios, but based on his information, we can fairly deduce that the mind-controlled soldier will also play a role in the surgical strike, the covert operation, the infiltration behind enemy lines by units of the Special Forces. On such missions, United States personnel have increasingly relied on torture as a means of interrogation and intimidation,¹⁵⁵ and as such barbarism becomes standard procedure the American fighting man of the future will need to find within himself unprecedented reserves of brutality. Will the average recruit, culled from the nation’s suburbs and reared on traditional ideals, possess such reserves?

Vietnam proved that the soldier, despite a barrage of propaganda intended to cloud his discernment, will sense the difference between fighting for legitimate defense interests and fighting to protect political hegemony. To forestall this realization, or to render it irrelevant, military planners must withdraw the human combatant and replace him with a new species of warrior. The soldier of the future will not discern; he will merely do. He will not be a butcher; he will be the butcher’s knife - a tool among tools, thoughtless and effective.

And it is my contention that to create this soldier of the future, the controllers will need a continuing program, one designed to test each new method and combination of methods for conquering the human mind.

One primary goal of this program must include expanding the human capacity for stress and violence. Subjects enrolled in such experimental procedures will experience pain, and will learn to accept the pain. Eventually, they will learn to inflict it, without remorse or even remembrance. The nation who first creates this new soldier will possess a decisive advantage on the “conventional” battlefield - as will the nation which first develops a means of using mass mind control techniques to disable entire enemy platoons. This paramount military necessity is the reason why I will never believe any unconvincing reassurances that our nation’s clandestine scientists have foregone or will forego research into behavior modification. This research will never be mere history. What’s past is present, and today’s covert experimentation will become tomorrow’s basic

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

training.

A prototype of the future warrior may already be with us. The Navy SEAL I interviewed spoke in horrifying detail of dismemberment without emotion, of rape as routine, of killing without affect. And then forgetting that he has killed. Even years later, he could not recall the stories behind many of the wounds on his own body. He claims that whenever he would need the services of the veteran's hospital, doctors would re-hypnotize him shortly after his admission, while a physician specifically cleared for such work would examine his medical history, which was highly classified and kept under lock and key.

According to the SEAL's testimony, his memory block cracked little by little, as a result of events too complex to recount here. Finally, years after Vietnam, he was able to remember what he did.

Amnesia was a blessing.

IV. ABDUCTIONS

Press and public now regard abductees as mere curiosities, yet science, for the most part, still banishes their tales to the domain of the damned, as Charles Fort defined damnation. So too with claimed victims of mind control. The Voice of Authority tells us that MKULTRA belongs to history; like Hasdrubal and Hitler, it threatened once, but no more. Anyone insisting otherwise must be silenced by glib rationalization and selective inattention.

Yet these two topics - UFO abductions and mind control - have more in common than their mutual ostracization. The data overlap. If we could chart these phenomena on a Venn diagram, we would see a surprisingly large intersection between the two circles of information. It is this overlap I seek to address.

Note, however, that I can NOT address all the other interesting and important issues raised by the UFO abduction experience. For example, I have written, admittedly rather vaguely, of nasal implants reported by abductees - the sort of detail which might place an account in the "high strangeness" category, and of course, a detail central to my thesis. But what percentage of the percipients speak of such implants? A truly scientific analysis would provide a figure. Unfortunately, I haven't the resources to compile a sufficiently large abductee sample from which one could draw statistics. Nor can I make an overarching qualitative analysis, measuring the value of "high strangeness" reports against other abductee claims. All I can do is note the available literature, and leave the reader to wonder, as I do, whether the compilers of that literature concentrated on exceptional cases or were biased in favor of the less fantastic abductee accounts. I have supplemented readings of the abduction literature with my own interviews with percipients - which, since abductees tend to know other abductees, can give a surprisingly wide view of the phenomenon. This view has been broadened still further by my talks and correspondence with other members of the UFO community.

Of course, we must recognize the difference between testimony and proof. No one can state definitively that abduction reports have a basis in objective reality (however misperceived). Ultimately, all we have are stories. Some of these stories may be of questionable veracity; others may be contaminated by investigator bias; many are insufficiently detailed. No one research paper can resolve all abduction controversies,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

and many necessary battles must be fought on other fields.

Still, the testimony won't go away - and we certainly have enough to allow for comparisons. I maintain that an unprejudiced overview of abduction reports in the popular press and the less-familiar material on mind control will demonstrate a striking correlation. Once other abduction researchers have been educated in the ways of MKULTRA (and this paper is intended as an introductory text) they may note a similar pattern. If so, we can then begin to write a revisionist history of the phenomenon.

The abduction enigma contains within it sub-mysteries that slide into the mind control scenario with surprising ease, even elegance - mysteries which fit the E.T. hypothesis as uncomfortably as a size 10 foot fits into a size 8 shoe. As we have seen, the MKULTRA thesis explains the reports of abductee intracerebral implants (particularly reports involving nosebleeds), unusual scars, "telepathic" communication (i.e., externally induced intracerebral voices) concurrent with or following the abduction encounter, allegations that some abductees hear unusual sound effects (similar to those created by the hemi-synch and cognate devices), haywire electronic devices in abductee homes, personality shifts, "training films," manipulation of religious imagery, and missing time. Needless to say, the thesis of clandestine government experimentation readily accounts for abductee claims of human beings "working" with the aliens, and for the government harassment that plays so prominent a role in certain abductee reports.

Let's look at some more correlations.

THE HILL CASE AND THE "ADVANCED" ALIENS

Earlier, I asked, "Do the aliens also watch black-and-white television?" in reference to their alleged use of old-fashioned, Terra-style brain implantation devices. Abduction accounts abound in other examples of alien "retro-technology." The most striking example can be found in the Betty and Barney Hill incident, the details of which are too well-known to recount here.¹⁵⁶ As we have already glimpsed during our discussion of the Rex Niles affair, the Hills' "interrupted journey" abounds in data which, taken together, permits the construction of an alternative explanation.

At one point during the alleged UFO abduction, the "examiners" inserted a needle in Betty Hill's navel, telling her that this practice constituted a test for pregnancy.¹⁵⁷ Some ufologists¹⁵⁸ rashly assume that Betty Hill's "pregnancy test" is evidence of advanced extraterrestrial technology, since her 1961 account predates the official announcement of amniocentesis, which does indeed make use of a needle inserted into the navel. But we now have much less invasive means of testing for pregnancy than amniocentesis. True, amniocentesis is still sometimes used to gather information about the fetus, but the wielders of a highly evolved technology would certainly use other methods of determining the existence of pregnancy in the first place.

Betty Hill's testimony reminds us of certain other abduction accounts, which contain descriptions of "healings" surprisingly similar to the procedures associated with still-experimental electromagnetic therapy techniques, such as those described in Robert O. Becker's *THE BODY ELECTRIC*. For example, abductee Deanna Dube described for me an abduction-related "regeneration" of her long-damaged heart; had she been familiar with Becker's work,¹⁵⁹ she might have been a bit less rapid to ascribe her healing to otherworldly influences.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Medical breakthroughs often undergo years of testing before their official “discovery.” For some of these tests, finding volunteers present a major obstacle. If we accept the proposition that the Hill incident originated in an external and objective stimulus, we must then ask ourselves which scenario is more likely: Did Betty Hill encounter human beings using a technique ten years ahead of its time? Or did she encounter aliens (reputedly a “billion years ahead of us”) using science from eons before their time?

One must also ask why Betty Hill’s aliens seemed to have no grasp of basic human concepts (such as how we measure time) - yet they knew enough about us to speak English fluently and had even mastered our slang. Were these real aliens, or humans engaging in theatricals (and occasionally muffing their lines)? For that matter, why did Betty Hill originally recall her abductors as humanoid, only later describing them as aliens?

The Hill case provided a particularly controversial piece of evidence - the celebrated “star map” recalled by Betty Hill under hypnosis. In later years, an Ohio schoolteacher named Marjorie Fish made an ingenious and laudable attempt to discover a match for this map by constructing an elaborate three-dimensional model of nearby star systems; whether she succeeded remains a matter for keen debate.¹⁶⁰ For now, I prefer to avoid taking sides in this dispute and will confine myself to insisting that pro-ET ufologists answer (without resorting to glib ripostes) a point first raised by Jacques Vallee: the map makes no sense as a navigational aid. Vallee notes that, even if we grant the Fish interpretation, the stars are not drawn to scale - and at any rate, alien spaceships would surely be navigated the same way we guide our own spacecraft: via computers and telemetry¹⁶¹ The validity of the Fish interpretation is irrelevant; the point is that any such chart would have no value to an interstellar star-farer.

Fish’s work raises other controversies: Allegedly, the map points to Zeta Reticuli as the aliens’ home system and pictures Zeta Reticuli as a single star, a view consistent with scientific opinion of the 1960s. Yet in later years scientists discovered that Zeta Reticuli is binary.¹⁶² Moreover, how did our abductee manage to remember so accurately a complex chart glimpsed in passing? Even allowing for the possibility of increased accuracy of recollection under hypnotic regression, the memory feat here seems remarkable. Consider the circumstances of the abduction: Kafka on hallucinogens couldn’t have conceived of the nightmare vision confronting Betty Hill that night - yet for some reason this particular arrangement of stars emerged as her most intensely-detailed recollection of the experience.

This memory (if not confabulated during regression, a possibility we should always weigh) is comprehensible only as an example of artificially-induced hypermnesia. In other words, Betty Hill was directed to store that chart within her subconscious. The celebrated star map ought to be recognized for what it was: a prop, a seemingly confirmatory circumstantial detail meant to convince her - and perhaps us - of the reality of her abduction.

The question of motive arises. Why - if my thesis is correct - were these two fairly innocuous individuals chosen for this new variation on the old MKULTRA tricks?

The selection might, of course, have been arbitrary. Or perhaps circumstances now irretrievably lost to history rendered the couple a convenient target. Interestingly, Barney

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

Hill had become acquainted (through church functions) with the head of Air Force intelligence at Pease Air Force Base; perhaps this relationship first brought the Hills to the attention of members of the intelligence community. Arguably, the Hills could have been fingered for a wide variety of reasons; as a general rule, the clandestine services prefer to satisfy a number of itches with one scratch.

In fact, the espionage establishment had one particularly compelling reason to focus on the Hills. Barney Hill (a black man) and his wife held important positions in several civil rights organizations, including the NAACP.¹⁶³ The abduction took place during the 1960s, when the NAACP and allied groups fell victim to an increasingly paranoid series of attacks from the FBI and other governmental agencies (under operations COINTELPRO, CHAOS, GARDEN PLOT, etc.).¹⁶⁴ At that time, infiltration of civil rights groups proved a difficult chore; while most left-leaning groups provided easy targets for FBI stooges, the average undercover operative would have had an exceptionally difficult time posing as a black activist. (In 1961, the only black people on the FBI's payroll were the servants in J. Edgar Hoover's home.)

In light of these facts, we should recall Victor Marchetti's anecdote about the cat that the CIA had "wired for sound." Perhaps an ambitious covert scientist proposed a similar experiment, in which a human being would play the role that had once been assigned to the unfortunate feline? As Estabrooks noted, the ultimate espionage agent would be the spy who doesn't KNOW he is a spy. Barney Hill, a well-regarded figure with a near-genius-level IQ, was a safe bet to obtain a leadership role in any group he joined; he would have been remarkably well-positioned, had any outsiders wished to use his ears to overhear prominent black organizers in confidential discussion.

Of course, many intelligence professionals would counter this suggestion by reminding us that eavesdroppers on the civil rights movement had plenty of less-flamboyant methods: Bugging, "black bag" jobs, paying for information, etc. The point is valid. But if the technology to create a "human bug" was developed circa 1961 - and there is documentation suggesting that such is indeed the case¹⁶⁵ - the intelligence agencies would surely have wanted to test the possibilities in the field. And considering the expense of such a test, why not conduct the experiment in such a way as to reap the maximum benefits? Why NOT choose a Barney Hill?

ARMS AND THE ABDUCTEE

Budd Hopkins told the following story during his lecture at the Los Angeles "Whole Life Expo."¹⁶⁶ He considers the case "very good... lots of corroborating witnesses for parts of it." Though not, presumably, for this part.

Hopkins' informant, after the by-now familiar UFO abduction, was given a gun by the aliens. Not a Buck Rogers laser weapon - this was something Dirty Harry might have packed.

The abductee was also given someone to shoot. Not a little grey alien, another human being, tied to a chair. The "visitors" told their armed abductee that this captive had done "evil on earth, and he's a bad person. You have to kill him." If the abductee didn't do as asked, he would never leave the ship.

The captive proclaimed his innocence, and pleaded for his life. The abductee, caught

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

in the middle of all this, became quite upset. (Worth noting: he seems to have at least considered the aliens' request to shoot someone he had never met.) Ultimately, the abductee turned the gun on the aliens and said, "Nobody's going to get shot here."

According to Hopkins, "The aliens said 'Fine. Very good.' They took the gun from him; the man [presumably, the captive] got up, walked away, disappeared, and they went on to the next thing." Obviously, this little drama had been staged - a test of some sort.

I submit that this surreal incident is incomprehensible as either an example of alien incursion or of "Klass-ical" confabulation. The scenario described here EXACTLY parallels numerous experiments in the hypnotic induction of antisocial action as revealed both in the standard hypnosis literature and in declassified ARTICHOKE/MKULTRA documents. For example, compare Hopkins' account to the following, in which Ludwig Mayer, a prominent German hypnosis researcher, describes a classic experiment in the hypnotic induction of criminal action:

I gave a revolver to an elderly and readily suggestible man whom I had just hypnotized. The revolver had just been loaded by Mr. H. with a percussion cap. I explained to [the subject], while pointing to Mr. H., that Mr. H. was a very wicked man whom he should shoot to kill. With great determination he took the revolver and fired a shot directly at Mr. H. Mr. H. fell down pretending to be wounded. I then explained to my subject that the fellow was not yet quite dead, and that he should give him another bullet, which he did without further ado.¹⁶⁷

Of course, if a conservative hypnosis specialist were asked to comment on the above account, he would quickly point out that hypnotic suggestions which work in an experimental situation would not easily succeed outside the laboratory; on some level, the subject will probably sense whether or not he's playing the game for real.¹⁶⁸ Similarly, a conservative abduction researcher would, in reviewing Hopkins' material, emphasize the problems inherent in using testimony derived during regression, where the threat of confabulation lurks. I'll concede both arguments - for the moment - only to insist that they are beside the point. The matter of primary importance, the sticking point which neither Klass nor Hopkins can comfortably confront, is the convergence of detail between Mayer's hypnosis experiment and the testing event related by Hopkins' abductee. Why are these two stories so similar? Did the good Dr. Mayer take pupils from Sirius?¹⁶⁹

Hopkins says he knows of other instances in which abductees found themselves in similar crucibles. So do I. One person I spoke to can remember (sans hypnosis) being handed a gun inside a ziplock baggy and receiving instructions that she will have to use this weapon "on a job." Early in my interviews with her (and with no prompting from me) she recited an apparent cue drilled into her consciousness by the "entities" (as she calls them): "When you see the light, do it tonight," followed by the command, "Execute." (One can only speculate as to how such commands would be used in the field; we will discuss later the use of photovoltaic hypnotic induction.) Though her personal feelings toward firearms are decidedly negative, she vividly describes periods in her "everyday" life when she feels an uncharacteristic, yet overpowering urge to be near a gun - a quasi-sexual desire to pick one up and touch the metal.¹⁷⁰

She is not alone. Another has been so affected by gun fever that he became a security

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

guard, just to be near the things.¹⁷¹ The abductees I have spoken to connect this sudden surge of Ramboism to the UFO experience. But I suggest that the UFO experience may be merely a cover story for another type of training entirely.

One of the primary goals of BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE, and MKULTRA was to determine whether mind control could be used to facilitate “executive action” - i.e., assassination.¹⁷²

It isn't difficult to imagine the media's reaction if a public figure were murdered by someone acting at the behest of the “space brothers.” Who would dare to speak of conspiracy under such circumstances? The hidden controllers could choose a myth structure that conform's to the abductee's personality, then pose as higher beings, who would whisper violence into the ear of the percipient. Using this ruse, the trick that scientists such as Ludwig Mayer could perform in the lab might now be accomplished in the field. As Estabrooks' associate

Jack Tracktir (professor of hypnotherapy at Baylor University) explained to John Marks, antisocial acts can be induced with “no conscience involved” once the proper pretext has been created.¹⁷³

THEY WILL THINK IT'S FLYING SAUCERS

Jenny Randles contributes an anecdote from Great Britain which dovetails nicely with this hypothesis.

In 1965, “Margary” (a pseudonym) lived in Birmingham with her husband, who one night told her to prepare for a “shock and a test.” As Randles describes what she calls a “rogue case”:

They got into his car and drove off, although her memory of the trip became hazy and confused and she does not know where they went. Then she was in a room that was dimly lit and there were people standing around a long table or flat bed. She was out on it and seemed “drugged” and unable to resist. The most memorable of the men was tall and thin with a long nose and white beard. He had thick eyebrows and supposedly said to Margary, “Remember the eyebrows, honey.” A strange medical examination, using odd equipment, was performed on her.

Both the husband and the scientists, using (apparently) hypnotic techniques, flooded her mind with images that, she was told, would be understood only in the future. According to Randles, “At one point one of the ‘examiners’ in the room said to Margary in a tone that made it seem as if he were amused, “They will think it's flying saucers.” The husband also revealed that he had a second identity. After the abduction, this husband (am I going too far to assume his employment with MI6 or some cognate agency?) left, never to be seen again.¹⁷⁴ Margary did not recall the abduction until 1978.

This affair can only baffle a researcher who insists on fitting all abduction accounts into the ET hypothesis; once we free ourselves from that set of assumptions, explanations come easily. I interpret this incident as a case in which the controllers applied the flying saucer cover story sloppily, or to an insufficiently receptive subject. If my thesis is correct, the UFO “hypnotic hoax” technique would still have been fairly new in 1965, particularly outside the United States; perhaps the manipulators hadn't yet got the hang of it. The odd comment about the scientist's eyebrows may refer to an item of disguise donned for the occasion. The unscrupulous hypnotist, unsure about his ability to induce an impenetrable

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

amnesia - and mindful of the price paid by his forerunners in mesmeric criminality¹⁷⁵ - would understandably want to hedge his bets; by indulging in the British penchant for theatrics, he could further protect his anonymity.

A similar incident was brought to my attention by researcher Robert Durant.

The relevant excerpt of his letter follows:

Now I want to turn to a case that I have been investigating for several months. The subject is an abductee. Standard abduction scenario. Twice regressed under hypnosis, the first time by a well-known abduction researcher, the second time by a psychologist with parapsychology connections.

In the course of many hours of listening to the subject, I discovered that she has had close personal contact over a long period of time with several individuals who have federal intelligence connections. She was hypnotized many years ago as part of a TV program devoted to hypnosis. Her abductions began shortly after she attended several long sessions at a laboratory where, ostensibly, she was being tested for ESP abilities. Two other people who were "tested" at this same laboratory have also had abductions. All three were told by the lab to join a local UFO group. During her abductions, the principal alien spoke to the subject in the English language in a normal manner, not via telepathy. She recognized the voice, which was at one time that of her very close friend of yesteryear who was then and is now employed by the CIA. The other voice was that of an individual who works in Washington, has what I will call very strong federal connections as well as a finger in every ufological pie, and who just happened to bump into her at the aforementioned laboratory.

He also anticipated, in the course of telephone conversations, her abductions. When the subject confronted him about this and the voice, he claimed to be psychic. (!)¹⁷⁶

The "ESP" connection is suggestive; the MKULTRA documents betray an astonishing interest on the part of the intelligence agencies in matters parapsychological.

Some researchers would object that examples such as this are rare; most abductions contain no such overt indications of intelligence involvement. But have investigators looked for them? As mentioned in the introduction, a false dichotomy limits much ufological thought; as long as the abduction argument swings between the ET hypothesis and purely psychological theories, researchers will not recognize the relevance of certain key items of background data.

GLIMPSES OF THE CONTROLLERS

In an interview with me, a northern-California abductee - call him "Peter" - reported an experience which was conducted NOT by a small grey alien, but by a human being. The percipient called this man a "doctor." He gave a description of this individual, and even provided a drawing.

Some time after I gathered this information, a southern-California abductee told me her story - which included a description of this very same "doctor." The physical details were so strikingly similar as to erase coincidence. This woman is a leading member of a Los Angeles-based UFO group; three other women in this group report abduction encounters with the same individual.¹⁷⁷

Perhaps those three women were fantacists, attaching themselves to another's

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

narrative. But my northern informant never met these people. Why did he describe the same “doctor”?

One of the abductees I have dealt with insisted, under hypnosis, that her abduction experience brought her to a certain house in the Los Angeles area. She was able to provide directions to the house, even though she had no conscious memory of ever being there. I later learned that this house is indeed occupied by a scientist who formerly (and perhaps currently) conducted clandestine research on mind control technology.

This same abductee described a clandestine brain operation of some sort she underwent in childhood. The neurosurgeon was a human being, not an alien. She even recalled the name. (Note: This is not the same individual referred to above.) When I heard the name, it meant nothing to me - but later I learned that there really was a scientist of that name who specialized in electrode implant research.

Licia Davidson is a thoughtful and articulate abductee, whose fascinating story closely parallels many found in the abductee literature - except for one unusual detail. In an interview with me, described an unsettling recollection of a human being, dressed normally, holding a black box with a protruding antenna. This odd snippet of memory did NOT coincide with the general thrust of her abduction narrative. Could this remembrance represent an all-too-brief segment of accurately-perceived reality interrupting her hypnotically-induced “screen memory”? Peter clearly recalls seeing a similar box during his abduction.

Interestingly, Licia resides in the Los Angeles suburb of Tujunga Canyon, a prominent spot on the abduction map; Many of the abductees I have spoken to first had unusual experiences while living in this area. Near Tujunga Canyon, in Mt. Pacifico, is a hidden former Nike missile base; more than one abductee has described odd, seemingly inexplicable military activity around this location.¹⁷⁸ The reader will recall the connection of Nike missile bases to the disturbing story of Dr. L. Jolyon West, a veteran of MKULTRA.

CULTS

Some abductees I have spoken to have been directed to join certain religious/philosophical sects. These cults often bear close examination.

The leaders of these groups tend to be “ex”-CIA operatives, or Special Forces veterans. They are often linked through personal relations, even though they espouse widely varying traditions. I have heard unsettling reports that the leaders of some of these groups have used hypnosis, drugs, or “mind machines” on their charges. Members of these cults have reported periods of missing time during ceremonies or “study periods.”

I strongly urge abduction researchers to examine closely any small “occult” groups an abductee might join. For example, one familiar leader of the UFO fringe - a man well-known for his espousal of the doctrine of “love and light” - is Virgil Armstrong, a close personal friend of General John Singlaub, the notorious Iran-Contra player, who recently headed the neo-fascist World Anti-Communist League. Armstrong, who also happens to be an ex-Green Beret and former CIA operative, figured into my inquiry in an interesting fashion: An abductee of my acquaintance was told - by her “entities,” naturally - to seek out this UFO spokesman and join his “sky-watch” activities, which, my source alleges,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

included a mass channelling session intended to send debilitating “negative” vibrations to Constantine Chernenko, then the leader of the Soviet Union. Of course, intracerebral voices may have a purely psychological origin, so Armstrong can hardly be held to task for the abductee’s original “directive.”¹⁷⁹ Still, his past associations with military intelligence inevitably bring disturbing possibilities to mind.

Even more ominous than possible ties between UFO cults and the intelligence community are the cults’ links with the shadowy I AM group, founded by Guy Ballard in the 1930s.¹⁸⁰ According to researcher David Stuppel, “If you look at the contactee groups today, you’ll see that most of the stable, larger ones are actually neo-I AM groups, with some sort of tie to Ballard’s organization.”¹⁸¹ This cult, therefore, bears investigation.

Guy Ballard’s “Mighty I AM Religious Activity,” grew, in large part, out of William Dudley Pelley’s Silver Shirts, an American Nazi organization.¹⁸² Although Ballard himself never openly proclaimed Nazi affiliation, his movement was tinged with an extremely right-wing political philosophy, and in secret meetings he “decreed” the death of President Franklin Roosevelt.¹⁸³ The I AM philosophy derived from Theosophy, and in this author’s estimation bears a more-than-cursory resemblance to the Theosophically-based teachings that informed the proto-Nazi German occult lodges.¹⁸⁴

After the war, Pelley (who had been imprisoned for sedition during the hostilities) headed an occult-oriented organization call Soulcraft, based in Noblesville, Indiana. Another Soulcraft employee was the controversial contactee George Hunt Williamson (real name: Michel d’Obrenovic), who coauthored UFOs CONFIDENTIAL with John McCoy, a proponent of the theory that a Jewish banking conspiracy was preventing disclosure of the solution to the UFO mystery.¹⁸⁵ Later, Williamson founded the I AM-oriented Brotherhood of the Seven Rays in Peru.¹⁸⁶ Another famed contactee, George Van Tassel, was associated with Pelley and with the notoriously anti-Semitic Reverend Wesley Swift (founder of the group which metamorphosed into the Aryan Nations).¹⁸⁷

The most visible offspring of I AM is Elizabeth Clare Prophet’s Church Universal and Triumphant, a group best-known for its massive arms caches in underground bunkers. CUT was recently exposed in COVERT ACTION INFORMATION BULLETIN as a conduit of CIA funds,¹⁸⁸ and according to researcher John Judge, has ties to organizations allied to the World Anti-Communist League.¹⁸⁹ Prophet is becoming involved in abduction research and has sponsored presentations by Budd Hopkins and other prominent investigators. In his book THE ARMSTRONG REPORT: ETs AND UFOs: THEY NEED US, WE DON’T NEED THEM [sic],¹⁹⁰ Virgil Armstrong directs troubled abductees toward Prophet’s group. (Perhaps not insignificantly, he also suggests that abductees plagued by implants alleviate their problem by turning to “the I AM force” within.¹⁹¹)

Another UFO channeler, Frederick Von Mierers, has promulgated both a cult with a strong I AM orientation¹⁹² and an apparent con-game involving over-appraised gemstones. Mierers is an anti-Semite who contends that the Holocaust never happened and that the Jews control the world’s wealth.

UFORUM is a flying saucer organization popular with Los Angeles-area abductees; its founder is Penny Harper, a member of a radical Scientology breakaway group which connects the teachings of L. Ron Hubbard with pronouncements against “The Illuminati” (a mythical secret society) and other betes noir familiar from right-wing conspiracy

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

literature. Harper directs members of her group to read *THE SPOTLIGHT*, an extremist tabloid (published by Willis Carto's Liberty Lobby) which denies the reality of the Holocaust and posits a "Zionist" scheme to control the world.¹⁹³

More than one unwary abductee has fallen in with groups such as those listed above. It isn't difficult to imagine how some of these questionable groups might mold an abductee's recollection of his experience - and perhaps help direct his future actions.

Some modern abductees, with otherwise-strong claims, claim encounters with blond, "Nordic" aliens reminiscent of the early contactee era. Surely, the "Nordic" appearance of these aliens sprang from the dubious spiritual tradition of Van Tassell, Ballard, Pelley, McCoy, etc. Why, then, are some modern abductees seeing these very same otherworldly Uebermenschen?

One abductee of my acquaintance claims to have had beneficial experiences with these "blond" aliens who, he believes, came originally from the Pleiades. Interestingly, in the late 1960s, the psychopathically anti-Semitic Rev. Wesley Swift predicted this odd twist in the abduction tale. In a broadcast "sermon," he spoke at length about UFOs, claiming that there were "good" aliens and "bad" aliens. The good ones, he insisted, were tall, blond Aryans - who hailed from the Pleiades. He made this pronouncement long before the current trends in abduction lore.

Could some of the abductions be conducted by an extreme right-wing element within the national security establishment? Disagreeable as the possibility seems, we should note that the "lunatic right" is represented in all other walks of life; certainly hard-rightists have taken positions within the military-intelligence complex as well.

GROUNDS FOR FURTHER RESEARCH

John Keel's ground-breaking *OPERATION TROJAN HORSE*, written in an era when abductees still came under the category of "contactees," includes the following intriguing data, gleaned from Keel's extensive field work:

Contactees often find themselves suddenly miles from home without knowing how they got there. They either have induced amnesia, wiping out all memory of the trip, or they were taken over by some means and made the trip in a blacked-out state. Should they encounter a friend on the way, the friend would probably note that their eyes seemed glassy and their behavior seemed peculiar. But if the friend spoke to them, he might receive a curt reply.

In the language of the contactees this process is called being used...I have known silent contactees to disappear from their homes for long periods, and when they returned, they had little or no recollection of where they had been. One girl sent me a postcard from the Bahama Islands - which surprised me because I knew she was very poor. When she returned, she told me that she had only one memory of the trip. She said she remembered getting off a jet at an airport - she couldn't recall getting on the jet or making the trip - and there "Indians" met her and took her baggage.... The next thing she knew she was back home again.¹⁹⁴

Puzzling indeed - unless one has read *THE CONTROL OF CANDY JONES*, which speaks of Candy's "blacked out" periods, during which she travelled to Taiwan as a CIA courier, adopting her second personality. The mind control explanation perfectly solves all the

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

mysteries in the above excerpt - save, perhaps, the odd remark about "Indians."

Hickson and Mendez' UFO CONTACT AT PASCAGOULA contains the interesting information that Charles Hickson awakes at night feeling that he is on the verge of re-awakening some terribly important memory connected with his encounter - yet ostensibly he can account for every moment of his adventure.

Hickson also received a letter from an apparent abductee who claims that the grey aliens are actually automatons of some sort - perhaps an unconscious recognition of the unreality of the hypnotically-induced "cover story."¹⁹⁵ In this light, the film version of COMMUNION - whose screenplay was written by Whitley Strieber - takes on a new interest: The abduction sequences contain inexplicable images indicating that the "greys" are really props, or masks.

COMMUNION and TRANSFORMATION contain passages detailing what seems to be a hazily-recalled Candy-Jones-style espionage adventure, in which Strieber was shanghaied by a "coach" and a "nurse" (both human beings) who apparently drugged him.¹⁹⁶ Recall the example of Keel's informants. Moreover, TRANSFORMATION contains lengthy descriptions of alien beings working in apparent collusion with human beings.

Abductee Christa Tilton also recalls both human beings and aliens playing a part in her experience. Ever since her abduction, she claims, she has been "shadowed" by a mysterious federal agent she calls John Wallis.¹⁹⁷ Christa's husband, Tom Adams, has confirmed Wallis' existence.¹⁹⁸

In his REPORT ON COMMUNION, Ed Conroy who seems to have become a participant in, and not merely an observer of, the phenomenon - describes harassment by helicopters, which as we have already noted, seems to be quite a common occurrence in abductee situations.¹⁹⁹ Researchers blithely assume that these incidents represent governmental attempts to spy on UFO percipients. But this assertion is ridiculous. Helicopters are extremely expensive to operate, and the engines of espionage have perfected numerous alternative methods to gather information. After all, we now have a fairly extensive bibliography of FBI, CIA, and military efforts to spy on numerous movements favoring domestic social change. Why have no veterans of CHAOS or COINTELPRO (either victim or victimizer) spoken of helicopters? Obviously the choppers serve some other purpose beyond mere surveillance. One possibility might be the propagation of electromagnetic waves which might affect the perceptions/ behaviors of an implanted individual. (Indeed, I have heard rumors of helicopters being used in electronic "crowd control" operations in Vietnam and elsewhere; alas, the information is far from hard.)

Contactee Eldon Kerfoot has written of his suspicions that human manipulators, not aliens, may be the ultimate puppeteers engineering his experiences. He describes a sudden compulsion to kill a fellow veteran of the Korean conflict - a man Kerfoot had no logical reason to distrust or dislike, yet whom he "sensed" to have been a traitor to his country. Fortunately, the assassination never materialized.²⁰⁰ But the situation exactly parallels incidents described in released ARTICHOKE documents concerning the remote hypnotic induction of antisocial behavior.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

ONE LAST SPECULATION

Renato Vesco's INTERCEPT BUT DON'T SHOOT²⁰¹ outlines a fascinating scenario for the "secret weapon" hypothesis of UFOs. Vesco points out that if these devices are one day to be used in a superpower conflict, the attacking power would be well-served by the myth of the UFO as an extraterrestrial craft, for the besieged nation would not know the true nature of its opponent. Perhaps, then, one purpose of the UFO abductions is to engender and maintain the legend of the little grey aliens. For the hidden manipulators, the abductions could be, in and of themselves, a propaganda coup.

FINAL THOUGHTS

I do not insist dogmatically on the scenario that I have outlined. I do not wish to dissuade abduction researchers from exploring other avenues - indeed, I strongly encourage such work to continue. Nor can I easily account for some aspects of the abduction narratives - for example, any suggestions I could offer concerning the reports of genetic experimentation would be extremely speculative.

But I do insist on a fair hearing of this hypothesis. Criticism is encouraged; that which does not destroy my thesis will make it stronger. I ask only that my critics refrain from intellectual laziness; mere differences in world-view do not constitute a valid attack. God is found in the details.

I recognize the dangers inherent in making this thesis public. New and distressing abductee confabulations may result. I would prefer that the audience for this paper be restricted to abduction researchers, not victims, who might be unduly influenced. However, in a society that prides itself on ostensibly free press, such restrictions are unthinkable. Therefore, I can only beg any abduction victims who might read this paper to attempt a superhuman objectivity. The thesis I have outlined is promising, and (should trepanation ever provide us with an example of an actual abductee implant) susceptible of proof. But mine is not the only hypothesis. The abductee's unrewarding task is to report what he or she has experienced as truthfully as possible, untainted by outside speculation.

Whether or not future investigation proves UFO abductions to be a product of mind control experimentation, I feel that this paper has, at least, provided evidence of a serious danger facing those who hold fast to the ideals of individual freedom. We cannot long ignore this menace.

A spectre haunts the democratic nations - the spectre of technofascism. All the powers of the espionage empire and the scientific establishment have entered into an unholy alliance to evoke this spectre: Psychiatrist and spy, Dulles and Delgado, microwave specialists and clandestine operators.

A mind is a terrible thing to waste - and a worse thing to commandeer.

ENDNOTES

1. Budd Hopkins, MISSING TIME (New York: Richard Marek Publishers, 1981) and INTRUDERS (New York: Random House, 1987).
2. Whitley Strieber, COMMUNION (New York: Beech Tree Books, 1987).
3. Cannon, "Psychiatric Abuse of UFO Witness," UFO magazine, vol. 3, no. 5 (December, 1988)
4. Philip Klass, UFO ABDUCTIONS: A DANGEROUS GAME (Buffalo: Prometheus Books,

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

1988). Klass makes some sharp observations, which are undercut by his refusal to interview abductees directly. The work has no footnotes and depends heavily on the work of Dr. Martin Orne - of whom more anon.

5. See bibliography.

6. New York: Bantam Books, 1979.

7. See generally PROJECT MKULTRA, THE CIA'S PROGRAM OF RESEARCH IN BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION, joint hearing before the Select Committee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, Unites States Senate (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1977).

8. Robert Eringer, "Secret Agent Man," ROLLING STONE, 1985.

9. John Marks interview with Victor Marchetti (Marks files, available at the National Security Archives, Washington, D.C.).

10. In an interview with John Marks, hypnosis expert Milton Kline, a veteran of clandestine experimentation in this field, averred that his work for the government continued. Since the interview took place in 1977, years after the CIA allegedly halted mind control research, we must conclude either that the CIA lied, or that another agency continued the work. In another interview with Marks, former Air Force-CIA liaison L. Fletcher Prouty confirmed that the Department of Defense ran studies either in conjunction with or parallel to those operated by the CIA. (Marks files.)

11. Estabrooks, HYPNOSIS (New York: E.P. Dutton & Co., Inc., 1957 [revised edition]), 13-14.

12. A copy of this letter can be found in the Marks files.

13. Estabrooks attracted an eclectic group of friends, including J. Edgar Hoover and Alan Watts.

14. Interview with daughter Doreen Estabrooks, Marks files, Washington, D.C.

15. Martin A. Lee and Bruce Shlain, ACID DREAMS (New York: Grove Press, 1985) 3-4; Marks, THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE", 6-8

16. Marks, *ibid.* 4-6.

17. Edward Hunter, BRAINWASHING IN RED CHINA (New York: Vanguard Press, 1951.). Hunter invented the term "brainwashing" in a September 24, 1950 Miami NEWS article.

18. "Japan's Germ Warfare Experiments," THE GLOBE AND MAIL (Toronto), May 19, 1982.

19. Walter Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL (New York: Dell, 1978), 191-2, quoting Warren Commission documents. We cannot fairly derive from this statement a sanguine attitude about PRESENT Soviet capabilities; in this field, even outdated technology suffices for mischief.

20. Marks, THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE", 60-61. A folk entomology has it that the "MK" of MKULTRA stands for "Mind Kontrol." According to Marks, TSS prefixed the cryptonyms of all its projects with these initials. Note, though, that MKULTRA was preceded by a still-mysterious TSS program called QKHILLTOP.

21. *Ibid.*, 224-229. Seven MKULTRA subprojects were continued, under TSS

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

supervision, as MKSEARCH. This project ended in 1972. CIA apologists often proclaim that “brainwashing” research ceased in either 1962 or 1972; these blandishments refer to the TSS projects, not to the ORD work, which remains TERRA INCOGNITA for independent researchers. Marks discovered that the ORD research was so voluminous that retrieving documents via FOIA would have proven unthinkably expensive.

22. For a description of the research into parapsychology, see Ronald M. McRae’s *MIND WARS* (New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1984). The best book available on a subject which awaits a truly authoritative text.

23. Abduction researcher and hypnotherapist Miranda Park, of Lancaster, California, reports that she has viewed such anomalies in abductee MRI scans. See also Whitley Strieber, *TRANSFORMATION* (New York: Beech Tree Books, 1988) 246-247. At this writing, both Strieber and Hopkins report initially promising results in their efforts to document the presence of these “extras” in abductees.

24. Allegedly, the experiment took place in 1964. However, in *WERE WE CONTROLLED?* (New Hyde Park, NY: University Books, 1967), the pseudonymous “Lincoln Lawrence” makes an interesting argument (on page 36) that the demonstration took place some years earlier.

25. New York: Harper and Row, 1969. Much of Delgado’s work was funded by the Office of Naval Intelligence, a common conduit for CIA funds during the 11:45 and ’60s. (Gordon Thomas’ *JOURNEY INTO MADNESS* (New York: Bantam, 1989) misleadingly implies that CIA interest in Delgado’s work began in 1972.)

26. J.M.R. Delgado. “Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients,” *PSYCHOTECHNOLOGY* (Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Ralph K. Schwitzgebel, editors; New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1973): 195.

27. David Krech, “Controlling the Mind Controllers,” *THINK* 32 (July-August), 1966.

28. Delgado, *PHYSICAL CONTROL OF THE MIND*

29. Delgado, “Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients,” 195.

30. Note, for example, Charles Hickson’s account of the Pascagoula Incident. Charles Hickson and William Mendez, *UFO CONTACT AT PASCAGOULA* (Tuscon: Wendelle C. Stevens, 1983).

31. John Ranleigh, *THE AGENCY* (New York: Simon and Shuster, 1986): 208. Marchetti casts this story in the form of an amusing anecdote: After much time and expense, a cat was suitably trained and prepared - only, on its first assignment, to be run over by a taxi. Marchetti neglects to point out that nothing stopped the Agency from getting another cat. Or from using a human being.

32. Of course, this suggestion raises the knotty question of whether the abductees suffer from a form of schizophrenia, which may also be characterized by “voices.” I refer the reader to the work of Hopkins, Strieber, Thomas Bullard, and others who have described the difficulties of ascribing all abductions to psychotic states.

33. Alan W. Scheflin and Edward M. Opton, Jr., *THE MIND MANIPULATORS* (London: Paddington Press, 1978), 347.

34. Thomas, *JOURNEY INTO MADNESS*, 276.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

35. James Olds, "Hypothalamic Substrates of Reward," *PHYSIOLOGICAL REVIEWS*, 1962, 42:554; "Emotional Centers in the Brain," *SCIENCE JOURNAL*, 1967, 3 (5).

36. Vernon Mark and Frank Ervin, *VIOLENCE AND THE BRAIN* (New York: Harper and Row, 1970), chapter 12, excerpted in *INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS AND THE FEDERAL ROLE IN BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION*, prepared by the Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights of the Committee of the Judiciary, United States Senate (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1974).

37. John Lilly, *THE SCIENTIST* (Berkeley, Ronin Publishing, 1988 [revised edition]), 90. Monkeys allowed to stimulate themselves continually via ESB brought themselves to orgasm once every three minutes, sixteen hours a day. Scientific gatherings throughout the world saw motion pictures of these experiments, which surely made spectacular cinema.

38. Schefflin and Opton, *THE MIND MANIPULATORS*, 336-337. Heath even monitored his patient's brain responses during the subject's first heterosexual encounter. Such is the nature of the brave new world before us.

39. Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Richard M. Bird, "Sociotechnical Design Factors in Remote Instrumentation with Humans in Natural Environments,"

40. Thomas, *JOURNEY INTO MADNESS*, 277. In the *BEHAVIOR RESEARCH METHODS AND INSTRUMENTATION* article referenced above, Schwitzgebel details how the radio signals may be fed into a telephone via a modem and thus analyzed by a computer anywhere in the world.

41. Schefflin and Opton, *THE MIND MANIPULATORS*, 347-349.

42. Louis Tackwood and the Citizen's Research and Investigation Committee, *THE GLASS HOUSE TAPES* (New York: Avon, 1973), 226.

43. Perry London, *BEHAVIOR CONTROL* (New York: Harper and Row, 1969), 145

44. Schefflin and Opton, *THE MIND MANIPULATORS*, 351-353; Tackwood, *THE GLASS HOUSE TAPES*, 228.

45. "Beepers in kids' heads could stop abductors," Las Vegas *SUN*, Oct. 27, 1987.

46. Lilly, *THE SCIENTIST*, 91.

47. Marks, *THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE"*, 151-154.

48. Interestingly, Lilly has come out of the closet as a sort of proto-Strieber; *THE SCIENTIST* recounts his close interaction with alien (though not necessarily extraterrestrial) forces which he labels "solid state entities."

49. The story of Deep Trance, an MKULTRA "insider" who provided invaluable information, is somewhat involved. I do not know who Trance is/was and Marks may not know either. He contacted Trance via the writer of an article published shortly before research on *THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE"* began, addressing his informant "Dear Source whose anonymity I respect." I respect it too hence my reticence to name the aforementioned article, which may mark a trail to Trance. The fact that I have not followed this trail would not prevent others from doing so.

50. London, *BEHAVIOR CONTROL*, 139.

51. See generally, *UFO magazine*, Vol. 4, No. 2; especially the interesting contribution

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

by Whitley Strieber.

52. Lawrence, WERE WE CONTROLLED?, 3637; Anita Gregory, "Introduction to Leonid L. Vasilev's EXPERIMENTS IN DISTANT INFLUENCE," PSYCHIC WARFARE: FACT OR FICTION (editor: John White) (Nottinghamshire: Aquarian, 1988) 34-57.

53. Lawrence, WERE WE CONTROLLED?, 38.

54. Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL, 261 264.

55. Ibid., 263.

56. Lawrence, WERE WE CONTROLLED?, 52.

57. HUMAN DRUG TESTING BY THE CIA, 202.

58. Note especially the Supreme Court's decision in CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY ET AL. V. SIMS, ET AL. (No. 83-1075; decided April 16, 1986). The egregious and dangerous majority opinion in this case held that disclosure of the names of scientists and institutions involved in MKULTRA posed an "unacceptable risk of revealing 'intelligence sources.' The decisions of the [CIA] Director, who must of course be familiar with 'the whole picture,' as judges are not, are worthy of great deference...it is conceivable that the mere explanation of why information must be withheld can convey valuable information to a foreign intelligence agency." How do we square this continuing need for secrecy with the CIA's protestations that MKULTRA achieved little success, that the studies were conducted within the Nueremberg statues governing medical experiments, and that the research was made available in the open literature?

59. Letter, P.A. Lindstrom to Robert Naeslund, July 27, 1983; copy available from Martti Koski, Kiilinpellontie 2, 21290 Rusko, Finland. Lindstrom writes that he fully agrees with Lincoln Lawrence, author of WERE WE CONTROLLED?

60. Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL, 265. I have attempted without success to contact Dr. Lindstrom.

61. Ibid., 233-249. This interview was reprinted without attribution in a bizarre compendium of UFO rumors called THE MATRIX, compiled by "Valdamar Valerian" (actually John Grace, allegedly a Captain working for Air Force intelligence).

62. Robert Anton Wilson, "Adventures with Head Hardware," MAGICAL BLEND, 23 [of course], July 1989. 36

63. Michael Hutchison, MEGA BRAIN (New York: Ballantine, 1986); Gerald Oster, "Auditory Beats in the Brain," SCIENTIFIC AMERICAN, September, 1973.

64. Marilyn Ferguson, THE BRAIN REVOLUTION (New York: Taplinger, 1973), 90.

65. Ibid., 91-92. The presence of delta in a waking subject can indicate pathology.

66. Bio-Pacer promotional and price sheet, available from Lindemann Laboratories, 3463 State Street, #264, Santa Barbara, CA 93105.

67. Hutchison, MEGA BRAIN, 117-118. Compare Light's observations about "the grant game" to Sid Gottlieb's protestations that nearly all "mind control" research was openly published.

68. Thomas Martinez and John Gunther, THE BROTHERHOOD OF MURDER (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988), 230.

69. Interview, Sandy Monroe of the Los Angeles office of the Christic Institute.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

70. See generally Paul Brodeur, *THE ZAPPING OF AMERICA* (Toronto, George J. MacLeod, 1977).

71. Until recently, the American Embassy was on a street named after the composer.

72. It was finally determined that the microwaves were used to receive transmissions from bugs planted within the embassy. DARPA director George H. Heimeier went on record stating that PANDORA was never designed to study "microwaves as a surveillance tool." See Anne Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology," FULL DISCLOSURE #15. I would note that the Soviet embassy was "bugged and waved" in Canada during the 1950s, and according to the Los Angeles TIMES (June 5, 1989), the Soviet embassy in Britain had been similarly affected.

73. Ronald I. Adams R.A. Williams, *BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS OF ELECTROMAGNETIC RADIATION (RADIOWAVES AND MICROWAVES) EURASIAN COMMUNIST COUNTRIES*, (Defense Intelligence Agency, March 1976.) Brodeur notes that much of the work ascribed to the Soviets in this report was actually first accomplished by scientists in the United States. Keeler argues that this report constitutes an example of "mirror imaging" - i.e., parading domestic advances as a foreign threat, the better to pry funding from a suitably-fearful Congress.

74. Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology."

75. R.J. MacGregor, "A Brief Survey of Literature Relating to Influence of Low Intensity Microwaves on Nervous Function" (Santa Monica: RAND Corporation, 1970).

76. Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology."

77. Larry Collins, "Mind Control," *PLAYBOY*, January 1990.

78. Allan H. Frey, "Behavioral Effects of Electromagnetic Energy," *SYMPOSIUM ON BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS AND MEASUREMENTS OF RADIO FREQUENCIES/MICROWAVES*, DeWitt G. Hazzard, editor (U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1977).

79. Quoted in *THE APPLICATION OF TESLA'S TECHNOLOGY IN TODAY'S WORLD* (Montreal: Lafferty, Hardwood & Partners, Ltd., 1978).

80. Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology."

81. L. George Lawrence, "Electronics and Brain Control," *POPULAR ELECTRONICS*, July 1973.

82. Susan Schiefelbein, "The Invisible Threat," *SATURDAY REVIEW*, September 15, 1979.

83. E. Preston, "Studies on the Nervous System, Cardiovascular Function and Thermoregulation," *BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS OF RADIO FREQUENCY AND MICROWAVE RADIATION*, edited by H.M. Assenheim (Ottawa, Canada: National Research Council of Canada, 1979), 138-141.

84. Robert O. Becker, *THE BODY ELECTRIC* (New York: William Morrow, 1985) 318-319.

85. *Ibid.*

86. *Ibid.*, 321.

87. See Bowart's *OPERATION MIND CONTROL*, page 218, for an interesting example

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

of this “rationalization” process at work in the case of Sirhan Sirhan, who was convicted for the assassination of Robert F. Kennedy. In prison, Sirhan was hypnotized by Dr. Bernard Diamond, who instructed Sirhan to climb the bars of his cage like a monkey. He did so. After the trance was removed, Sirhan was shown tapes of his actions; he insisted that he “acted like a monkey” of his own free will - he claimed he wanted the exercise.

88. Keeler suggests that the proposal was revealed only because Schapitz’ sensationalistic implications may have worked to his discredit - and therefore hide the REAL research. Personally, I don’t accept this argument, but I respect Keeler’s instincts enough to repeat her caveat here.

89. Margaret Cheney’s *TESLA: A MAN OUT OF TIME* (New York: Dell, 1981), the most reliable book in the sea of wild speculation surrounding this extraordinary scientist, confirms Tesla’s early work with the psychological effects of electromagnetic radiation. See especially pages 101-104; note also the afterword, in which we learn that certain government agencies have kept important research by Tesla hidden from the general public.

90. Noted in Lawrence, *WERE WE CONTROLLED?*, 29.

91. Particularly one Thomas Bearden of Huntsville, Alabama; I have in my possession a document written by Bearden associate Andrew Michrowski which identifies Bearden as an intelligence agent for an undisclosed agency.

92. Kathleen McAuliffe, “The Mind Fields,” *OMNI* magazine, February 1985.

93. May 5, 1985.

94. I refer to an individual who later wrote a very clearheaded and thoughtful letter to Dr. Paul Lowinger, who has graciously made his files available to me. For now, I feel compelled to withhold this person’s name.

95. Cameron became president of the American Psychiatric Association, the Canadian Psychiatric Association, and the World Association of Psychiatrists, He previously sat on the Nueremberg panel, helping to draw up the statutes governing ethical medical behavior!

96. In particular, Opton and Schefflin’s overview, though excellent in scope and detail, continually seeks reassuring interpretations of evidence which points toward more distressing conclusions.

97. Martin T. Orne, “Can a hypnotized subject be compelled to carry out otherwise unacceptable behavior?” *INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS*, 1972, Vol. 20, 101-117.

98. Marks mentions, in a letter to Orne, the latter’s claim to have been an unwitting participant in subproject 84. Yet the papers released concerning subproject 84 clearly establish the Agency’s willingness to put Orne in the know; Orne later admitted to Marks that he was made aware of his CIA sponsorship (Marks, *THE SEARCH FOR “THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE”*, 172-173). In an interview with Marks, Orne discounted the story of Candy Jones (which we shall recount later) by insisting that if such an experiment had occurred “someone in some agency would have come to me.” Why would they come to him about a supersecret project, unless Orne had a high security clearance and worked extensively with intelligence agencies? Note also that Orne conducted extensive studies

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

for the Office of Naval Research from June 1, 1968 to May 31, 1971. He has also been funded by DARPA. Moreover, I consider noteworthy the fact that Orne somehow became president of the Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis despite the fact that the organization had decided not to have a president. (This fact was related to Marks by a prominent hypnosis specialist in an off-the-record interview that I probably wasn't supposed to see.)

99. The story has been told many times. See Turner and Christian's *THE KILLING OF ROBERT F. KENNEDY*, 207-208; also Peter J. Reiter, *ANTISOCIAL OR CRIMINAL ACTS AND HYPNOSIS* (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C. Thomas, 1958).

100. John G. Watkins, "Antisocial behavior under hypnosis: Possible or impossible?" *INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL FOR CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS*, 1972, Vol. 20, 95-100.

101. Milton H. Erickson, "An experimental investigation of the possible antisocial use of hypnosis," *PSYCHIATRY*, 1939, vol. 2. Erickson argues that if a hypnotist has convinced his subject to misperceive reality, then resulting actions cannot be considered "antisocial," for the actions would be acceptable within the subject's internal reality construct. This argument strikes me as semantic quibbling.

102. See generally Flo Conway and Jim Seigelman, *SNAPPING* (New York: Lippincott, 1978).

103. Lee and Schlain, *ACID DREAMS*, 8-9.

104. John Marks interview with Victor Marchetti, December 19, 1977 (Marks files).

105. Martin T. Orne, "On the Mechanisms of Posthypnotic Amnesia," *THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS*, 1966, vol. 14, 121-134. Orne's work with posthypnotic amnesia was funded by NIMH, the Air Force Office of Scientific Research, and the Office of Naval Research. I should like to hear what innocent explanation, if any, the Air Force has to offer to explain their interest in post-hypnotic amnesia.

106. Bowart, *OPERATION MIND CONTROL*, 242-243. 38

107. Obviously Allan Dulles. This may have been a hypnotically-induced delusion; on the other hand, Dulles' legendary sexual rapacity makes this claim rather less unlikely than one might first assume.

108. Always the best indicator of whether or not hypnosis is genuine; I can't understand why Orne didn't use this test in the Blanchi case.

109. Herbert Spiegel, "Hypnosis and evidence: Help or hindrance," *ANN. N.Y. ACAD. SCI.*; 1980, 347, 73-85.

110. See, for example, Kroger, *HYPNOSIS AND BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION*, 21-22

111. See especially Klass, *UFO ABDUCTIONS: A DANGEROUS GAME*, 60-61. Orne, interviewed here, makes reference to the work summarized in his article "The use and misuse of hypnosis in court" (*INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL HYPNOSIS*, 1979, vol. 27, 311-341.)

112. Klass argues that ufologists, in conducting hypnotic regression sessions, inadvertently cue their subjects. A close reading of his text reveals that he never proves or claims that such "cues" have taken place in any individual instance; he simply believes

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

that cueing MIGHT have occurred. Had Klass been more willing to deal with abductees directly, he might have found evidence of cause and effect; as it stands, his argument really amounts to no more than a suggestion. For all that, I find his ideas regarding the running of "clean" hypnotic regression sessions potentially valuable.

113. Marks, THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE", 34-37.

114. Donald Bain, THE CONTROL OF CANDY JONES (Chicago, Playboy Press, 1976).

115. The use of hypnotized couriers in warfare goes back to the 19th century.

116. Estabrooks, HYPNOTISM, 193-214.

117. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files). In another interview, Professor Clare Young (a colleague of Estabrooks' at Colgate University) confirmed that Estabrooks' hypnosis work for the government has never been published.

118. Or could her marriage have been part of the program? "Long John," as he was popularly known, was famous in UFO circles, and had provided a forum for such early-day contactees as Howard Menger. He also knew Jackie Gleason, a prominent (if unlikely) name in the "crashed disc" rumor vaults. Could Candy have been assigned to discover what Nebel knew?

119. Marks files. John Marks did excellent work on the Candy Jones story; he erred - almost unforgivably - on the side of conservatism when he refused to include information about this incident in his book. I know the name of the institute involved; however, since Candy saw fit to keep this aspect of her story secret (probably for sound legal reasons), I shall follow her lead.

120. Schefflin and Opton, THE MIND MANIPULATORS, 446-447.

121. Interviews, Marks files. One of Marks' informants offered the interesting speculation that Candy's torture sessions were not conducted in the field, but in the lab - her entire mission might have been a hypnoprogrammed fantasy.

122. The information about Candy's CIA files stems from a telephone interview with Candy Jones. A problem looms here: CIA cover stories unravel like the skin of an onion; once you remove the outer layer, the next lie is revealed. In the case of Candy Jones, the substrata of buncombe involves allegations that she WILLINGLY complied with the CIA, and used Jensen's hypnosis experiments as a rationalization for her compliance. Such is the explanation offered by certain of Marks' informants; alas, Opton and Schefflin seem to have bought this line. Anyone familiar with the vile acts of self-degradation to which Candy's programmers subjected her will laugh this story out of court. No one, short of a severely psychotic masochist, would willingly undergo what she went through.

123. Marks files.

124. William Kroger, CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS (Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1963), 299.

125. Recently, ufologist Jim Moseley, an acquaintance of Candy's, has claimed that an unidentified source on Nebel's "inner circle" once, off-the-record, pronounced Candy's story "a crock." This assertion deserves careful and respectful consideration. Still, Moseley won't identify his source, and we have no way of telling if this insider spoke from instinct or certain knowledge, or indeed, what he really meant. Did he feel Candy

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

was fantasizing or fibbing? If the former, why did her hallucinations match details of MKULTRA released only after publication of her book? If the latter, how are we to explain the many hypnotic regression tapes, at least some of which were made available to outside investigators? (Fairly elaborate, for a hoax.) In any case, how could Candy have known the fact (confirmed by Marks' associates) that Kroger taught "Jensen" at a certain West-coast institute? Why, if the story was "a crock," would Candy risk libel suits by naming - to associates and investigators, if not to the general public - real-life hypnotherapists? All in all, I would suggest that Moseley's "insider" was speaking glibly, and did not know the true facts.

126. Philadelphia, Lippincott, 1976.

127. Ibid., 415.

128. Similar paranoid outbreaks led to the dissolution of Dr. Richard Neal's UFO abductee group in Los Angeles, according to a phone interview I had with Dr. Neal.

129. Affidavit of Dr. Simpson-Kallas in the case of Sirhan-Sirhan, 1973; see Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL, 225.

130. All true MPs have experienced some form of abuse or trauma, psychological or physical, during childhood.

131. One was ritually abused in an occult setting. If I were a "spy-chiatriest" scouting potential fodder for mind control experiments, I would seek out abused children from military families. (A military background would ensure that the "right" doctor gets access to the child.) Abduction researchers should look for such a pattern.

132. I refer here to the vast upsurge in alien abductions which took place that year; see generally Kevin Randle, THE OCTOBER SCENARIO (Middle Coast, 1988). Of course, abductions (or, according to my hypothesis, disguised mind control operations) occurred previous to this year.

133. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files).

134. Brenda Butler ETAL., SKY CRASH, expanded edition (London: Grafton Books, 1986), 305-321, 354 355.

135. Telephone interview with Nancy Wright.

136. Telephone interview with Miranda Parks.

137. William Moore, "UFOs and the U.S. Government," FOCUS, vol. 4, June 30, 1989. Moore's role in the affair strikes me as highly questionable, even scandalous - although at least here we have one instance of direct and irrefutable "insider" testimony of government harassment.

138. Some have also raised questions about his psychiatric treatment of Oswald assassin Jack Ruby. I find it odd that a CIA mind control veteran - who did NOT reside or practice in Dallas - should have been assigned to the Ruby case.

139. Samiel Chavkin, THE MIND STEALERS (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1978), 96-107.

140. Raymond Fowler, THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR (New York: Prentice Hall, 1979).

141. New York: Warner Books, 1989; 198-202.

142. Ruth Montgomery, ALIENS AMONG US (Ballantine, 1985), 49. My article

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

“Psychiatric Abuse of UFO Witness,” referred to earlier, also documents this phenomenon.

143. Chung-Kwang Chou and Arthur W. Guy, “Quantization of Microwave Biological Effects,” SYMPOSIUM OF BIOLOGICAL EFFECTS AND MEASUREMENT OF RADIO FREQUENCY/MICROWAVES, edited by Dewitt G. Hazzard (U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1977).

144. MIAMI HERALD, May 28, 1984 and June 6, 1984; NATIONAL EXAMINER, vol. 22, no. 18, April 30, 1985. Although the EXAMINER is a supermarket tabloid, and therefore a questionable source, this periodical has rendered researchers the service of printing the X-ray of Petit’s brain, showing the implant.

145. Los Angeles TIMES, March 28, 1988.

146. Raymond Fowler, THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR, PHASE TWO (Reward, 1982). This book includes rare photographs of the unmarked helicopters which have plagued this abduction victim and her family.

147. A mutual friend described for me an incident in which the former SEAL, mistakenly perceiving a threat, almost instantly felled, and nearly killed, a man twice his size. Whatever the truth of my informant’s other statements, he certainly has received advanced combat training.

148. Fenton Bresler, WHO KILLED JOHN LENNON? (New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1989), 45-46.

149. Bowart, OPERATION MIND CONTROL, 27-42.

150. Denise Winn, THE MANIPULATED MIND (London, Octagon Press, 1983), 72-73; Bresler, WHO KILLED JOHN LENNON?, 41; see generally: Peter Watson, WAR ON THE MIND (London: Hutchison, 1978) (Watson broke the story on Narut for the London TIMES).

151. Larry Collins, “Mind Control,” PLAYBOY, January 1990.

152. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files).

153. Richard A. Gabriel, NO MORE HEROES (New York: Hill and Wang, 1987), 124.

154. Ibid., 150-151.

155. See generally: Mark Lane, CONVERSATIONS WITH AMERICANS (Simon and Schuster, 1970); A.J. Langguth, HIDDEN TERRORS (New York: Pantheon, 1978).

156. John G. Fuller, THE INTERRUPTED JOURNEY (New York: Dell, 1966).

157. This detail plays a part in other abductions for example, it crops up in the Betty Andreasson Luca case. See Raymond Fowler, THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR (New York: Bantam, 1980), 50-51.

158. Stanton Friedman, for example; the reader is referred to his 1988 Whole Life Expo lecture, “UFOs: A Cosmic Watergate.”

159. THE BODY ELECTRIC, 196-202.

160. The Fish map has received wide discussion; for a representative sampling, the reader is directed to the aforementioned Friedman lecture (note 158); Terence Dickenson, “The Zeti Reticuli Incident,” ASTRONOMY, December, 1974; Klass, UFO ABDUCTIONS: A DANGEROUS GAME, 20-23; and John Rimmer, THE EVIDENCE FOR ALIEN ABDUCTIONS (Weillingborough: Aquarian, 1984), 88-92. Incidentally, Klass has proposed to Friedman

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

a test regarding the ability to recall such material accurately under hypnotic regression; Friedman, for reasons best known to himself, declined the offer to participate.

161. Jacques Vallee, *DIMENSIONS* (Chicago: Contemporary, 1988), 266.

162. See Rimmer, *THE EVIDENCE FOR ALIEN ABDUCTIONS*, 91-92. None of this is meant to denigrate Marjorie Fish, whose work has received universal praise.

163. Fuller, *THE INTERRUPTED JOURNEY*, 18 19.

164. Athan G. Theoharis and John Stuart Cox, *THE BOSS: J. EDGAR HOOVER AND THE GREAT AMERICAN INQUISITION* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1978), 325; Chip Berlet, "The Hunt for the Red Menace," *COVERT ACTION INFORMATION BULLETIN*, no. 31 (winter, 1989); J. Edgar Hoover, *COINTELPRO* (memo), March 4, 1968.

165. For example, Delgado's work predates the Hill incident. Moreover, one of the few pages released on MKULTRA subproject 119 concerns "a critical review of the literature and scientific developments related to the recording, analysis and interpretation of bioelectric signals from the human organism, and activation of human behavior by remote means." The review took place in 1960-61. Presumably, the CIA wanted to DO something with the information so derived.

166. "UFO Abductions Workshop," Whole Life Expo, March, 1988.

167. Ludwig Mayer, *DIE TECHNIC DER HYPNOSE* (Munich: J.H. Lehmanns Verlag, 1953), 225; quoted in: Heinz E. Hammerschlag (translation: John Cohen) *HYPNOTISM AND CRIME* (Hollywood: Wilshire Book Company, 1957), 24-25.

168. Numerous articles discuss this possibility; see, for example, William C. Coe ET AL. "An Approach Toward Isolating Factors that Influence Antisocial Conduct in Hypnosis," *THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL HYPNOSIS*, 1972, vol XX, no. 2, 118-131, as well as other reports in that issue. The difference between the laboratory and the "field" settings may account for the success of Mayer's experiment and the apparent failure of the "aliens."

169. For a description of a quite similar experiment conducted under CIA auspices in 1954, see "CIA able to control minds by hypnosis, data shows," *THE WASHINGTON POST*, February 19, 1978.

170. Abductee interview, "Veronica." The reader will, I hope, forgive my use of a pseudonym here. For the most part, I hope to deal in this work with published cases. Suffice it to say, Veronica's testimony proved fascinating, troubling, convoluted, problematical; in spite of all the questions raised by this case, I still believe it to have substantial bearing on my thesis. The reader will forgive me for severing relations with this abductee before completing an investigation; she keeps a mini-armory next to her bed.

171. Abductee interview, "Veronica," At one point, she ran an informal abductee/contactee group; as a result, she was able to describe many other cases to me.

172. One *ARTICHOKE* document explicitly details a failed attempt to use hypnosis to induce the assassination of a foreign leader. The document is undated; the experiment took place January 8-January 15, 1954. Document reproduced in *CIA PAPERS*, vol. 1 (Ann Arbor, MI: Capitol Information Associates, 1986), 39 41.

173. John Marks interview of Prof. Jack Tracktir (Marks files).

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

174. Jenny Randles, *ABDUCTIONS* (London: Robert Hale, 1988), 52-53.

175. As in, for example, the Palle Hardrup affair.

176. Private correspondence, Robert Durant to the author.

177. Abductee interview, "Polly." I won't give the facial details here; suffice it to say that this abductor, like Margary's (noted earlier), has something of the smell of greasepaint about him.

178. The base is mentioned in Ann Druffel's and D. Scott Rogo's *THE TUJUNGA CANYON CONTACTS* (New York: Signet, 1989) [expanded edition], 157.

179. On the other hand, Armstrong asks us to accept his own channelled material, so he would have an awkward time should he choose to challenge the "psychic impressions" of others.

180. Jacques Vallee, *MESSENGERS OF DECEPTION* (Berkeley: And/Or Press, 1979), 192-193.

181. Curtis G. Fuller (editor), *PROCEEDINGS OF THE FIRST INTERNATIONAL UFO CONGRESS* (New York: Warner Books, 1980), 307.

182. For information of Pelley, see John Roy Carlson, *UNDER COVER* (New York: Dutton, 1943).

183. Gerald B. Bryan, *PSYCHIC DICTATORSHIP IN AMERICA* (Los Angeles: Truth Research, 1940). An essential book-length expose of Ballardism. One of Bryan's sources alleges that Ballard, before founding the I AM group, may have practiced some variety of black magic.

184. The student should carefully compare the I AM dogma with the available information on pre-Third Reich occultism; the best sources are James Webb's masterful analyses, *THE OCCULT ESTABLISHMENT* and *THE OCCULT UNDERGROUND* (La Salle, Illinois: Open Court Publishing, 1976).

185. Vallee, *MESSENGERS OF DECEPTION*, 192-194.

186. Even a cursory examination of Williamson's *SECRET OF THE ANDES* (London: Neville Superman, 1961), written under the pseudonym Brother Philip, will reveal the I AM connections.

187. Personal sources. Van Tassell's "Integration," a domed structure allegedly built under extraterrestrial guidance (located near Twentynine Palms, California) prominently displays, to this day, key I AM artifacts such as the portraits of Jesus and Saint Germain (commissioned by Ballard).

188. "The Afghan Arms Pipeline," *COVERT ACTION INFORMATION BULLETIN*, no. 30 (summer, 1988).

189. Telephone interview with John Judge.

190. Village of Oak Creek, Arizona: Entheos, 1989, 119. I can't recall ever encountering another book title which contained so many grammatical errors. Armstrong's accomplishment is genuinely impressive.

191. For further information on I AM, Prophet's organization, saucer cults, and other groups, see the appropriate sections of J. Gordon Melton's *ENCYCLOPEDIA OF AMERICAN RELIGION*.

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

192. Ruth Montgomery, *ALIENS AMONG US* (New York: Ballantine, 1985), 128-188.
193. Penny Harper, "Are Aliens Taking Over the Earth?" *WHOLE LIFE TIMES*, January 1990.
194. John Keel, *WHY UFOS: OPERATION TROJAN HORSE* (New York: Manor Books, 1970) [paperback edition], 228.
195. Hickson and Mendez, *UFO CONTACT AT PASCAGOULA*, 242.
196. Strieber, *COMMUNION*, 134; *TRANSFORMATION*, 109.
197. "Contactee: Firsthand," *UFO magazine*, vol. 4, no. 2, 1989.
198. Telephone conversation, Tom Adams. 199. Ed Conroy, *REPORT ON COMMUNION* (New York: William Morrow, 1989), 365-385. 200. "Contactee: Firsthand," *UFO magazine*, vol. 3, no. 3. 201. New York: Zebra, 1971. See especially note 2, Chap. 9. Selected Bibliography On Mind Control *ACID DREAMS*, by Martin A. Lee and Bruce Shlain (Grove, 1985). Outstanding work on *MKULTRA* and drugs.
- THE BODY ELECTRIC*, by Robert Becker (Morrow, 1985). Important.
- THE BRAIN CHANGERS*, by Maya Pines (Signet, 1973). Outdated, but an excellent chapter on the stimoceiver and related technologies.
- BRAIN CONTROL*, by Elliot Valenstein (John Wiley and Sons, 1973). Highly conservative; outdated; still worth reading.
- CIA PAPERS*, compiled by Capitol Information Associates (POB 8275, Ann Arbor, Michigan, 48107). Interesting selection of *MKULTRA* documents.
- THE CONTROL OF CANDY JONES*, by Donald Bain (Playboy Press, 1976). Mandatory reading.
- HUMAN DRUG TESTING BY THE CIA*, hearings before the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research on the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1977).
- HYPNOTISM*, by George Estabrooks (Dutton, 1957). See especially the chapters on hypnosis in warfare and crime. Some modern experts in clinical hypnosis decry Estabrooks' work. These "experts" tend to have a history of funding by CIA cutouts and military intelligence. I suspect they denounce Estabrooks not because his work was shoddy, but because he let the cat out of the bag.
- INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS AND THE FEDERAL ROLE IN BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION*, by the Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights of the Committee of the Judiciary, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1974).
- MEGABRAIN*, by Michael Hutchison (Ballantine, 1986). The only popular book on modern mind machines.
- MESSENGERS OF DECEPTION*, by Jacques Vallee (And/Or, 1979). Vallee has been criticized, correctly, for including in this book invented "conversations" with a composite character he calls Major Murphy. But the section on cults in this book bears a haunting resemblance to stories I have heard in my own investigations.
- THE MIND MANIPULATORS*, by Opton and Schefflin (Paddington Press, 1978). Conservative, but extremely useful as a reference work.
- MIND WARS*, by Ronald McCrae (St. Martin's Press, 1984).

THE PUPPETMASTERS VOLUME ONE

OPERATION MIND CONTROL, by Walter Bowart (Dell, 1978). The best single volume on the subject. Difficult to find; indeed, this book's rapid disappearance from bookstores and libraries has aroused the suspicions of some researchers. (Tom David Books, POB 1107, Aptos, CA 95001, carries this work.)

PHYSICAL CONTROL OF THE MIND, by Jose Delgado (Harper and Row, 1969). Outdated but still essential.

PROJECT MKULTRA, joint hearing before the Select Committee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1977).

PSYCHIC WARFARE: FACT OR FICTION? edited by John White (Aquarian, 1988). See especially Michael Rossman's contribution.

PSYCHOTECHNOLOGY, Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Ralph K. Schwitzgebel (Holt, Rhinehart and Winston, 1973).

THE SCIENTIST, by John Lilly (expanded edition: Ronin, 1988). Bizarre - Lilly is an ex-"brainwashing" specialist who claims to be in contact with aliens. Is he controlled or controlling?

THE SEARCH FOR "THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE", by John Marks (Bantam, 1978). An invaluable book. However, many people have made the mistake of assuming it tells the full story. It does not.

WERE WE CONTROLLED? by Lincoln Lawrence (University Books, 1967). Explores possible connections to the JFK assassination. Dr. Petter Lindstrom's endorsement of this work makes it mandatory reading.

WHO KILLED JOHN LENNON? by Fenton Bresler (St. Martin's Press, 1989). Interesting thesis concerning the possible use of mind control on Mark David Chapman. Better in its analysis of Chapman than in its history of mind control. In my own work, I have encountered data which may help confirm Bresler's theory.

THE ZAPPING OF AMERICA, by Paul Brodeur (MacLeod [Canadian edition], 1976). Contains a good chapter on microwave mind control technology.